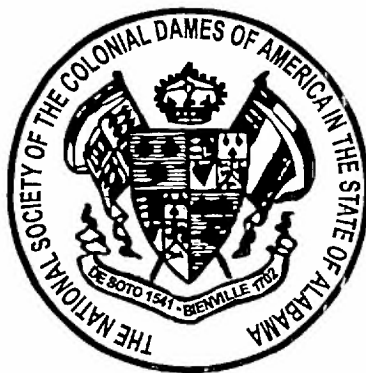


*In Grateful
Remembrance*

*In Grateful
Remembrance*

The National Society of The Colonial Dames
of America in the State of Alabama



Salute to the Flag

To the Glory of God and in grateful remembrance of those our ancestors, who, through evil report and loss of fortune, through suffering and death, maintained stout hearts, and laid the foundation of our country, we, The National Society of The Colonial Dames of America, pledge our loyal and affectionate allegiance to the Flag.

Article II of the Constitution

The objects of this Society shall be to collect and preserve manuscripts, traditions, relics, and mementos of bygone days; to preserve and restore buildings connected with the early history of our country; to educate our fellow citizens and ourselves in our country's history and thus diffuse healthful and intelligent information concerning the past; to create a popular interest in our Colonial history; to stimulate a spirit of true patriotism and a genuine love of country; and to impress upon the young the sacred obligation of honoring the memory of those heroic ancestors whose ability, valor, sufferings, and achievements are beyond all praise.

Board of Directors of The National Society of The Colonial Dames of America in the State of Alabama

Mrs. Robert Houston Young, Jr., *President*
Mrs. James William Jackson, Jr., *First Vice-President*
Mrs. Ralph Nicolson Hobbs, *Second Vice-President*
Mrs. Rogers Neilson Laseter, *Third Vice-President*
Mrs. George Frederick Wheelock, III, *Fourth Vice-President*
Mrs. Thomas Troy Zieman, Jr., *Fifth Vice-President*
Mrs. William Jordan Gamble, *Recording Secretary*
Mrs. Donald Boyd, *Corresponding Secretary*
Mrs. Carlton Gordon King, *Treasurer*
Mrs. Samuel Edward Stroh, *Registrar*
Mrs. George Mark Wood, Jr., *Historian*

Town Committee Chairs

Mrs. John Robert Chapman, Jr.
Mrs. Leonard Preuit Mauldin
Mrs. Jerald William McCoy
Mrs. Lucian Newman, Jr.

Managers to Serve 2008-2009

Mrs. Henry Clay Barnett, Jr.
Mrs. William Mudd Hiden
Mrs. Paul McGee James
Mrs. David Winston Miller
Mrs. Abner Frank Patton
Mrs. Charles Edwin Shaver, Jr.
Mrs. William George Sherling III

Managers to Serve 2008-2010

Mrs. Robert Nathaniel Almon, Jr.
Mrs. James Lawrence Goyer III
Mrs. James Robert Hurt
Mrs. John Larry Jones
Mrs. Dempsey Wiley Moody III
Mrs. Ronald Albert Snider

©2008 by The National Society of The Colonial Dames
of America in the State of Alabama

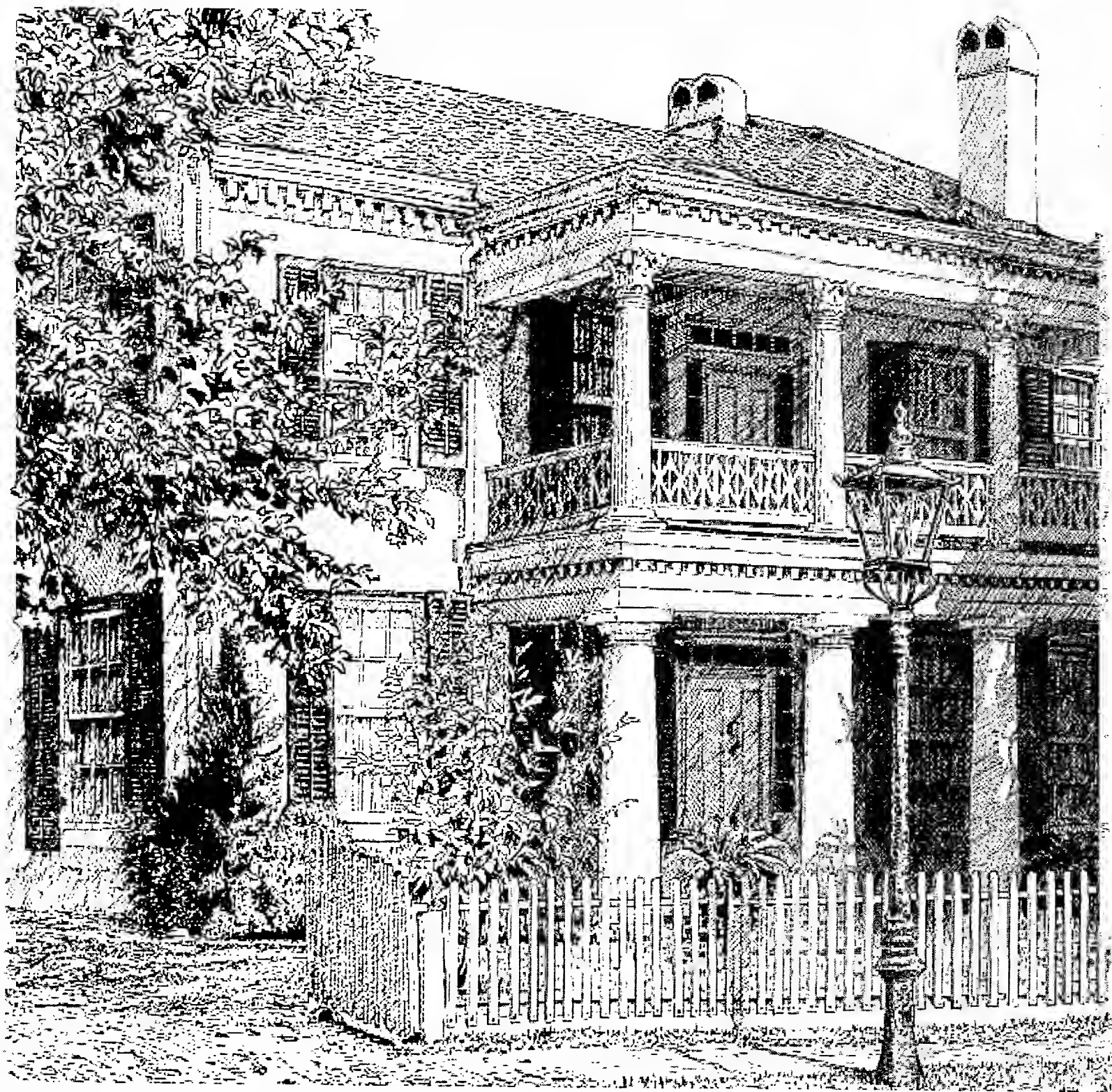
Produced by
Southern Life Publishing Services, LLC
1283 Westmoreland Avenue
Montgomery, Alabama 36106
mejbooks@bellsouth.net

Project manager: Florence Young
Editor: Mary Elizabeth Johnson Huff
Production: John Huff
Design: RP Graphics

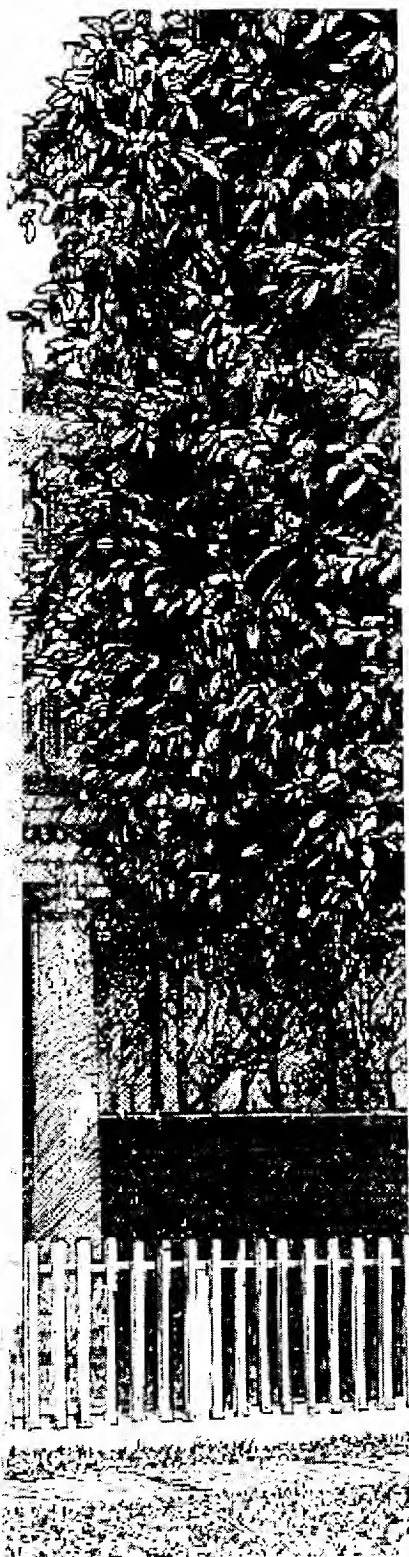
Cover: The Conde-Charlotte Museum House, Mobile, Alabama.
(See page vi for more information.)

Dedication

These our stories are told,
"in grateful remembrance of those our ancestors,
who,through evil report and loss of fortune,
through suffering and death,
maintained stout hearts, and
laid the foundation of our country."



The Condé-Charlotte Museum House



The National Society of The Colonial Dames in America in the State of Alabama shares a common goal with sister Dames across the nation in the active preservation, maintenance and presentation of historic buildings. In the objectives of this society, we set the goal: "...to preserve and restore historic buildings connected with the early history of this country." The Condé-Charlotte Museum House is an Alabama Dames property located in Mobile, Alabama.

The Dames purchased the house from the Mobile Historic preservation Society In 1957 and set about renovating it. In 1974, the refurbished Condé-Charlotte was finally opened to the public.

Although the actual dates that the original structure of the Condé-Charlotte Museum House was built are not definitely known, Nicholas Holmes, respected Mobile architect with a special interest in historic architecture, believes that the main portion of the building dates back to 1720, possibly earlier. Upon completing a detailed study of the structure of the house, Mr. Holmes concluded that, because of the similarity of brick and mortar contained in the house to that used in the construction of Fort Condé, along with the use of "whip sawn" lumber, some parts of the house were built around the 1720s.

Subsequent to his initial dating, Mr. Holmes discovered a map from the period of Spanish occupancy (1802-1813) that showed a structure labeled "King's Magazine" on the present location of the Condé-Charlotte House. The building is thought to have later served as a jail, then a courthouse, before being bought, renovated, and turned into a residence by the Kirkbride family in 1849; they owned the house until 1926. After first being bought by the Mobile Historic Preservation Society, it was sold to the NSCDA in Alabama.

In addition to housing all the ancestry records of the Alabama Dames, the Condé-Charlotte Museum House is used to educate the public about the importance of our ancestors, those who have gone before us. The house showcases the history of Mobile under the five flags that have flown over her; Spanish, French, English, Confederate, and United States of America. Rooms in the house contain furnishings of the different periods. For example, the front east parlor represents a commandant's office and is furnished with English pieces dating to the time of English occupancy of Mobile, 1763-1780. The dining room is called the American room (1813), and contains a period North Carolina corner cupboard as well as a silver tea service made by Simon Cauldron, who was a silversmith in New York before moving to Demopolis, Alabama as a member of the French vine and olive colony.

The heritage of the National Society of Colonial Dames of America in Alabama is displayed in our museum house, a proud symbol of our linkage to our distinguished and cherished ancestors.

Copies of *In Grateful Remembrance* may be purchased by contacting the Condé-Charlotte Museum House, 104 Theatre Street, Mobile, Alabama 36602.



Contents

Preface	xv
Alden, John	1
Alston, John.....	2
Appleton, Samuel I.....	4
Appleton, Samuel II	5
Armistead, Anthony	6
Ashby, John	7
Barrett, Thomas	8
Battle, William	9
Beall, Josias	10
Bennett, Edward	11
Berkeley II, Edmund	12
Beville, Essex.....	13
Bibb, William	14
Billingsley, Francis	16
Blount, James	17
Blow, Richard	18
Bolling, Robert	19
Bond, Thomas.....	20
Booth, Robert	21
Bradford, William.....	22
Branch, Christopher	23
Brewster, William	25
Broadnax, William	27
Brooks Sr., John	28
Brown, Peter	30
Bulkeley, The Reverend Peter	32
Bullock, Leonard Henry	34
Burwell, Armistead.....	35
Callaway, Richard	36
Calloway, Caleb.....	37
Calthrope, Christopher.....	38
Campbell, Farquhar	39
Carruthers, John	40
Carter, Robert (King)	41
Cary, Miles.....	42
Cave, Benjamin	44
Chappell, James.....	45
Chew, Larkin	46
Chiles I, Walter	47
Claiborne, William	48
Cocke, Richard	51
Coffin, Tristram	52

Cooke, Francis	54
Cooper, John	56
Crane, Jonathan	58
Crawford I, David.....	59
Crockett, Andrew	61
Croshaw, Joseph	62
Dale, Edward	63
de Graffenreid, Christopher	64
DeLony, Henry	66
DeWitt, Jacob Rutsen	67
Dickson, Joseph.....	69
Downs, Henry	70
Drake, Francis	71
Durant, George	72
Earle, Samuel	74
Epes, Frances	75
Farrar I, William.....	77
Faulcon Jr, Nicholas	79
Felder, Henry.....	80
Godwin, Thomas	82
Goodloe, Henry	84
Graves, Thomas	85
Gray, Joseph.....	87
Green, Samuel	88
Grubb, John.....	89
Hairston, Robert	91
Harrison III, Benjamin	93
Harrison V, Benjamin.....	94
Harrison, Jr, Thomas.....	96
Hart, David	97
Harwood, Thomas	99
Hatch, Lemuel	100
Hatcher, William.....	101
Hawkins I, Thomas.....	103
Haymond, William.....	104
Haywood, John	105
Henderson, Richard	106
Henderson, Samuel	108
Henry, Patrick.....	109
Hodnett, John	111
Hopkins, Stephen	113
Howell, Caleb	115
Hynson, Thomas.....	117

Jones, Robert	118
Jordan, Thomas	119
Kenner Jr., Richard	120
Lane, Samuel	121
Lee, Richard Henry	123
Lewis, Fielding	125
Livingston, Robert	127
Loughton, Edward	128
Love, Alexander	129
Magruder, Samuel	131
Marable II, George	132
Mason, George	133
Massey, Dade	134
Mathews, George	135
Mathews, John	137
McAllister, Alexander	138
Meriwether I, Nicholas	140
Meriwether II, Nicholas	142
Middleton, Henry	144
Montague, Peter	145
Moore, James	147
Moore, John	148
Morris, William	149
Mosby, Littleberry	150
Moss, James	151
Moultrie, John	152
Myatt, John	153
Neville, James and George	154
Neville, Joseph	156
Page I, Mann	158
Pearson, John	160
Pegues, Claudius	161
Phelps, William	162
Pickens, Andrew	163
Pierson, The Reverend Abraham	165
Pittman, Thomas	167
Randolph, William	168
Reese, David	170
Rhett, William	172
Rives, Timothy	173
Roberdeau, Daniel	174
Rolfe, John	176
Rutherford, Robert	178
Rutledge, Edward	179

Salle, Abraham	181
Sanderson, Joseph	182
Searcy, Reuben	183
Smith, Francis	184
Smith, The Reverend Henry	185
Smith, Lawrence	187
Smith, Thomas	188
Spotswood, Alexander	190
Stillwell, John	192
Stone, John	193
Stow, The Reverend Samuel	195
Stuart, John	196
Syng Jr., Philip	198
Talbot, Matthew	200
Thigpen II, James	202
Thomas, John	203
Thompson, William	205
Throckmorton, John	206
Tilghman II, Richard	207
Tomes (Toms), Francis	209
Treutlen, John Adam	210
Tunstall, William	212
Tyler III, Charles	213
Upham, John	214
Wade, Armiger	215
Wade, Thomas	216
Wadsworth, Christopher	219
Waller, Nathaniel	220
Walton, George	221
Ware, Henry	222
Warner II, Augustine	223
Warren, Thomas	225
Washington, Lawrence	226
Webster, John	227
West, Governor John	228
Whiting, Henry	229
Willard, Simon	230
Williams, John	231
Williams, Roger	232
Woodruff, John	234
Woodson, Dr. John	236
Woodward Jr., Joseph	238
Wyatt, John	239
Yates, The Reverend William	240
Glossary	242

Preface

This great country was founded by a brave lot of immigrants who had the courage to look to a New World for a new and better future. They gave up their homelands and the comforts of their known civilization to face the uncertainties of a long sea voyage and the hardships of new settlers in a strange land. They were our ancestors, and we honor their memory.

The National Society of The Colonial Dames of America in the State of Alabama is comprised of women in the common bond of colonial ancestry. Each member has documented her descent from one or more of those courageous settlers who made his mark of significance in the early life of his colony. They settled from Maine to Georgia in those thirteen original colonies, from which they would forge the United States of America.

Our ancestors were polished aristocrats and rough adventurers, merchants and planters, mariners and traders, religious zealots and political exiles, each one either following a dream or escaping a nightmare. They came to a beautiful wilderness and cleared the land, built their homes, tilled the soil, and raised their families. They faced freezing winters and attacks by Indians, constant shortages of basic supplies, and loss of contact with loved ones at home. In so doing, they laid the foundation of this great country.

The short biographies in this volume have been submitted by individual Alabama Dames who, through documented fact (and in some cases, a bit of family legend) have recreated a time in history spanning the first one hundred fifty years in the life of colonial America. Each writer has included sources for her essay, primarily to serve as aids for other researchers in their own quests: a professional genealogist has not been engaged to certify the contents of this book. We do not assume responsibility for the material in this collection of vignettes, and we encourage anyone with questions to consult the primary sources listed with each entry.

A special note about one of the major sources for these biographies that was cited again and again: *Adventurers of Purse and Person*. This book exists in four editions, each larger and more inclusive than the last. The first one, issued in 1956, was compiled and edited by Annie Lash Jester in collaboration with Martha Woodruff Hiden, and was published by Princeton University Press. The second edition was also edited by Jester and Hiden, and was published in 1964 in Richmond by the Order of the First Families of Virginia. The third edition, published in 1987, again by the Order of the First Families of Virginia, was revised and edited by Virginia M. Meyer and John Frederick Dorman. The most current edition, the fourth, was edited by John Frederick Dorman and published in 2007 by the Order of the First Families of Virginia. It is the fourth edition that we cite throughout the book, as it is the most complete.

All bibliographic references follow a style designed for ease of use while allowing as much standardization as possible of a wide variety of sources.

All the descendants listed in the book are from Alabama unless otherwise noted.

We invite you now to join us in the remarkable sense of presence to be experienced from the telling and re-telling, from so many viewpoints, of the lives of the many and varied personalities who made our country.

Mrs. Robert Houston Young Jr.
President, The National Society of
The Colonial Dames of America in the State of Alabama
2007-2009

*"Those who do not look upon themselves as a link connecting the past with the future
do not perform their duty to the world."*

—Daniel Webster

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JOHN ALDEN

c.1599-1687

Many readers will recognize the name John Alden because of the romantic saga, *The Courtship of Miles Standish*, written by Henry Wadsworth Longfellow in 1858. The poem reflects the romantic relationship of John and the Puritan maiden, Priscilla Mullins, who had also attracted the attention of John's friend and superior, Captain Miles Standish. Longfellow, a descendant of the real John and Priscilla, relied on legend and there is no real historical documentation for this delightful and much loved story. John Alden was one of the Pilgrims who emigrated to America on the Mayflower in 1620 and founded the Plymouth Colony. About 1623, he married Priscilla Mullins and they had the following children: Elizabeth, John, Joseph, Priscilla, Jonathan, Sarah, Ruth, Mary, Rebecca and David. Their descendants are in the thousands today.

From 1633 until 1675, John Alden served as assistant to the governor of Duxborough (known today as Duxbury), a town that he and several others, including Miles Standish, had founded in the early 1630's, and where he lived for most of his life. He frequently served as acting governor and also sat on many juries, including one of the two witch trials in the Plymouth Colony. He also acted as Duxbury's deputy for the Plymouth Court throughout the 1640s, served on many committees (including the Committee on Kennebec Trade), and sat on several Councils of War, while simultaneously serving as colony treasurer. In his later years, Alden became known for his intense dislike of the Quakers and Baptists who were attempting to settle on Cape Cod: a surviving letter complains that he was too strict in dealing with them.

At his death at age 89 in Duxbury, Massachusetts, John Alden was the last male survivor of the signers of the Mayflower Compact, and with the exception of a fellow Pilgrim, Mary Allerton, was the last survivor of the Mayflower's company.

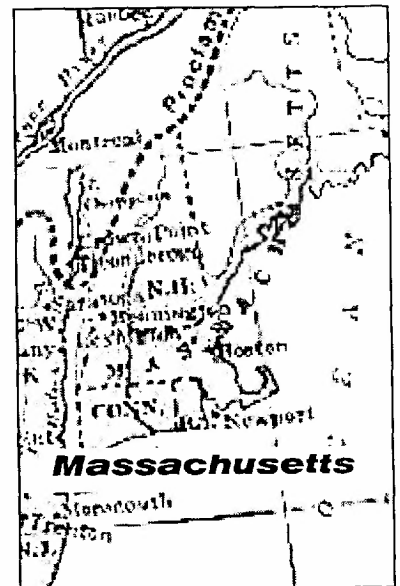
John Alden's house in Duxbury, built in 1653, remains as a landmark today and is open to the public as a museum. More information about the home, the man, and his descendants can be found through the Alden Kindred of America, who run the museum house (<http://www.alden.org/>). John and Priscilla are both buried in the Miles Standish Burial Ground in Duxbury, Massachusetts.

Submitted by Mrs. Robert Houston Young, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Robert Anton McCraney (Rose Hodd Johnston); Birmingham

Mrs. Joan Johnston Thomas (Joan Johnston); Birmingham



SOURCE:

*Mayflower Families: John Alden for
Four Generations,*
published by
The General Society of Mayflower
Descendants in 1999.

In Grateful Remembrance
JOHN ALSTON
 1673-1758

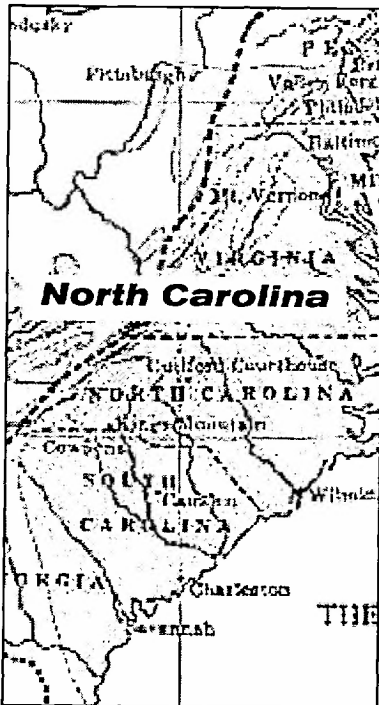
John Alston, descended from the lines of Alfred the Great, Charlemagne (and through Charlemagne back to others including Tiberius Claudius Caesar), William the Conqueror, and several Sureties of the Magna Carta (John Fitz Robert, Richard de Claire, Gilbert de Claire, John Lacie and Sair de Quincey), was the eldest son of John and Anne Wallis Alston and was baptized December 5, 1673, in Felmersham, Bedfordshire, England. He arrived in Pasquotank in the colony of North Carolina about 1694 and later settled in Chowan (now Gates) County, where the first mention of him on record is from 1711 and concerns a land grant of 270 acres. After settling on Bennett's Creek where Gatesville now stands, he began purchasing land, eventually becoming an extensive property holder.

He married Mary Clark, who was born about 1686 to Quaker parents. The couple had ten children surviving at the time of John's death on December 2, 1758, in Chowan County, North Carolina. He was a slave holder, as was customary of his time.

Alston's colonial service includes: 1715, juror at court; 1721-1729, assistant justice of the court of Oyer and Terminer; 1723, member of Colonial Assembly; 1724, justice of the peace; 1725, revenue collector for the King; 1725, captain to major to colonel in the Chowan militia; 1738, vestryman of St. Paul's parish; 1746, sheriff of Cowan County.

Although there is not a lot of personal anecdotal information about John Alston, the following preface to his will indicates the deeply spiritual and noble character of the man:

"In the name of God, amen. September 17th, in the year of our Lord God one thousand seven hundred and fifty four, I, John Alston of Chowan County and province of North Carolina, being in perfect health and of sound and perfect mind and memory thanks be to Almighty God for it, Calling to mind the uncertainty of this Transitory Life, and that all flesh must Yield unto death when it shall please God to call, Doe make Declair ordain, appoint this my last will and testament in Manner & form following and principally I Recommend my Soul to God that gave it to me in full hope I shall receive full pardon for all my Sins Past by the merits and meditation of our Blessed Lord and Savior Jesus Christ and my body to be buried in Such Christian Like manner as shall pleas my Executor named and appointed, and secondly I doe by these presents frustrate and make null and void all other or former wills by me made or Declaired Either by word or writing and this to be taken for my Last will and testament and no other. Thirdly my will is that all My Debts Duly that I owe in the right or conscience to any maner or persons What Ever Be Justly Contested and paid in Sum convenient time after my Death By my Executor hereafter nam'd, and now as such worldly Estate as it hath pleased God to Bestow upon me I Give & dispose of the saim in manner and form following..."



Biographies of Our Ancestors

The John Alston ancestry is well represented, as his descendants in the Alabama Society of the Colonial Dames alone have numbered over forty.

Submitted by Mrs. William Collins Knight, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Cartledge Weeden Blackwell, Jr. (Sarah Crum Cook); Selma
Miss Virginia Lee Blackwell; Selma
Mrs. William Joseph Broughton III (Cynthia Isabel Fitts); Ralph
Mrs. Helen Morris Camp (Helen Mushat Morris); Birmingham
Mrs. William Wood Carter (Caroline Balfour Phifer); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Peyton Coleman Cochrane (Jamie Reynolds Banks); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. William E. Dillard (Frances Ricks Boddie); Auburn
Mrs. Allen Boyd Edwards, Jr. (Mildred Ann Cook); Montgomery
Mrs. William Collins Knight, Jr. (Elizabeth Timberlake); Birmingham
Mrs. Wayne Allen Knipp (Eugenia Alston Poellnitz); Birmingham
Mrs. Elizabeth Woolen Manderson (Elizabeth Morrisette Woolen); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Webster Jewel Manderson (Pauline Walton Ford); Selma
Mrs. Alexander Montgomery Nading, Jr. (Susan Murray Waller); Birmingham
Mrs. Lucian Newman III (Pauline Walton Manderson); Gadsden
Mrs. Balfour Phifer (Caroline Fowlkes Balfour); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Robert Withers Poellnitz (Mary Farley Alston); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Uhland Ottis Redd III (Josephine Elizabeth England); Florence
Mrs. Joseph Stephen Riley III (Cynthia Ford Partlow); Melrose, Massachusetts
Mrs. Henry Nicholas Russell (Ann Everingham Fitts); Fairhope
Mrs. James Henry Thomas (Cynthia Isabel Ford); Tuscaloosa

SOURCES:

The Alstons and Allstons of North and South Carolina, by Joseph A. Groves, M.D., published in Atlanta by Franklin Printing and Publishing in 1901.

Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists, Seventh Edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis, published in Baltimore by the Genealogical Publishing Company in 2002.

Colonial Dames of Royal Descent, by Charles Henry Browning, published in 1900, reprinted in 1997.

Colonial Records of North Carolina, Volume II, by William Saunders, published in Raleigh, NC, by P M Hale, Printer to the State, 1886-1890.

The Magna Carta Sureties, 1215, Fifth Edition, by Frederick Lewis Weis, published in Baltimore by the Genealogical Publishing Company in 1999.

Wurts Magna Carta, Brookfield Publishing Company, 1942.

In Grateful Remembrance
SAMUEL APPLETON I

1586-1670

Born in 1586 at Little Waddingfield, Suffolk County, England, Samuel Appleton was a Puritan who followed John Winthrop seeking religious freedom to the New World. Colonial records show that he took the Freeman's Oath in the colony of Massachusetts on May 25, 1636, and settled at Ipswich, where he had a grant of lands.

He was accompanied by his wife, Mary (or Judith) Everard, to the colony, bringing with them their five children: John, Samuel, Sarah, Judith and Martha. Not much is recorded about Mary, but if she was Mary Everard, she was descended from a highly respected family of the County of Suffolk, England.

Samuel Appleton served as a Deputy at the General Court and was appointed to assist at the Court at Ipswich and also in Boston in 1637. Although records of his several Court services are recorded in this year, he was not chosen for the New Court, a fact attributed to his support of Anne Hutchinson against the intolerant views of the times; hence, he was dismissed from public life. (See Glossary: Anne Hutchinson.)

He did serve on a Grand Jury in 1641 in the case of the will of a Sarah Dillingham who, after leaving her property to her minor daughter, appoints overseers for her child: "To Mr. Saltonstall and Mr. Appleton, committing the government of my said child, and that I leave her to their faithful ordering, entreating them, in the bond of Christian love, to see this my will fulfilled, my due debts paid, my body decently buried, and my child religiously educated, if God give it life, and that they would order the estate as they would do their own."

In June of 1670, Samuel died at Rowley, Massachusetts, where he was buried. It is probable that he had lived there with a daughter during the later part of his life.

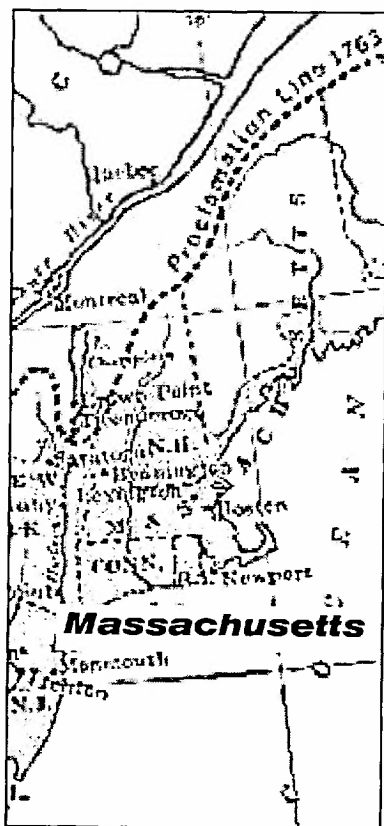
Submitted by: Mrs. Robert Houston Young, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Elton Kropp (Abigail Garthwaite Smith); Franklin, Tennessee

Mrs. Rudolph Norton Scott (Amy Garthwaite Smith); Birmingham

Mrs. Peter Garthwaite Smith (Anne Allerton Ward); Birmingham



SOURCE:

*Memorial of Samuel Appleton of Ipswich,
Massachusetts, by Isaac Appleton
Jewett, published in Boston in 1850.*

SAMUEL APPLETON II

1625-1696

Born in Suffolk, England, in 1625, Samuel Appleton II crossed the Atlantic at eleven years of age with his father (also Samuel Appleton) and brother, John. They settled in Ipswich, Massachusetts, where his father was one of the founders.

He was married first to Hannah Paine and second to Mary Oliver in 1656 in Newbury, Massachusetts. She was sixteen years old and the daughter of John Oliver, a deputy, in 1637. (John Oliver was among those ordered to be disarmed for approving the Remonstrance, alleging the innocence of Anne Hutchinson (See Glossary). Samuel and Mary had four children: John, Isaac, Oliver and Joannah. Mary died in 1698, surviving her husband by about two years.

Samuel Appleton II served in 1668 as lieutenant and in 1675 as captain in the Ipswich Company and was major in command of the Massachusetts forces in the Army of The United Colonies at the Great Swamp Fight, December 19, 1675.

In the *Massachusetts Files* is the following record from 1675: "On 24 September ordered, that a commission be issued forth to Captain Samuel Appleton, to command a foot company of 100 men." His destination was the frontier towns on the Connecticut River where his skill and courage preserved those towns from being burned by Indians.

He was appointed major and commander-in-chief of the Massachusetts forces during the conflict known as Philip's War (see Glossary: King Philip's War) through a letter of request from a Major Pynchon who desired to be relieved of that position after the loss of his barns and other property to the Indians a short time earlier. Major Pynchon describes Appleton as "a man desirous to do something in this day of distress, much to be commended and encouraged."

After placing small garrisons in the towns on the river, Major Appleton led a Massachusetts force of 527 men that was soon joined by Plymouth and Connecticut troops, making an army of one thousand men. Philip's plans were extremely well organized, and bloody battles ensued during that frigid winter of 1675. Major Appleton was described in *The Dennison Memorial* as "a marvel of bravery, who stood for hours face to face with death—a braver officer never grasped a sword." He brought the first campaign of Philip's War to a victorious close. His skill as a commander in repulsing the Indians, not only at the Battle of Hadley, but elsewhere, saved the Connecticut towns from destruction and delivered the colony from Indian invasion.

Also active in the civic affairs of Ipswich, Samuel Appleton II served as deputy, a member of the governing council, justice of common pleas and, in 1690, as a representative to the General Court of Massachusetts.

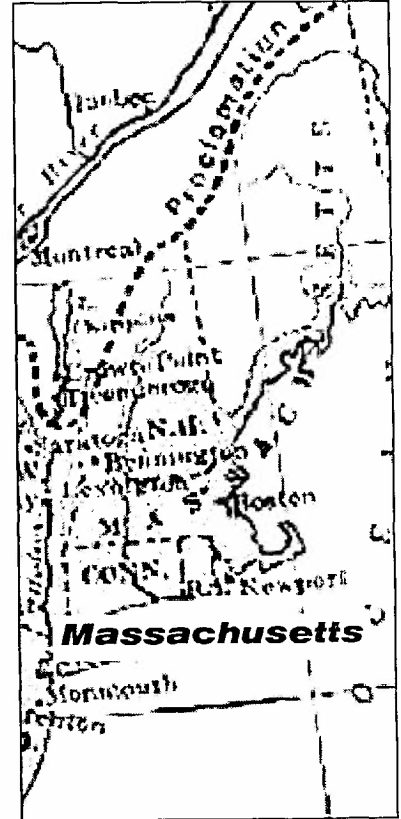
Submitted by Mrs. Peter Garthwaite Smith

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Elton Kropp (Abigail Garthwaite Smith); Franklin, Tennessee

Mrs. Rudolph Norton Scott (Amy Garthwaite Smith); Birmingham

Mrs. Peter Garthwaite Smith (Anne Allerton Ward); Birmingham



SOURCES:

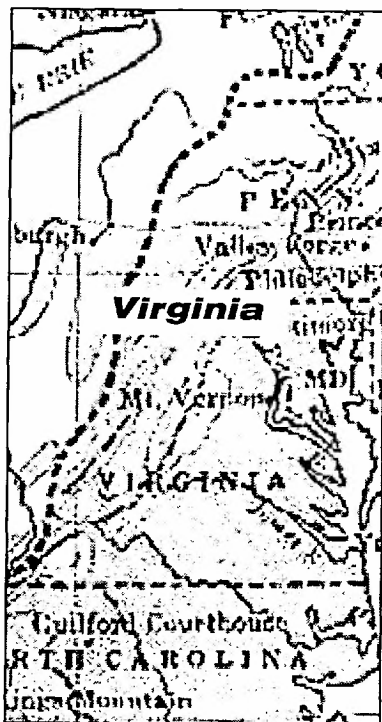
Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, 1633-1700, in two volumes, by T.F. Waters, published in Ipswich, MA, by the Ipswich Historical Society in 1905.

Memorial of Samuel Appleton of Ipswich, Massachusetts, by Isaac Hamilton Jewett, published in Boston by an unknown publisher in 1850.

In Grateful Remembrance

ANTHONY ARMISTEAD

1654-1705



The first Armistead to come to America from England was William of Deighton-Kirk, Yorkshire, Anthony Armistead's father. William was the son of Anthony Armistead and Frances Thompson and was baptized on August 3, 1610, at All Saints, the only church in the parish of Deighton-Kirk. In 1635, at the age of twenty-five, William immigrated to Virginia and obtained large patents of land in Elizabeth City and Gloucester Counties, the latter of which was formed from York County.

Anthony Armistead, son of William the emigrant, was born in 1654 in Hampton, Virginia, a town formally known by its Indian name of Kecoughtan. He married Hannah Ellyson, daughter of Robert Ellyson of James City County in 1698. Their children were William, Anthony, Robert, Judith and Hannah. The family's principal residences were on the Back River in Gloucester County near Hampton, Virginia.

The records of Edward Armistead Semple, surveyor of the county, show that at his death Anthony Armistead left several properties to his sons. William received *The Brick House Tract*; Anthony, *The Mill and Willocks*, and Robert, *Buckroe*. *Buckroe* was part of the original patent on the west side of Back River which today is the site of Langley Air Force Base, located three miles north of Hampton, Virginia. The road leading into the base is named Armistead Avenue.

Anthony Armistead was a county lieutenant and sheriff under Lord Effington, Governor of Virginia, and was a leader in the defense of Bacon's Rebellion (see Glossary: Bacon's Rebellion) under Governor Berkeley. In 1680 he was justice of the peace and captain of the horse. Captain Armistead served in the House of Burgesses for the terms 1693, 1696 and 1699 and in 1700 was a member of the committee to report on a revision of laws that was approved by the General Assembly in 1705.

Little is known about Anthony Armistead's formal education, but he was obviously an intellectual and learned man as the *Calendar of Virginia State Papers and Other Manuscripts* record that he was an attorney, in addition to many other roles. He died in 1705 and is thought to be buried on his property.

SOURCES:

The Armistead Family 1635-1910, by Virginia Armistead Garber, published in Richmond, VA, by Whittle and Sherperson in 1910.

Adventurers, Cavaliers, Patriots: "Anthony Armistead," by Virginia Kate White, published by The National Society of The Colonial Dames of America in the State of North Carolina (electronic press) in 1994.

Selden and Kindred of America, by Edna Mae Selden, published by the Virginia Stationary Company in Richmond, VA, in 1941.

Submitted by: Mrs. Charles Henry Colvin III

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Charles Henry Colvin III (Adele Goodwyn McNeel Bibb); Birmingham
The Reverend Adele Arant Stockham (Adele Goodwyn Arant); Birmingham

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JOHN ASHBY

1670-1716

Born in London, England, in 1670, John Ashby was a younger son who would not inherit the family property. Therefore, he moved to America, arriving in the province of South Carolina before 1697. Upon the death of his father, he came a cacique of Carolina, a county noble under the fundamental constitution of South Carolina. (See Glossary: Grand Model.) From 1698 to 1702, he was a member of the Common House of Assembly. He was a commissioner under the Church Acts from 1704 to 1706, and from 1706 to 1708, he served as receiver general of South Carolina.

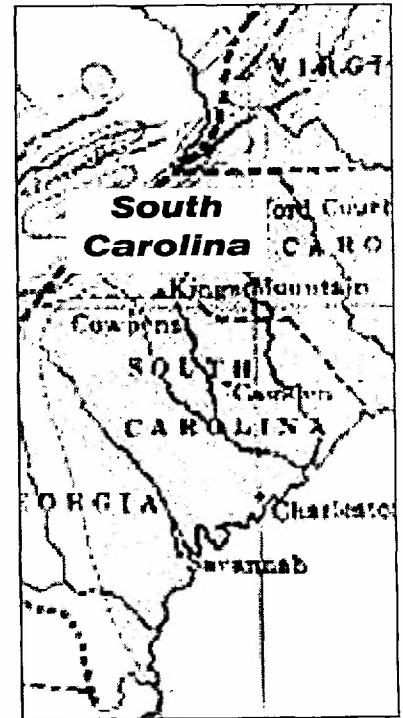
John Ashby was married to Constantina Broughton. Their son, Thomas Ashby, born in 1700, served as colonel in the provincial militia and was married to Elizabeth Le Jau, daughter of the Reverend Francis Le Jau, D.D., a native of Angers, France, who came to South Carolina as a missionary with the English Society for the Propagation of the Gospel.

A death of 1716 is listed for John Ashby in St. Thomas Parish, South Carolina.

Submitted by Miss Elizabeth Baldwin Hill

DESCENDANT:

Miss Elizabeth Baldwin Hill; Montgomery



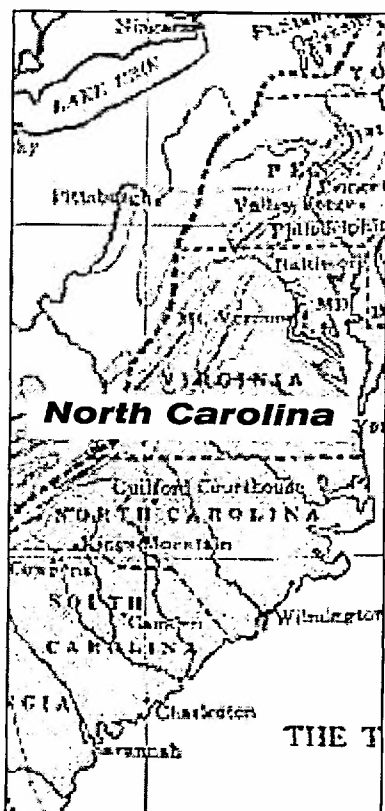
SOURCES:

*South Carolina Historical
and Genealogical Magazine*

*Journal of Commons
House of Assembly*

Statutes at Large of South Carolina

In Grateful Remembrance
THOMAS BARRETT
 1717-1799



Thomas Barrett was born on October 17, 1717, in what is now Northampton County, located in eastern North Carolina and bordering on Virginia. (Northampton County was actually formed in 1741 from what was Bertie County.) When he reached adulthood, he most likely earned his living as a planter. He took a wife, Mary Moore, born in 1724, and she gave him seven children. The youngest, James, was only three years old in 1770 when his mother died.

Thomas Barrett served as a lieutenant in the Northampton Regiment during the Revolutionary War. In the Abstract of Deeds he is listed as a witness a number of times. His name and that of his son, Thomas, appear in the North Carolina census of 1784-1787.

Thomas' death occurred twelve years after that census, on December 23, 1799. His will, dated January 13, 1797, lists the following heirs: daughters Elizabeth Lockhart, Martha Paterson, Sarah Reeves, Mary Moore; sons Thomas and James. James Barrett married Temperance Peterson; their daughter, Susannah, married John Fletcher Pride. The Prides moved to *Pride's Station*, Colbert County, Alabama. According to a great-aunt's notebook, "Grandma had a big nose—the Barrett mark!" The name and the nose have been passed down to present-day descendants.

For Thomas Barrett, both spellings Barrett and Baret should be researched. Family records more often reflect *Barrett*.

Submitted by Mrs. Joseph Murray Ware

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Joseph Murray Ware (Lucy Gilbert Ingram), Muscle Shoals
 Miss Sarah Lee Ware, Atlanta, Georgia

SOURCES:

Abstract of North Carolina Wills, 1760-1800

Abstract of Deeds, 1741-1780, Northampton County

State Records of North Carolina, Clark, Volume XXII

WILLIAM BATTLE

1728 - 1780

The history of the Battle family name begins at the French estate known as Boutteuille, located in the Canton of St. Mere Eglise, Arrondissement de Valognes, Normandy, and home to Walter De Betuile. In 1066, De Betuile participated in the invasion of England under William, Duke of Normandy. After the French victory at the Battle of Hastings, the Duke of Normandy (William the Conqueror) became William I of England. Many of the men who fought with William were rewarded with lands and titles in England, and Walter de Betuile was no exception. He was knighted in addition to gaining lands in Bedfordshire, Somerset and, finally, Essex, where he settled. One hundred years later, the great-grandson of Walter de Betuile, Sir Richard, was spelling his last name Battell, and held the manor at Bataylee Hall, also known as Ongar Castle, in Essex.

The direct lineage from Walter de Butuile of Normandy to the first American named Battle (his given name was Matthew, and his father had spelled the surname Battell), covers a span of six hundred years and eighteen generations. Matthew Battle emigrated to Jamestown, Surry County, Virginia in 1647; William Battle, born in 1728, was his great-grandson.

As in many families during the Revolutionary era, the Battle family of Virginia became involved in the dispute involving loyalty to the Crown of England. Since the colony of Virginia was a stronghold for resistance to Britain, William Battle, captain in the Northampton Colonial Militia, moved his family to North Carolina to avoid being at the center of the tension. They arrived in North Carolina just as the Revolution was beginning.

At the same time, he inherited 140 acres in Nash County on Swift Creek. There was a provision noted in records that this inheritance would be "provided he keep Aunt Elizabeth and his sister, Sarah." Successful at farming and land management, he soon acquired an additional 536 acres and by 1779, he also had a grant from North Carolina for 640 acres. At his death, he left a total of nearly two thousand acres to his three sons, William, James, and John.

William was known throughout the Carolinas as a successful landowner, a man of honorable character and exceptional military leadership qualities. He married Ann Mary Capell, also from Virginia, whose family owned land and had given William that first inheritance in Nash County. The couple's eldest son, also named William, built a beautiful house on Swift Creek in which his descendants still live. (It is known as *The Alfred Cooper Hicks Home*; other Battle homes in North Carolina are *Old Town* and *Rose Hill*.)

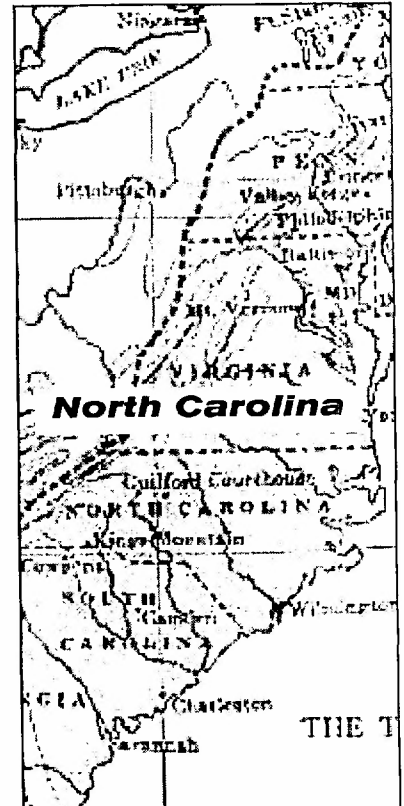
The Battle family descendants established themselves in Alabama when Mary Ann Williams Battle, granddaughter to William Battle, married Henry Watkins Collier. They moved to the Huntsville area, and Henry Collier entered politics, eventually serving as governor of Alabama from 1849 to 1853.

Other descendants of William Battle became prominent in the state of Mississippi. Mary Williams Battle from Nash County (North Carolina) married and moved to Columbus, Mississippi, where her husband's kin—the Forts, Sharps, and Leighs—were prominent landowners, lawyers, and leaders in the Civil War.

Submitted by Mrs. Robert Wayne Monfore

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Robert Wayne Monfore (Anne Pendleton Cox); Tuscaloosa



SOURCES:

Family archive papers

The Descendants of Matthew Battle, 1647, by Lynwood Jordan, published in Spartanburg, SC, by The Reprint Company in 1992.

The Battle Book, by H.B. Battle, published in Montgomery, AL, by Paragon Press in 1930.

In Grateful Remembrance **JOSIAS BEALL**

1725-1803

Josias Beall, born November 4, 1725, was the third generation of Bealls to make their home in Maryland. His great-grandfather, Alexander Bell (in addition to this spelling, a third variation is Beale), was born in the early 1600s in Fife County, Scotland. Alexander was a brabener (linen weaver) by trade, and married Margaret Ramsay on May 21, 1646, in St. Andrew's Presbyterian Church in Fife County. They had five children.

The third child of Alexander and Margaret, James Bell, was also born in Fife County, Scotland, and was christened on February 5, 1652 at St. Andrews. He eventually emigrated to the Province of Maryland, where he married Sarah Pearce around 1693. He became a planter and acquired a considerable amount of land in Prince George's County and in an area that is currently part of Montgomery County, Maryland. He was active in his local Presbyterian Church, serving as an elder, a trustee, and vestryman. James and Sarah had eight children, the second of which was John, who was later described as the "eldest son."

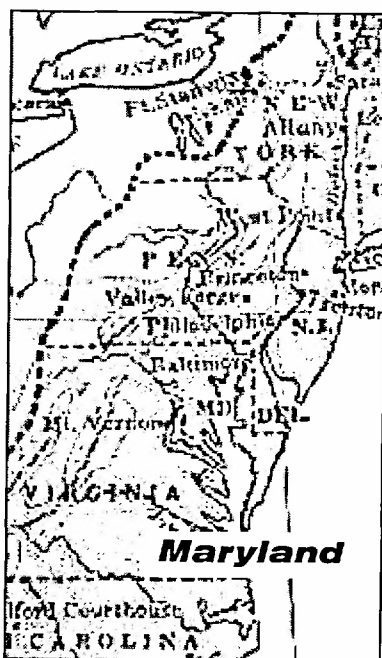
John Beall married Elizabeth Fendall of Charles County, Maryland on February 21, 1724. Upon his father's death, John inherited several plantations. John and Elizabeth were the parents of Josias Beall, who grew up in Prince George's County and married Millicent Beale Bradley. They had one son, Robert Augustus Beall, born in 1767.

Josias Beall was a lieutenant during the Revolutionary War. Afterwards, he was Speaker of the House of Delegates of the Maryland Assembly. He also served as a trustee for Charlotte Hall, an early free public school built at Cool Springs, which was eventually absorbed into the town of Adelphi, Maryland, just outside Washington, D.C.

Submitted by Mrs. James William Jackson, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. James William Jackson, Jr. (Lucy Young Martin); Montgomery



SOURCES:

<http://en.wikipedia.org>

www.msa.md.gov

<http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.com>

EDWARD BENNETT

c.1577-c.1664

Edward Bennett was born c.1577 in Somersetshire, England, the fifteenth and last child of Robert and Elizabeth Bennett. Robert Bennett was a prominent, active, and influential member of the Virginia Company of London, and owned a fleet of ships that traded with Virginia, with one of his principal imports being tobacco.

In the early part of his life, Edward Bennett fled to Holland, a response to the religious influences in England that drove many of his denomination out of the country in what became known as the Puritan Migrations. He became a principal pillar and elder of the Ancient Church in Amsterdam, then brought his Puritanism with him to America.

In November of 1621, he and his partners, Thomas Ayers, Thomas Wiseman, and Richard Wiseman, obtained a patent from The Virginia Company to settle in Virginia, providing that they brought two hundred people with them. In February 1622, the ship *Sea Flower* arrived in Virginia with slightly less than their quota: 120 settlers. Captain Ralph Hamor, an experienced pioneer and member of the Virginia Council whose earlier visit to Virginia had been in 1609, was their leader. They established a plantation along the James River at a place called "Warroscoyack," after an Indian tribe that lived there. The first large plantation in Virginia, it eventually became Isle of Wight county, after being variously named "Edward Bennett's Plantation," and "Bennett's Welcome."

In the interim, however, the original group of settlers were in place barely a month before being attacked by Indians on Good Friday, 1622. Fifty-three of the residents of Bennett's plantation were killed; as a result, the place was abandoned for a year or more, while British soldiers drove the Warroscoyack and Nasemond tribes out of the area and constructed a fort on the nearby James River. With a measure of security established, settlers began to come back into the area, and Edward Bennett and his family ultimately oversaw the settling of more than eight hundred immigrants in this very early colonization of Virginia.

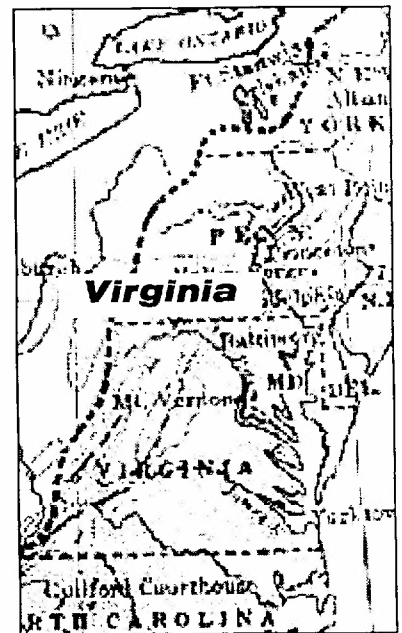
Edward Bennett married Mary Bourne in England in 1628. She was the granddaughter of a wealthy and well-positioned merchant; one of her brothers was the Bishop of London, and her uncle was Secretary of State to Queen Mary. The marriage brought additional wealth and responsibility to a man who, by this time, had his own fleet of merchant ships trading all over the world. Bennett was Commissioner of Virginia at the English court, and was the first person to advocate that no tobacco be imported into England except that from Virginia. Mary and Edward had six children of their own, but their Virginia plantation was managed by two nephews, Robert and Richard Bennett (who was governor of Virginia from 1652 to 1655).

The exact date of Edward Bennett's death is not known, but it was before September 30, 1664, as this was the date that his property in Isle of Wight County, Virginia, was divided between his two daughters and co-heirs, Silvester Hill and Mary Bland.

Submitted by Mrs. Harry Kenneth Wilkes

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Wilburn Foster (Mary Glenn Suttles); Selma
Mrs. Harry Kenneth Wilkes (Ellen Earle Hobbs); Opelika

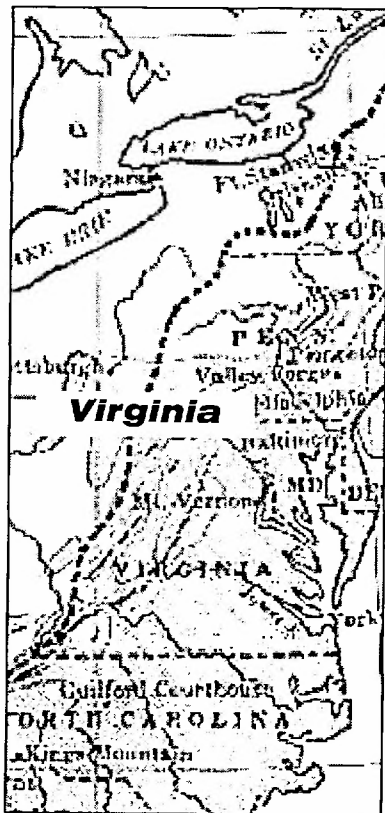


SOURCE:

"Edward Bennett of London and Virginia," by John Bennett Bodie, from *William and Mary Quarterly Historical Magazine*, 2nd Ser., Vol. 13, No. 2 (April 1933).

In Grateful Remembrance **EDMUND BERKELEY II**

c.1674-1718



Edmund Berkeley II was the son of Edmund Berkeley of Gloucester County, Virginia, and Mary Kemp. The name Berkeley comes from two words, the Danish/old English "birke," meaning birch, and "ley," "lay," or "lea," meaning meadow. It is, therefore, the name of a place.

Edmund Berkeley II owned lands in Gloucester and Middlesex Counties in Virginia. As a young man, he followed in his father's footsteps, initiating and managing business transactions between the Virginia colony and England.

On December 1, 1704, he married Lucy Burwell, the daughter of Major Lewis Burwell of Carter's Creek, Surry County, Virginia, and Abigail Smith, a niece of Nathaniel Bacon. Lucy, who, it is said, was quite a beauty, had been romantically pursued, since she was sixteen, by Colonel Francis Nicholson, the royal governor of the province. When Lucy refused Nicholson's proposal, he threatened to kill her father and brothers and to cut the throats of any bridegroom, minister, and justice involved in her marriage ceremony. Nicholson's maniacal behavior continued after Lucy's marriage to Berkeley, and when word spread to London in 1705, Queen Anne recalled Nicholson to England.

After his marriage, Berkeley began acquiring lands in King William, Gloucester and New Kent Counties. By 1712, he was in residence at the estate home he was building, called *Barn Elms*, in Middlesex County. By that time, he was a successful planter, a large exporter of tobacco, and prominent in the business and political life of the colony of Virginia.

In 1713, Berkeley received the king's letter for admission to the council, but Governor Spotswood did not act on the order. His objections were twofold: first, he felt that Berkeley's appointment was due to the influence of English merchants; secondly, there were already a good many of Berkeley's relatives (the Burwells) on the council. A stalemate lasted for one year, until Berkeley was finally admitted, in 1714, and served until his death in 1718.

Submitted by Mrs. Willis James Meriwether III

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Elizabeth Yeates Cox (Elizabeth Willis Yeates); Birmingham
Mrs. Willis James Meriwether III (Mary Gertrude Yeates); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Robert Wylie Shepherd (Virginia Seymore Smith); Birmingham

Sources:

The Berkeleys of Barn Elms, by Frances Berkeley Young, published in Hamden, CT, by The Shoe String Press in 1964.

The Virginia Magazine, Volume XXXV, published in Richmond, VA, by The Virginia Historical Society in 1927.

Biographies of Our Ancestors
ESSEX BEVILLE

1639-1682/83

Essex Beville was born in Chesterton, Hunts County, England, on March 15, 1639. The particulars of how and when he arrived in Virginia are not known, but from all indications, he was at least reasonably well off when he left England. The first record showing him as being in Virginia is a land patent dated the 27th of December, 1671. An earlier land patent, dated December 30, 1663, notes the presence of Amy Butler, who would become Essex Beville's wife in 1669, and was probably living in Virginia before he arrived. The couple settled in Henrico County, Virginia, had five children, and their descendants have continued living on the land they settled for more than three hundred years.

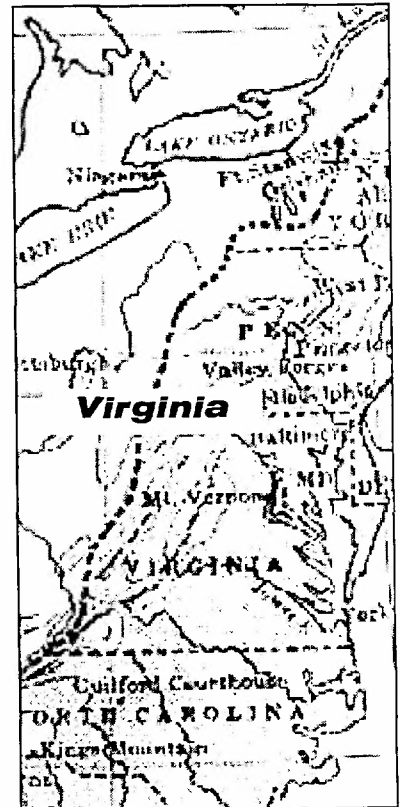
During the first few years that Essex and Amy were married, he evidently devoted a great part of his time to cultivation of the land, in building and improving their house and barns, and other activities necessary to life in those times. By 1677, he was appointed magistrate and/or justice of the peace for Henrico County. The appointment was done at the discretion of the governor, and the men who were chosen were invariably well known and of great ability. Essex Beville's character was familiar to several members of the Council and the House of Burgesses, as they were all from the same English hometown. In his capacity as magistrate/justice of the peace, Beville appraised estates, held court for assessing taxes, and made many other decisions affecting civic life. It is possible that he also enforced laws and regulations regarding church activities and the activities sanctioned for Sunday, "the Lord's Day," as the church played a major role in the early days of the Virginia Colony.

He was in the prime of life, forty-three years old, when he suffered an unidentified illness and passed away either in the latter part of 1682 or in 1683. He was very much missed by his family and friends as well as by his civic and military associates.

Submitted by Mrs. Norman William Layfield

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Norman William Layfield (Anne Beville LeFevre); Mobile



SOURCE:

700 Years of the Beville Family, by
Asselia Stroblar, published in
Bowie, MD, by Heritage Books,
Inc. in 1999.

In Grateful Remembrance **WILLIAM BIBB**

1735-1796

William Bibb was born on January 13, 1735, in Hanover County, Virginia. His parents were John Bibb and Susannah Biggers Bibb of Goochland County, Virginia. His first wife was a widow, Hannah Clark Booker; they married in 1755 and had four daughters. The eldest, Elizabeth, born in 1756, married Captain John Scott and moved to Franklin, Tennessee. The second, Nancy, born in 1760, married Davis Booker of Amelia County, Virginia. Hannah, the third daughter, was born in 1770, married first Peyton Wyatt, and, later, Major John Tittle. Sara Booker, the fourth child, born in 1776, married Marable Walter of Augusta, Georgia, and, later, Archelaus Jarrett of Elbert County, Georgia.

William Bibb's military service is described in the book, *Virginia's Colonial Soldiers*, by Lloyd DeWitt Bockstruck. The book lists William Bibb as a volunteer ranger in Colonel Phillips' company in 1763, and as a captain from Prince Edward County on June 21, 1773. William Bibb's military service continued throughout the Revolutionary War, during which he served with distinction as a captain of the cavalry under General George Washington.

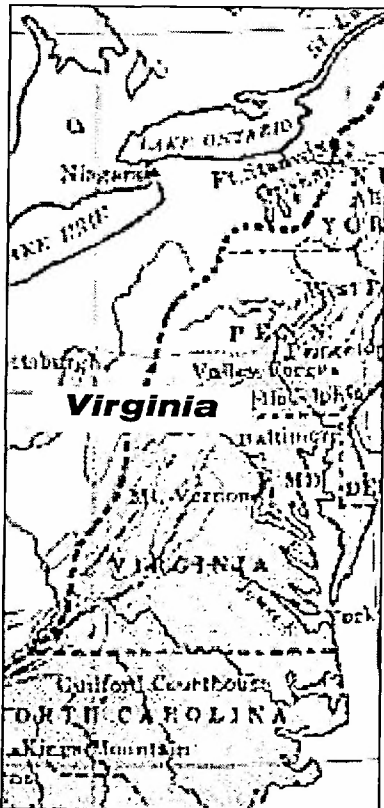
Captain Bibb moved his family from Hanover County to Prince Edward County in 1774. He immediately became active in the political affairs of Virginia, serving in the 1774-1775 Virginia Convention, formed to forward the cause of American independence. In 1775 he served as well on the committee of safety of Prince Edward County. In 1776, he became a member of the Virginia Assembly.

After the death of his first wife, Captain Bibb, at forty-four years of age, married twenty-year-old Sarah ("Sally") S. Wyatt, on December 4, 1779. (His bride was only one year older than his eldest daughter.) Sally Wyatt was born in New Kent County, Virginia, the daughter of Joseph Wyatt and Dorothy Dandridge. Dorothy Dandridge was the aunt of Martha Dandridge Custis, bride of George Washington, so Sally Wyatt was first cousin to the nation's first First Lady. *The Virginia Gazette* of Williamsburg announced the marriage: "Married, Captain William Bibb, of Prince Edward County, to Miss Sally Wyatt, sister of Colonel Joseph Wyatt, an amiable lady, with a handsome fortune."

(Sally Bibb's brother, Colonel Joseph Wyatt, was a trusted leader in General Washington's army. Other notable Wyatt family members were Sir Francis Wyatt, colonial governor of Virginia from 1621 to 1626 and 1639 to 1642; Thomas Wyatt, Renaissance poet who introduced the sonnet into English poetry and who served as a diplomat in the court of King Henry VIII; and Thomas Wyatt the Younger, who was executed for instigating the Wyatt Rebellion in opposition to Queen Mary's persecution of Protestants.)

Following the Revolutionary War, William Bibb represented Prince Edward County in the House of delegates from 1779 to 1785, during which time he and Sally had five children. In 1789, William was named sheriff of Petersburg, Virginia, twenty miles south of Richmond. Either later that year or in 1790, the family moved to Georgia, to a town also named Petersburg, which was in Elbert County, near the present town of Elberton. Three more children were born, the last one after William Bibb's death in 1796, when Sally was 37. His will left everything he had to "wife Sally S. Bibb and the children that I have by her, or may have. Wife sole executrix." Sally lived another thirty years, dying at Coosada in Elmore County, Alabama, on August 15, 1826.

William and Sally Bibb's eight children led influential and interesting lives in Georgia and Alabama. Their first child, William Wyatt Bibb (1781-1820), practiced medicine in Petersburg, Georgia, until he was called into politics. He served as a Georgia congressman, then as a United States senator from Georgia, next as governor of the Alabama Territory (by appointment of President James Monroe), and, finally, as the first elected governor of the state of Alabama.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

The second child, Thomas Bibb (1782-1839), was a wealthy planter, banker, and statesman who became the second elected governor of Alabama, following his brother's death. He had moved from Georgia to Limestone County, Alabama, in 1816, building his home, *Belle Mina*, in 1826. The home, which remained in Bibb family hands until the 1940s, still stands today.

The third of William and Sally Bibb's children was the Reverend Mr. Peyton Bibb (1785-1840), who founded a steamboat line between Montgomery and Mobile before becoming a Methodist minister. The fourth child, a daughter named Dorothy ("Dolly") (1786-1849), married Alexander Pope of Mobile, who was secretary to Governor William Wyatt Bibb (her brother).

The fifth child was named John Dandridge Bibb (1788-1848) at Martha Washington's request, in order to continue the Dandridge family name. John Bibb became a lawyer, then served as a state senator from Montgomery County, and delivered the welcome address to General Lafayette when the esteemed French general crossed the Georgia line en route to Alabama. In his later years, John Dandridge Bibb retired to a large plantation in Mississippi.

Dr. Joseph Wyatt Bibb (1790-1831) was the sixth child born to William and Sally Bibb, a physician who practiced in Georgia, then in Huntsville and Montgomery. Again at Martha Washington's request, her family name was incorporated into the second daughter and seventh child's name: Martha Dandridge Bibb. Martha married Fleming Freeman of Georgia, son of Colonel Holman Freeman, a grandson of George Walton, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence.

The last child, Benajah Smith, was born after his father's death in 1796. He became the companion of his mother for the remaining thirty years of her life, and served in a variety of political capacities, including judge, legislator, and state senator in Montgomery County. He became the first office holder in Alabama to be removed by federal authority, due to his unflinching devotion to the Confederacy. He died in 1884.

Submitted by Mrs. Paul Gaston Peznick

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Claude Curtis Bullock, Jr. (Carolyn Virginia House); Mobile
Mrs. Thomas Clawson (Phoebe Mosgrove Thomas); Alpharetta, Georgia
Mrs. Weldon Williamson Doe, III (Katharine Ann Eyster); Montgomery
Mrs. Ashley Bullock Duffy (Ashley Jordan Bullock); Mobile
Mrs. William Jerome Henson (Margaret Elizabeth Hutchens); Huntsville
Mrs. William Deal Jamison (Sally Rainer Lamar); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Louis Quitman Mazingo III (Kitty Bibb Frazer); Montrose
Mrs. Thomas Mason Paschall (Georgia Bibb Tweedy); Atlanta, Georgia
Mrs. Paul Gaston Petznick (Eliza Lee Paschall); Birmingham
Mrs. C. M. A. Rogers, III (Edna Frances Boykin); Montgomery
Mrs. Charles Enzer Tweedy, Jr. (Eliza Lee Miller); Jasper

SOURCES:

The Bibb Family in America, 1640-1940, by Charles William Bibb, issued in Baltimore by an unknown publisher in 1941.

Bibb Family of America, Volume One, by Mrs. Fran Ross Steward, Sr., published in Centre, AL, by Steward University Press, Centre, AL, in 1979.

Early Settlers of Alabama, by Colonel James Saunders, originally published in New Orleans by the Southern Historical Press in 1899; reprinted in Baltimore by the Genealogical Publishing Company in 1969.

First Settlers of Upper Georgia, of the Cherokees, and the Author, by George R. Gilmer, originally published in New York in 1855; reprinted in Baltimore in 1965.

Notable Men of Alabama, by the Honorable Joel C. DuBose, published in Atlanta by the Southern Historical Association in 1904.

Sally Wyatt Bibb and Her Children, by C.M. Stanley, unpublished paper written for "The Thirteen," Montgomery, October 17, 1957.

Virginia's Colonial Soldiers, by Lloyd DeWitt Bockstruck, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1988, reprinted in 2008.

Wikipedia article retrieved from http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Thomas_Wyatt_the_younger incorporating text from *The Encyclopaedia Britannica Eleventh Edition*, published by Cambridge University Press, 1910-1911.

http://blog.al.com/ht/2007/05/belle_mina_is_bibb_legacy.html

In Grateful Remembrance **FRANCIS BILLINGSLEY**

1620-1684*

Francis Billingsley was born in 1620 in England. His parents, the John Billingsleys, were Quakers and forced to leave England in the 1630s. They settled in Holland, and it was there that Francis eventually married a woman named either Ann or Joann, born in 1626.

Francis came to America with his brothers, John and James, and they settled in Virginia. Francis, however, had a grant of two hundred acres lying on the west side of Chesapeake Bay called "Selby Clifts," and in 1652, he brought his wife and son to the Province of Maryland. Two years later, he was named constable for the Clifts.

The death of one of his brothers necessitated that he return to Virginia for a time to farm for his sister-in-law. While there, he applied for and acquired additional land in Maryland: "Corn Hill," at fifty acres and "Deer Quarter," a holding of 250 acres. In 1663 he returned to Calvert County, Maryland, when his sister-in-law had remarried, and he was no longer needed to run the farm. He next acquired one hundred acres adjoining "Deer Quarter," bringing his holdings to a total of six hundred acres.

In October of 1678, Francis Billingsley was present as a member of the Lower House at a meeting held at St. Mary's, then served as a delegate in the Lower House for Calvert County, Maryland, from 1678-1681. In 1683, he was appointed one of the commissioners for Calvert County for the purpose of purchasing town lands, ports, and surveys of the town and of state lots. This appears to be the last official record of him. Francis Billingsley died intestate in 1684*; it appears that his sons were in possession of the lands he had acquired.

Francis is the only one of five brothers that came to America who left male issue to the third generation and is, therefore, the founder of the family of 1649 in Maryland and Virginia. He was a Quaker, like his parents, but records of two lawsuits show that he did not adhere to the Quaker way of settling disputes, using the court system instead. He was probably not as strict in his faith as others, especially when it came to business!

Of some interest: *Billingsley* is a very old English "place name." There appear some six coats of arms for Billingsley, all using the same crest.

*NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1695.

Submitted by Mrs. James Robert McCown

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. James Robert McCown (Jeanne Carolyn Luther); Huntsville

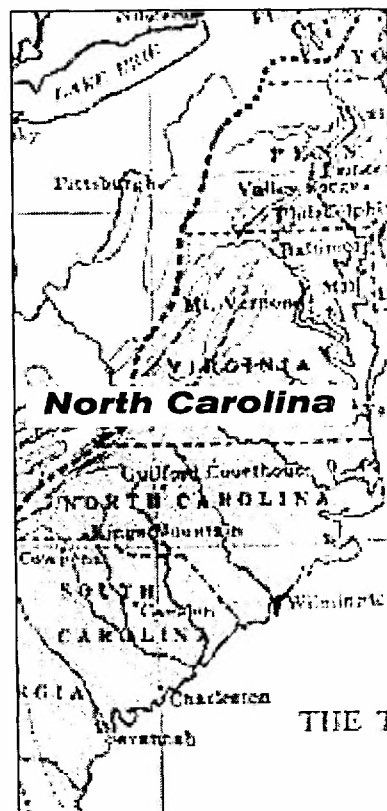


SOURCE:

The Billingsley Family in America, by
Harry Alexander Davis.

1620-1686

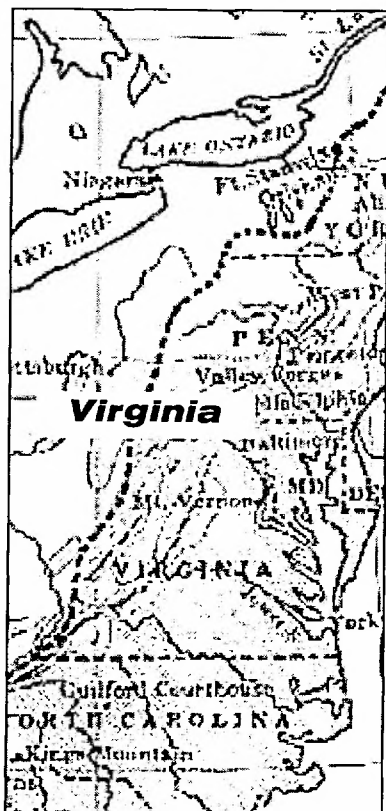
Mrs. Elna Russell Riley Brendel (Elna Russell Riley); Birmingham



*North Carolina Historical and
Genealogical Register 3, January 1903.*

In Grateful Remembrance **RICHARD BLOW**

1685-1762



SOURCE:

The Blow Family of Virginia, by John Page Elliott, privately published, location and date unknown.

To fully appreciate the character of the Blows in Virginia, as well as to establish in one's mind the location of their first homes, it is necessary to realize that, as John Easton Cooke writes, "Virginia, in May 1676, was still the narrow strip of country between the Potomac and the Nottoway, from the Bay to the head of Tidewater."

The Nottoway River was the frontier border of Virginia, and, at the same time, the farthest line of Surry County. Today it cuts the county of Sussex (formed from Surry in 1754) into two almost equal parts. It was just between the Blackwater River and the Nottoway that the first Blows, immigrants from England, patented land.

George Blow II landed in Virginia in February, 1638, probably following his father, John Blow, who came to Virginia with Sir Thomas Dale, who arrived about 1610 in the ship *Starr*. John Blow patented 150 acres and was called "an ancient planter," a term used to designate one of the men who felt that the people should be left to work out their own ideas of government. In Sussex County, the right of franchise was equal for all classes. George Blow II was the father of George Blow III.

Richard Blow, the son of George Blow III was born in 1685. He married Elizabeth Ruffin, and was a captain in the Virginia militia in 1740.

Richard Blow was one of the first vestrymen of Albemarle Parish, one of the earliest parishes in Virginia, created on November 1, 1738. The appointment as vestryman was a signal honor in the early years. The vestry made up the parish budget, apportioned the taxes, and elected the church wardens, who were, in many places, the tax collectors. They also exercised control over the record of land titles. They listed the "tithables," (See Glossary: Tithables) laid the county levy, bound out poor children to trades, and represented orphans in probate and claims court.

The importance of the vestry of the Episcopal Church in the early days is expressed by Bishop Meade as follows: "For nothing will the descendants of the old families of the State be more thankful than for the lists of vestrymen, magistrates, and others which have been gathered from the earliest records, and by means of which the very localities of their ancestors may be traced." The vestrymen reported only to justices of the peace and the sheriff, who represented the court. Thomas Jefferson referred to the system of justices of the peace and vestrymen of the parishes (all of them served without pay) to prove his belief in human nature and the people as a mass. By an act of the Assembly 1662, "Justices were to be of the most able, honest, and judicious persons of the county." They represented the aristocrats of colonial Virginia.

Submitted by Mrs. Norvelle Lee Smith

DESCENDANTS:

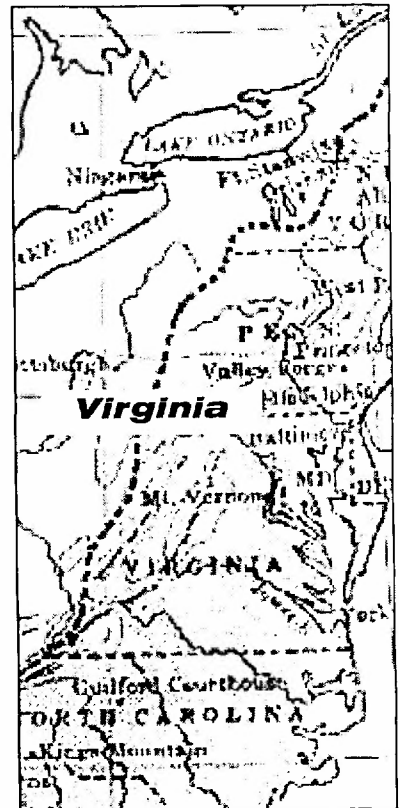
Mrs. Earl Mason McGowin Jr. (Susan Elliott McLean); Chapman
Mrs. Norvelle Lee Smith (Anne Teresa McLean); Point Clear

1646-1709

Having served in the House of Burgesses from 1688 through 1706, Colonel Bolling died at the age of 62 on July 17, 1709 and was buried on his plantation, *Kippax*, in Prince George County, Virginia, where his tomb still stands. However, his remains were removed in 1858 from *Kippax* to the mausoleum erected by his great-grandson at Blandford Cemetery in Petersburg, Virginia.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Charles McDowell Crook (Edith Rushton Johnston); Montgomery
Mrs. Donald Rex Harrison (Barbara Mason Slaughter); Fairhope



SOURCES:

American Presidential Families, by
Hugh Brozan and Charles Mosely,
published in New York by MacMillan
Publishing Company in 1993.

Pocahontas and her Descendants, by Wyndham Robertson with *Illustrative Historical Notes* by R.A. Brock, published in Richmond, VA, by J.W. Randolph and English in 1887.

In Grateful Remembrance **THOMAS BOND**

1703-1788

Thomas Bond was born in Baltimore County, Maryland in 1703 and died eighty-five years later in the same county. It was there that he, on April 13, 1725, married Elizabeth Scott in St. John's parish. They had at least one child, Sarah, who was born around 1732, married Benjamin Howard on October 7, 1755, and died in 1763, at the age of thirty-one. There is evidence that the couple also had a son, Thomas, born in 1744, who married Catherine Fell, and died in 1800.

Thomas Bond served two terms as justice of the peace: 1768-1769 and 1772-1773. He also served in the quorum simultaneously with his second term as justice of the peace. He was a member of the Maryland Commission in 1774.

The family dwelt at *Bond Manor*. A manor at that time was basically a little self-governing colony. Of course, the owner of the estate had to obey the lord proprietor's laws, in this case, those of Lord Baltimore. However, although he did not hold the title, "Lord of the Manor," as in Great Britain, Thomas Bond was the final authority for those living on his estate.

The manor house was large and comfortable, with furnishings of the highest quality that could be afforded brought from England. There was probably a private chapel where the family attended services, along with all the servants on the estate. Around the manor house were the barns, stables, and slave quarters. Some distance away were the small houses for the tenant farmers.

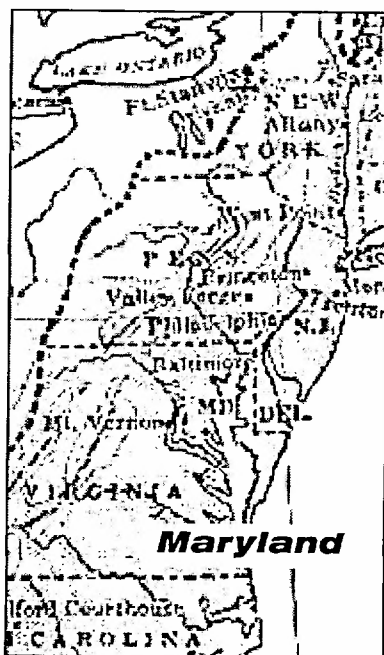
In addition to being self-governing, the manor was also self-sufficient, manufacturing nearly everything that was necessary for sustaining life. If there was a stream or river flowing through the property, there would probably be a grist mill, where wheat and corn were ground into flour for use, not only by the families on the property, but perhaps served other customers as well. Manors also had a blacksmith shop, which produced the tools required for working the land, including wagon rims, barrel rings, perhaps even pewter spoons and other kitchenware. There might be a weaving house, where spinning wheels, spindles, and looms would be set up to manufacture the bulk of the fabric required for manor life. A visit from a ship bearing manufactured goods was rare and greatly anticipated.

The fact that Thomas Bond was able to find time to contribute to the civic life of his community while directing such a multifaceted operation at home is a tribute to his intelligence, drive, and inherent management capabilities.

Submitted by Dr. Ann Bowling Pearson

DESCENDANT:

Dr. Ann Bowling Pearson (Ann Bowling Pearson); Auburn



SOURCES:

Real Stories of Baltimore County History, Data Obtained by the Teachers and Children of Baltimore County (Maryland) Schools, revised and adapted by Isobel Davidson, published in Baltimore by Warwick & York in 1917.

Maryland Commission Records
1726-1788.

Preston's History of Hartford County, Maryland, published in Baltimore by an unknown publisher in 1901.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

1616-c.1657

Robert Booth was born in England in 1616 and died in Virginia before 1658. His home in York County (formally named Charles County), Virginia, was called *Belle Ville* where he lived with his wife, Frances (born in 1609 and died after 1668). County patents show that he possessed other extensive tracts in York County. When he died, Robert Booth left a library of not less than three hundred volumes valued at fourteen pounds sterling, and twenty-three thousand bricks valued at 184 shillings. The bricks were probably manufactured on *Belle Ville*, either by his own slaves or by transient workers.

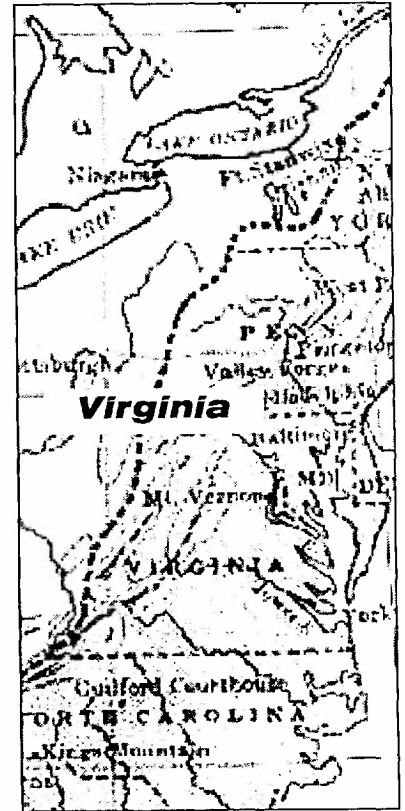
A practicing physician, Robert Booth also served as clerk of York County from 1640-1657; justice of York County in 1652, and was a member of the House of Burgesses from 1653 through 1655. Of his four children, Elizabeth (born 1641) married Dr. Patrick Napier; Ann (born 1647) married first, Captain Thomas Dennett who died in 1673, and was married second to William Clopton; Robert married Anne Bray, and there is no other recorded information about the youngest, Eleanor.

Dr. Robert Booth and his son-in-law, Dr. Patrick Napier, were among the few physicians in colonial Virginia. Although the details of Robert's relationship with Patrick are unrecorded, they well could have been *preceptor* and *apprentice*, as was the custom in the colonies. Only a small percentage of colonial physicians attended medical school but, instead, followed the custom of studying with a preceptor. This was necessary at the time because of the scarcity of institutions of learning and the expense connected with an education. The experienced physician taught his pupil "on the job" to handle the medical crises and accidents associated with colonial life. With meager opportunity to learn and medical knowledge equally scant, emergency made many of the colonial physicians self-reliant and competent to treat each crisis according to the knowledge of the day.

Submitted by Mrs. Clarence Britt Turner IV

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Clarence Britt Turner IV (Frances Louise Johnson); Tuscaloosa



SOURCES:

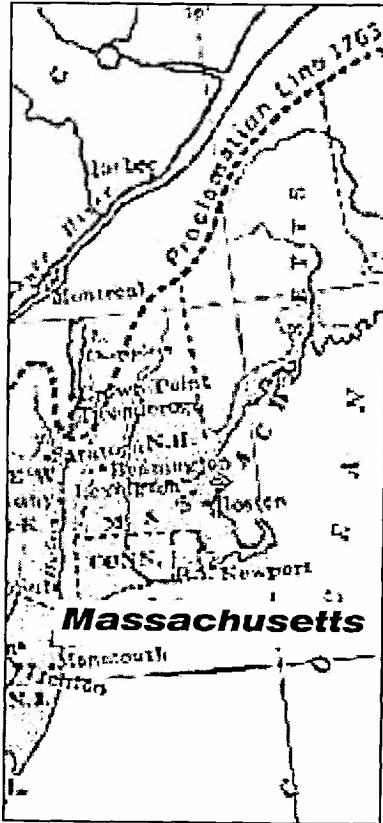
*Ancestry of William Clopton of York
County, Virginia* by Lucy Erwin, pub-
lished in Rutland, VT, by Tuttle
Publishing Company
in 1939.

*Virginia Colonial Abstracts, Series 2,
Volume 5: York County, item 47*

*Virginia Colonial Abstracts, Volume
VVIV and XXV: York County, Virginia,
1633-1646 and 1648-1657*, abstract-
ed by Beverly Fleet and published in
Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing
Company in 1961.

In Grateful Remembrance
WILLIAM BRADFORD

1589/90-1657



William Bradford, son of William and Alice (Hanson) Bradford, was baptized in Austerfield, Yorkshire, England, on March 19, in either 1589 or 1590. Bradford's father died when he was only a year old, at which time his mother and her children moved into her father-in-law's home. Five years later, when William was six, his grandfather died, and his mother died a year after that. William and his older sister then moved in to an uncle's farm. At the age of twelve, he became ill and was unable to perform any labor, so he spent his time reading the Bible. By the time he was seventeen or eighteen, he had become a Separatist. When the movement began to suffer pressure from the Church of England, William moved with members of the group to Amsterdam, then to Leiden (also in Holland), as they searched for the freedom to worship as they pleased.

William returned to Amsterdam in 1613 to marry his cousin, Dorothy May. He had inherited some money from his father's estate, which he used to establish a weaving business. He also continued his studies, and eventually he read six languages. After eleven years in Leiden, the Separatists, although they had no interference from religious authorities, were unhappy that their children were picking up Dutch ways, so they decided to go to America.

The voyage was scheduled to depart in August of 1620 in two ships, the *Speedwell* and the *Mayflower*. The *Speedwell* was poorly built and could not be made seaworthy for the long voyage, so the decision was made to crowd as many people as possible into the *Mayflower*. The voyage to America was rough, long, and insufficiently provisioned, and when the first landing was made at Provincetown, a lack of fresh water forced the little ship to move on. That is when Dorothy Bradford, dismayed at the desolate-looking land and badly missing the son (John) whom she had left behind, somehow fell overboard and drowned; her action is thought to have been intentional.

Finally these hardy Pilgrims (a word used by William Bradford to describe "one who searches for a new country") landed at Plymouth, a former Indian village that had been wiped out by disease. The first few months were spent just trying to survive the harsh New England winter, but the Pilgrims worked very hard throughout the following spring and summer, greatly aided by neighboring Indians. Finally, they were able to celebrate their harvest in a ceremony that became the basis of our Thanksgiving.

Upon the death of the first governor of Plymouth, William Bradford succeeded to the position in 1621, and held it for thirty-three years, with one five-year break. He married again, on August 14, 1623, to Anne Carpenter (widow of Edward Southworth), who is thought to have been born in Wrington, Somerset, England, on August 3, 1590. A description of William and Anne Bradford's marriage is found in a letter written by Emmanuel Altham in 1623:

Upon the occasion of the Governor's marriage, Massasoit [a prominent chief] was sent for [to come to] the wedding, where came with him his wife, the Queen, although he hath five wives. With him came four other kings and about sixscore men with their bows and arrows. When they came to town, they were saluted with the shooting off of many muskets. Massasoit brought the Governor three or four bucks and a turkey. They had a very good pastime seeing the Indians dance. Twelve pasty venisons [venison pie], roasted venison, grapes, and nuts were also served at the wedding.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

Three children were born to William and Alice Bradford: William, Mercy, and Joseph.

William Bradford was a gifted leader, being especially wise in his dealings with the local Native Americans. His death on May 9, 1657, was lamented by all the colonies of New England, all feeling him to be a common blessing and father to all of them. He is buried at the top of Burial Hill Cemetery overlooking Cape Cod.

Submitted by Mrs. Henry Paul Haas and Mrs. James Wallace Porter, II

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Grady Avant, Jr. (Katherine Willis Yancy), Birmingham
Dr. Mary Allen Bradley; Orleans, Massachusetts
Mrs. John Norman Corey, Jr. (Adelaide Douglass Rushton), Birmingham
Mrs. William Inge Eskridge (Josephine Pratt Haas); Montgomery
Mrs. Henry Paul Haas (Dora Pratt Smith), Montgomery
Mrs. Samuel Cathcart Hicks (Lucia Warden Hixon), Mobile
Mrs. Martha McCollough Hiden (Martha Marbury McCollough), Birmingham
Mrs. Charlotte Stockham Murdock (Charlotte Rushton Marbury), Birmingham
Mrs. James Wallace Porter II (Kathryn Lynn Hicks), Birmingham
Mrs. Newton Campbell Rayford (Sarah Tatum Pratt), Mobile
Mrs. Guy Leslie Rutledge III (Lulie Scott Morrisette), Mobile
Mrs. C. M. Schiesz (Catherine Lynn Murdock), Florence
Mrs. James Daunton Smith (Mary Willis Murdock), Birmingham

SOURCES:

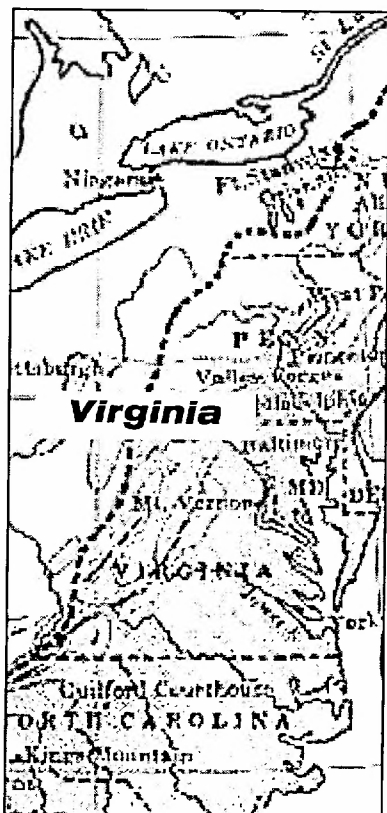
Magnalia Christi Americana, Or The Ecclesiastical History Of New England V2: From Its First Planting In The Year 1620 Unto The Year Of Our Lord 1698, "by the Reverend and Learned Cotton Mather and Pastor of the North Church in Boston, New-England, in Two Volumes," published in Hartford, CT, by S. Andrus and Son, 1853-1855.

Mayflower Families in Progress; William Bradford of the Mayflower and His Descendants for Four Generations, fourth edition, compiled by Robert S. Wakefield, FASG and Lee D. van Antwerp, M.D., former CG, published in Plymouth, MA, by General Society of Mayflower Descendants in 1994.

Of Plimouth Plantations 1620-1647, by William Bradford, edited by Samuel Eliot Morison, published in New York by Alfred A. Knopf in 1997.

In Grateful Remembrance
CHRISTOPHER BRANCH

1602-1681



The only son of Lionel Branch and Valentia Sparke (married at St. Martin, Ludgate, London on July 7, 1596), Christopher Branch was born in 1602 in Kent County, England. At the age of seventeen, he married Mary Addy, the daughter of Francis Addy of Darton, York County, England, who was nine years older than he. Shortly after their marriage, in 1619 or 1620, the couple boarded the *London Merchant* for passage to Henrico County, Virginia.

The couple originally settled "att ye Colledg Land," a parcel of ten thousand acres set aside as part of an endowment for a university to educate the "infidel's children." Soon after surviving the Indian massacre of March 22, 1622, Christopher Branch began to acquire property on the southern side of the James River in Chesterfield County, Virginia. He established a plantation of 1,380 acres at Kingsland; today's Kingsland Road, which runs between Highway Five and the James River, cuts across the old plantation. The house he built on the plantation was called *Arrowhattocks*.

The first child of Christopher and Mary Branch was born in 1624/25 and was named Thomas. Two more sons, William and Christopher Jr., followed.

Christopher Branch, in addition to managing his plantation, worked as a "viewer," or inspector, of tobacco. The purpose of the viewer was to ensure the quality of the state's most important export commodity. In 1640, while serving in the House of Burgesses, Branch and others dealt with an over-supply of tobacco by burning all the bad tobacco and half of the good, thus containing production to one-and-one-half million pounds.

At the age of eighty, having outlived his wife and his two younger sons, Christopher Branch made out his will. It was dated June 20, 1678, and left everything to his son Thomas. Beyond his land and slaves, there was very little—just the necessities of life and two old Bibles, "worth just five shillings apiece." Just before his death, on November 2, 1681, Christopher Branch granted three hundred acres of land to Thomas; gifts of other tracts to various grandchildren are indicated by the disputes over his will following his death.

Christopher Branch has thousands of living descendants from coast to coast. Many famous Richmonders are related to him, and the Branch House on Monument Avenue in Richmond is named for one of his descendants.

Submitted by Mrs. Dennis Bradley Cork

SOURCE:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-1624/5), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Sawyer Brooks (Karen Bryce Phifer); Tuscaloosa
 Mrs. Dennis Bradley Cork (Susan Jolly Phifer); Tuscaloosa
 Mrs. Alexander Van Hoose Davies, Jr. (Catherine Ward Brinkley); Birmingham
 Mrs. Winston Goldsby Foster (Elizabeth Hamilton Brinkley); Mobile
 Mrs. Bradford Darius Hall (Alice Holloway Shaver); Huntsville
 Mrs. William Walter McTyeire, Jr. (Katherine Elizabeth Meadow); Birmingham
 Mrs. Barry Ashton Naylor (Mary Alice Walker); New Market
 Mrs. Mark Thomas Purvis (Kate Noble Rawson); Decatur
 Mrs. Charles Edwin Shaver, Jr. (Kate Noble Walker); Huntsville
 Mrs. Grady Harold Zeanah (Lynn Mershon Beauchamp); Tuscaloosa

WILLIAM BREWSTER

1567-1644

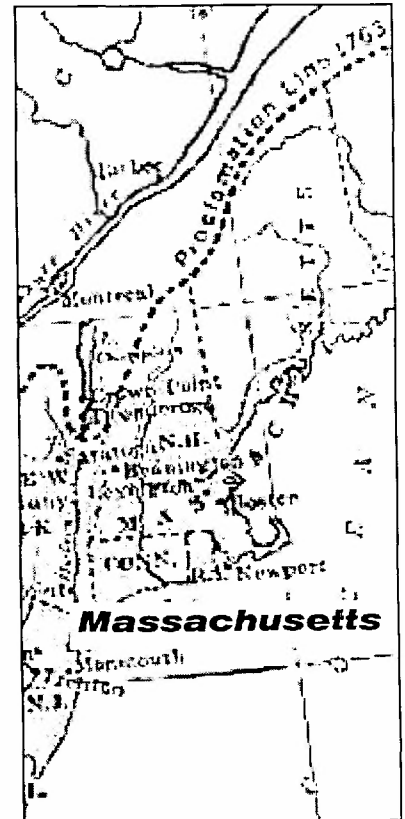
William Brewster, the son of William and Mary Smyth Simkinson Brewster, was probably born in Doncaster, Yorkshire, England, in 1567. At the age of eight or nine, he went to live at Scrooby Manor in Nottinghamshire, where his father served as receiver and bailiff as well as master of the royal post, positions that William himself would later hold.

On December 3, 1580, William Brewster enrolled at Cambridge University. He was already proficient in Latin, the language of diplomacy and law. Upon leaving Cambridge, he entered the employ of William Davison, a diplomat who was well regarded in Queen Elizabeth's court. They were sent, in 1585, to the Netherlands, where they accepted the keys to two cities. Brewster was charged with the keeping of the keys and said many years later that he slept with them under his pillow.

Tiring of the political intrigue that accompanied life in the diplomatic corps, William Brewster returned to Scrooby and sometime before 1593 married his wife Mary, whose last name was possibly Wentworth, which would have meant she was a descendant of King Edward I. Not much is known about her, not even her last name for certain, but she evidently shared William's staunch Separatist beliefs, making a brave effort to escape with him and their children to the Netherlands in 1607. By that time, the couple had a teenage son, Johnathan, a seven-year-old daughter, Patience, and an infant daughter, Fear (as in "Fear of God"). The first attempt to flee England was betrayed by the English captain of the ship on which they were sailing, and William was robbed and thrown in jail. Mary had to make her way with her children back to Scrooby with no help; William was later released to return home. Throughout 1608, the Brewsters aided other Separatists in escaping to Amsterdam, and finally, in August of that year, they also made the journey, finally settling in the city of Leiden. William was "called and chosen by the church" as a Ruling Elder, a position he would hold for thirty-four years, until his death.

William used his knowledge of Latin to teach English to students attending the University. In 1611, William and Mary had a son named Love, and another in 1614 they named Wrestling (as in "Wrestling with temptation"). Life in Leiden was pleasant, with "much sweet and delightful society and spiritual comfort," but these English transplants began to long for the pastoral lives they had left. They also worried that their children were becoming Dutch, that the children were sacrificing their childhoods to hard labor, and that Spain would soon bring war back to the Netherlands.

William Bradford was among those, along with William Brewster, who planned the move to America. Brewster would be the leader of the Separatists in America; he and Mary left Johnathan and their older daughters, Patience and Fear, with the Separatist leader who remained in Leiden. However, the Brewsters had been assigned two children of a Separatist family in England, possibly Mary's relatives—Richard More, age six, and his younger sister, Mary More—to live with them in the New World, so these two children accompanied William, Mary, ten-year-old Love, and six-year-old Wrestling aboard the *Mayflower* on September 6, 1620.



In Grateful Remembrance

The crossing of the Atlantic took sixty-five days, and the arrival in the cold of a Cape Cod November was not ideal, but Bradford reported the passengers "were not a little joyful" and "much comforted...seeing so goodly a land." During that difficult winter, William and Mary Brewster remained well, caring for those who were sick. Their children also survived, with the exception of little Mary More, who, along with almost half the colonists, had died by the end of March.

Nearly a year later, the *Fortune* arrived, bringing Johnathan, now a twenty-eight-year-old widower who would marry another immigrant, Lucretia Oldham, in 1624. Another passenger on the *Fortune*, Thomas Pence, a twenty-one-year-old carriage maker, would become the husband of Patience Brewster, who arrived with her sister, Fear, in 1623, aboard the *Anne*. Fear would, sometime before 1627, marry Isaac Allerton, a *Mayflower* passenger and older widower with young children.

Although he did not administer the sacraments—baptism and communion—because he was not an ordained minister, William Brewster preached two sermons every Sunday. After William Brewster's death, William Bradford wrote, "In teaching, he was very moving and stirring of affections, also very plain and distinct in what he taught; by which means he became the more profitable to the hearers. He had a singular good gift in prayer, both public and private, in ripping up the heart and conscience before God in the humble confession of sin, and begging the mercies of God in Christ for the pardon of the same."

Mary Brewster died on April 17, 1627, following several years of poor health. William moved thirty miles north to Duxbury, where he owned 111 acres, and shared his comfortable farm home with Love and his wife Sarah. The settlers in Duxbury formed their own church, and Brewster served as its Elder, in addition to his role in Plymouth. In 1636, Governor William Bradford formed a commission to draw up a formal code of laws, and William Brewster served on the commission. William Brewster died April 10, 1644, with his friend William Bradford at his side.

Submitted by Mrs. Joab Langston Thomas

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Joab Langston Thomas (Marly Allene Dukes); Tuscaloosa

SOURCES:

Mayflower, by Nathaniel Philbrick, published in New York by the Penguin Group in 2006.

Of Plymouth Plantation, by William Bradford, edited by Samuel Eliot Morison, published in New York by Alfred A. Knopf in 1952.

Pilgrim, A Biography of William Brewster, by Mary Sherwood, published in Falls Church, VA, by Great Oak Press in 1982.

William Brewster of the Mayflower: Compiled for Four Generations, Second Edition, by Barbara Lambert Merrick, published in Plymouth, MA, by the General Society of Mayflower Descendants in 1996.

WILLIAM BROADNAX

1675-1727

William Broadnax, youngest son of goldsmith Robert Broadnax and his wife Anne, was born in Godmersham, Kent County, England, on February 28, 1675. The exact date of his immigration to Virginia is unknown, but is thought to be sometime between 1695 and 1700. In 1701, while still in his mid-twenties, he married Rebecca Champion Travis, widow of Edward Travis III of Jamestown. They had three children: William, born circa 1702; Edward, born circa 1704; and Elizabeth Rebecca, born in 1706.

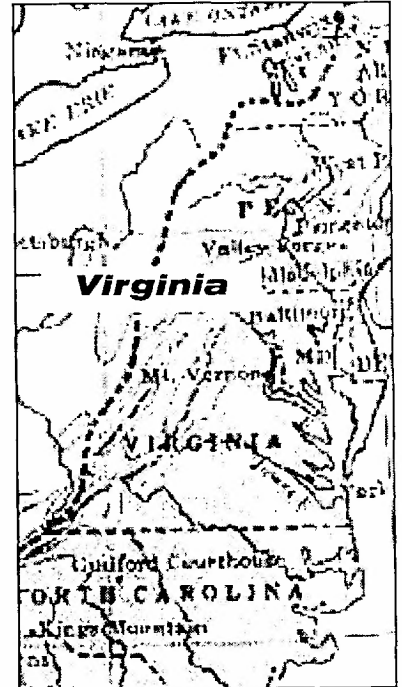
William acquired a substantial estate in James City County, Virginia, and by 1704 was listed as the owner of 1,683 acres of land. His peers selected him in 1715 and 1718 as a member of the House of Burgesses for James City County. He was elected to the House of Burgesses for Jamestown for the 1720-26 sessions.

William was preceded in death by his wife by four years. He died in Jamestown on February 16, 1727, leaving a sizeable estate to his heirs. The family fortunes, according to family legend, continued to thrive until one of the descendants became interested in horse racing. Having inherited considerable holdings, including property purchased from Thomas Jefferson, this young man managed to squander it all. When he died in 1791, his will mentioned only two items of note—a chamber pot and a feather bed! Soon after this, the family began to cast its eyes toward north Alabama.

Submitted by Mrs. Carlton Gordon King

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Allen Clark III (Susan Fennel Noble); Montgomery
Mrs. James Lee Guest, Jr. (Patricia Brannon Little); Montgomery
Mrs. Joseph Eric Higgins (Elizabeth Ponder Noble); Montgomery
Mrs. Carlton Gordon King (Patricia Brannon Pickard); Montgomery
Mrs. Dudley Weaver Lee (Louise DeLong Sewall; Memphis, Tennessee
Mrs. John Borders Noble, Jr. (Susan Speake); Montgomery
Mrs. John Banks Sewell, Jr. (Ruth Elizabeth Delony); Belle Mina

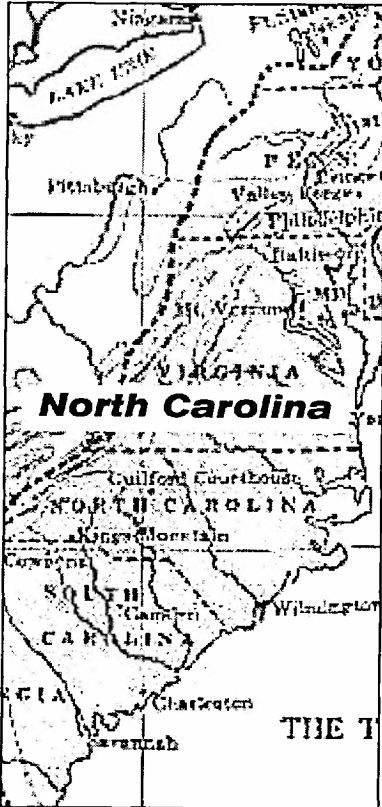


SOURCES:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-1624/5), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.
Brunswick County, Virginia, Personal Property Tax Lists 1786
Mecklenburg County, Virginia, Will Book 2
Northampton County, North Carolina Will Book 1
Standard Colonial Virginia Register
Virginia Gazette, Issues dated from September 4 through September 11, 1746
William and Mary Quarterly, Volume 14
Your Family and Mine, by Ellen Brown Trube, privately published in Houston in 1973.

In Grateful Remembrance
JOHN BROOKS, SR.

c.1690-1766



John Brooks, Sr. was born in London around 1690. Family tradition says that he brought his wife Susan and their six sons to Virginia, lived there a short while, then went to North Carolina about 1735. One Bible record shows that he came from near the mouth of the James River in Virginia. A container passed down through the generations is known in the family as the "sea chest, and is thought to have been brought from England by Susan Brooks. The original inscription on one side, "S.B.-1735" lends veracity to Susan Brooks' ownership, and it seems likely that John and Susan Brooks arrived in America before 1735.

The first record found of John Brooks, Sr. in North Carolina is from 1735, when he was granted land in Bladen County (later incorporated into Cumberland County). He immediately built a mill, but later, when the adjoining land was granted, it was found that John Brooks had built his mill on his neighbor's land. The local court solved the problem by including additional land in the neighbor's grant.

In 1743, '49, '50, and '51, John Brooks served as justice of the peace for Bladen County. When, in 1754, Cumberland County was formed from the upper part of Bladen County and St. David's parish, John Brooks continued as justice of the peace for the new county and was also appointed vestryman for the parish.

Cumberland County records show that on October 1, 1756, John Brooks sold Edward Dunsfield four hundred acres that had been patented to him in 1735. For it, he received "the sum of eight pistols." The next year, John Brooks of Orange County sold an additional, adjoining, one hundred acres in Cumberland County to Edward Dunsfield, which establishes the time of the Brooks's move from one county to the other.

Tradition says that John Brooks and his sons, Thomas, Joab, Mark, and Isaac traveled in canoes from their home in Cumberland County up the waters of Cape Fear River and Deep River, disembarking where the town of Gulf, North Carolina, now stands. They walked north about fifteen miles to locate the 640 acres that had been granted to John by an agent of Lord Granville on May 9, 1755. They then returned to their canoes and went back to Cumberland County for their families.

John Brooks settled the south side of Tick Creek, about three miles east of Ore Hill. His son, Thomas, made his home on the south side of Rocky River, near the Hugh Dixon Mill, now called Thomas Mill. Joab and Mark Brooks settled on the headwaters of Ephraim's Creek, about two miles northwest of Ore Hill.

Isaac inherited his father's place shortly before or upon John's death. The home that John built for himself in Orange County was considered costly at the time, and was appropriate for a man of his standing, influence, and wealth. The house was two-storied, of wood with weatherboard siding, and had glass windows, paneled doors, and ceilings in all the rooms. It stood until about 1940.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

By 1770, the Brooks estate numbered about fifteen hundred acres, and the re-naming of counties placed John Brooks' home in Chatham County, where he died in 1766 or 67, by that time having become known as "Old Brooks." Records indicated that when he deeded gifts to his sons, he also gifted a Martha Goodman, wife of Samuel Goodman of Cumberland County; it is assumed that she was his daughter.

Submitted by Mrs. Benjamin Meek Miller Childers and Mrs. Archibald Thomas Reeves

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Benjamin Meek Miller Childers (Josephine Brooks Smith); Selma
Mrs. Archibald Thomas Reeves III (Anne McNeill Smith); Selma
Mrs. Andrew Blaine Williford (Josephine Smith Ames); Fairview, North Carolina

SOURCE:

Brooks and Kindred Families, by Ida
Brooks Kellam, privately published in
Madison County, AL, in 1950.

In Grateful Remembrance **PETER BROWN**

Before 1600-1633

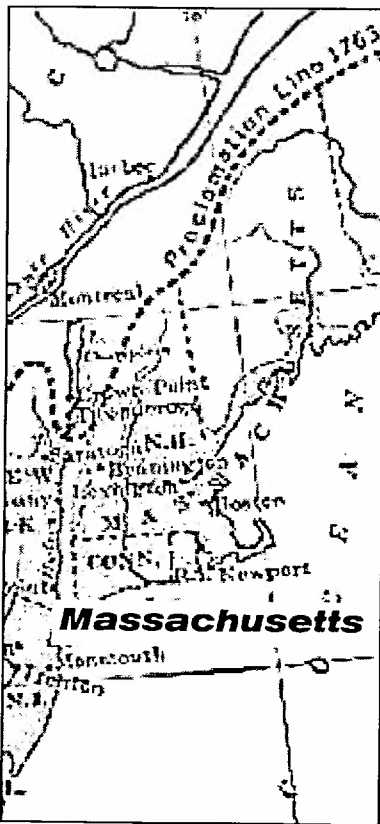
In 1620, 102 passengers, according to historian Annie Marble, “crowded for ten weeks into a vessel (the *Mayflower*) that was intended to carry about half that number of passengers.” Travelers on the *Mayflower* were in the “between,” or “tween,” deck, a dark, airless space about seventy-five feet long and not even five feet high, that separated the hold from the upper deck. After a long, cramped, frightening, and difficult voyage, the *Mayflower* arrived in the Cape Cod area in November of 1620. Peter Brown was one of those passengers, an unmarried man traveling from Holland. He became one of the forty-one signers of the *Mayflower Compact*.

The *Mayflower Compact* was a document drawn up by the passengers of that difficult voyage after they arrived in America, but before they departed the ship for land. It was a civil covenant that described the laws that they would follow in their new home. Nathaniel Philbrick states, “They put pen to paper and created a document that ranks with the Declaration of Independence and the United States Constitution as a seminal American text.” The signers were called freemen, and they met several times a year in a general court to elect a governor and assistants and pass laws for the colony.

After a difficult first year of famine and other hardships at Plymouth, during which many of the *Mayflower* passengers died, *The Fortune* arrived with more Pilgrims on November 19, 1621, “the great event of surprise and rejoicing,” according to Marble. Among the passengers was a recently widowed Martha Ford, who gave birth on the night of her arrival on shore to her fourth child, a son named John.

The thirty-seven passengers aboard *The Fortune* nearly doubled the size of the colony. Everyone was in good health, and Martha Ford became one of the *Fortune* passengers who married a *Mayflower* Pilgrim, as she was wed to Peter Brown approximately four years after her arrival. The couple had two children, Mary and Priscilla, before Martha died (between 1628 and 1630). Upon Martha’s death, Peter married a woman named Mary, and they had two daughters, Rebecca, and one whose name is unknown. Peter Brown had no sons.

The *Mayflower* expedition had been financed by the Merchant Adventurers, a company of “about seventy London merchants who viewed the colonization of America as both an investment opportunity” and a way to plant their religion in America. “The Adventurers put up most of the capital with the expectation that, once they were settled in America, the Pilgrims would quickly begin to generate considerable profit, primarily through cod fishing and the fur trade.” The debt was more than the colonists as a whole could bear, so in 1626 a number of individuals, among them Bradford, Winslow, Brewster, and Standish, “agreed to assume the colony’s debt with the understanding that they be given a monopoly in the fur trade,” writes Nathaniel Philbrick. Apparently in 1628 other colonists took on a portion of the debt; among them was Peter Brown.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

By the 1630s, some of the Plymouth citizens were pushing north of Plymouth to establish additional settlements including Duxbury and Marshfield. Sometime after April of 1632, the Peter Brown family moved to Duxbury, where he was listed as paying taxes in March of 1633. He was no longer alive by that October, when an inventory of his holdings was taken. His death may have been one of many that occurred in an epidemic of some sort of contagious disease that year. On November 11, 1633, the Court ordered that provision be made for his first two daughters, Mary, who was seven years old at the time, and Priscilla, who was five. Guardians were appointed for the two of them. The remainder of his estate went to his widow and her daughters, two-year-old Rebecca and her younger sister.

Submitted by Mrs. David Alonzo Rogers

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. David Alonzo Rogers (Laura Jane Poole); Mobile

SOURCES:

[www.answers.com/topic/
mayflower-compact](http://www.answers.com/topic/mayflower-compact).
Accessed March 2, 2007.

*Bradford's History of Plimouth
Plantation, 1620-1624*, by William
Bradford, published in New York by
McGraw Hill in 1981.

Mayflower, by Nathaniel Philbrick,
published in New York by Viking in
2006.

*Mayflower Families through Five
Generations, Volume 7*, compiled by
Robert Wakefield, published in
Plymouth, MA, by the General
Society of Mayflower Descendants,
1992.

*The Women Who Came in the
Mayflower*, by Annie Marble, published
in Boston by Pilgrim Press in 1920.

In Grateful Remembrance

THE REVEREND PETER BULKELEY

1582/83-1658/59

Peter Bulkeley was born January 31, 1582/83 at Odell in Bedfordshire County, England. He was the son of the Reverend Dr. Edward Bulkeley (1540-1620, Doctor of Divinity, St. John's College, Cambridge, 1578) and his wife Olive Irby. The Bulkeleys were descendants of Charlemagne, through Lady Isabel de Vermandois and the Charlton and Grosvenor families, and Peter was a four-great grandson of Sir Robert le Grosvenor, who was a party in the court of chivalry in 1385 to the most famous heraldic trial in history, *Scrope versus Grosvenor*, in which the Duke of Lancaster and the poet Chaucer testified as witnesses.

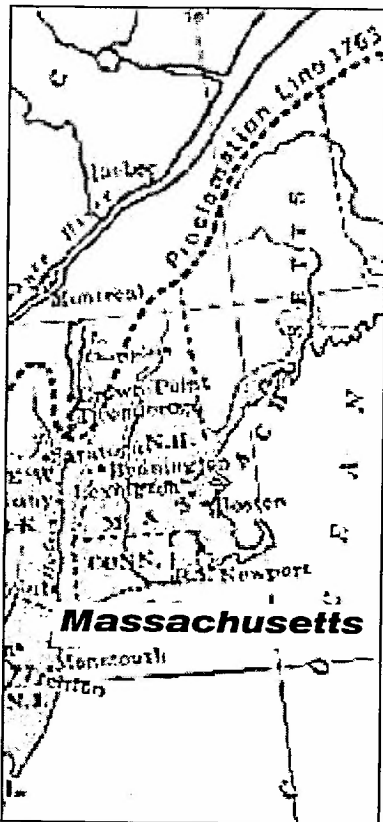
Upon receiving his A.B. (Bachelor of Arts) degree in 1605 and his A.M. (Master of Arts) in 1608 at St. John's College, Cambridge (at which he was a Fellow), Peter Bulkeley was ordained deacon and priest, in June of 1608. In 1609 succeeded his father as Anglican rector of All Saints in Odell. After 1633, along with other divines holding Puritan views, Bulkeley experienced harassment and suppression at the hands of Archbishop Laud, who was eventually to be impeached by parliament, convicted, and executed in 1645.

The Reverend Peter Bulkeley married for the second time to Grace Chetwode in April 1635 at Odell. (Nothing is known of his first wife.) That same year, he sold the substantial estate he had inherited from his father in Bedfordshire and, taking his new wife, emigrated to Boston aboard the ship *Susan and Ellen*. According to *The Descendants of Reverend Peter Bulkeley*, the voyage was not without event. The story is that during the crossing, Grace

"apparently died, and her husband, supposing land to be near and unwilling to consign the beloved form to a watery grave, urgently entreated the Captain that the body might be kept one day more, and yet another day, to which, as no signs of decay appeared, he consented. One the third day, symptoms of vitality were observed, and before land was reached, animation so long suspended was restored, and though carried from the ship an invalid, she recovered and lived to old age."

The Bulkeleys landed at Boston in midsummer, 1635, and their first child, Gershom, was born some months later. This was not a family name, but was chosen from the Bible to commemorate the fact that the child was born far from home, as England was still looked upon as home. Gershom means "exile." (Gershom would grow up to take his A.B. from Harvard College in 1655, become one of its earliest Fellows, and marry Sarah Chauncy on August 26, 1659. He earned his Doctorate of Divinity and, following in the footsteps of his father and grandfather, entered the ministry, ending up in Wethersfield, Connecticut, where he died on December 2, 1713.)

Peter Bulkeley became a principal founder of the town of Concord, Massachusetts, and, in 1636, the first minister of the Church of Christ in Concord, a position he held until his death in 1658/59). He is mentioned favorably at length in Cotton Mather's *Magnalia* as a prominent early leader of the Massachusetts Bay Colony and moderator at the synod of Cambridge on August 30, 1637, which resulted in the expulsion of Anne Hutchinson from the colony for heresy. (See Glossary: Anne Hutchinson.) She was charged by Dr. Bulkeley as being a "Jezabell whom the Devill sent over thither to poison these American Churces with her depths of Satan."



Biographies of Our Ancestors

The Reverend Dr. Peter Bulkeley was the author of a theological treatise published in London in 1646 under the title, *The Gospel Covenant Reopened*. Bulkeley's work has been described by the noted genealogist, Donald Jacobus, as the first important religious book to be written in New England, and one of the first books written in America to be printed. During his lifetime, Dr. Bulkeley was a generous benefactor of the Harvard College Library.

Submitted by Mrs. Jack Register Leigh

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Jack Register Leigh (Emily Armistead Wolfe); Tuscaloosa

SOURCES:

Americans of Royal Descent, Seventh Edition, by Charles Browning, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1969.

British Dictionary of National Biography: "Peter Bulkeley," published in London by Oxford University Press in association with the British Academy, in partnership with the National Portrait Gallery, in 2004.

The Bulkeley Family, compiled by F.W. Chapman, published in Hartford in 1875.

Bulkeley Genealogy, compiled by Donald Lines Jacobus, published in New Haven, CT, by Tuttle Moorehouse & Company in 1933.

Dormant and Extinct Peerages, "Bulkeley," by John Burke, published in London by Henry Colburn and Richard Bentley in 1883, reprinted in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1978.

History of New London, Connecticut, from the First Survey of the Coast in 1612 to 1860, by Frances Manwaring Caulkins, published in New London, CT, by H.D. Utley in 1895.

Magna Charta Barons, by Charles Browning, originally published in 1898, reprinted in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1969.

In Grateful Remembrance
LEONARD HENRY BULLOCK

1736-1797



Leonard Henry Bullock was born in 1736 in Granville County, North Carolina to Richard Bullock and Ann Henley Bullock. He married Fannie Hawkins on November 7, 1760. After the death of his first wife, he married Susannah Martin Goodloe on August 6, 1766. His children were Fannie, Susan, Lucy Martin, Nancy, Agnes, and Richard.

Leonard Henry was captain of Bullock's Horse of the North Carolina militia in the War Against the Regulators, September 1762. (The Regulators were rebels who took up arms against corrupt colonial officials.) He also served as sheriff of colonial Granville County, North Carolina.

Bullock was associated with his brother-in-law, Judge John Williams, and Honorable Richard Henderson in the Transylvania Enterprise, an attempt in 1774 by prominent North Carolinians to purchase Kentucky land from the Cherokees, who still had a claim to the region, and establish a British proprietary colony. In 1775, the Continental Congress denied the petition to make Transylvania a fourteenth colony because the colonies of Virginia and North Carolina also claimed a portion of the area. (See entry for Richard Henderson.)

Leonard Henry Bullock died in 1797 in Granville (now Vance) county, North Carolina.

Submitted by Mrs. Martin L. Beck

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Martin L. Beck (Virginia Bullock Hardenbergh); Auburn
 Mrs. Frederic Lee Smith (Virginia Inge Johnstone); Birmingham

SOURCES:

Colonial Granville County and Its People,
 by Ray S. Worth, published in
 Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing
 Company in 1973.

*Marriages of Granville County, North
 Carolina, 1753-1808*, published in
 Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing
 Company in 1981.

The State Records of North Carolina, by
 Walter Clark, published in Goldsboro,
 NC, by Nash Brothers Printing in
 1907.

ARMISTEAD BURWELL

1718-1754

The Burwell family is of ancient origin, springing from a region known as the Eastern Marshes, on the border of England and Scotland. Burwells were settled at Berwick on the Tweed as early as 1250, and the family is mentioned in old records of the counties of Northumberland, Devon, Essex, Sussex, Kent, and Suffolk. Robert Walpole, Earl of Oxford and premiere of England, was a Burwell descendant through the female line, as was Horatio, Lord Nelson.

Variations on the name include Borrall, Borel, Burwell and Burrell. It is the last form that is used in the records of the reign of Richard III (1483-85). Burwell is the form used in the earliest mention of the family in America: Edward Burwell was one of the grantees under the Charter of 1607 from James I, and the names Minion Burwell and William Burrell are listed as adventurers for Virginia.

The ancestor of the family in Virginia was Major Lewis Burwell, who settled about 1640 on Carter's Creek in Gloucester County, and died at the age of thirty-three in 1658, leaving one son, also named Lewis. Lewis Burwell II married Abigail Smith, and they had three sons: James, Lewis III, and Nathaniel. By 1740, the three brothers owned all the land between James River and York River, from King's Creek to Queen's Creek on the York and from Skiff's Creek to Archer's Hope Creek on the James. James lived at *King's Creek* on the James River; Lewis II lived at *Kingsmill*, outside Williamsburg, on the James River; and Nathaniel lived at *Martin's Hundred*, an estate he gained upon his marriage to Elizabeth Carter, daughter of Robert (King) Carter. There is a stone on the side of the road going to King's Creek neck marking the corner the convergence of the lands of the three sons; on the stones sides are engraved the initials J.B., L.B., N.B.

Because records show that Armistead Burwell was born at *Kingsmill*, in 1718, it may be assumed that he was the son of Lewis Burwell III. The name of his mother is not known. Armistead married Christian Blair in 1744; she was the daughter of the president of the Virginia Council, John Blair, and his wife, Mary. Armistead and Christian had two sons.

Armistead made his living through farming, and he also served on the vestry in the Bruton parish church. He was elected burgess for Williamsburg in the Assembly for the 1752-55 term, but died in 1754 and was succeeded in office by George Wythe.

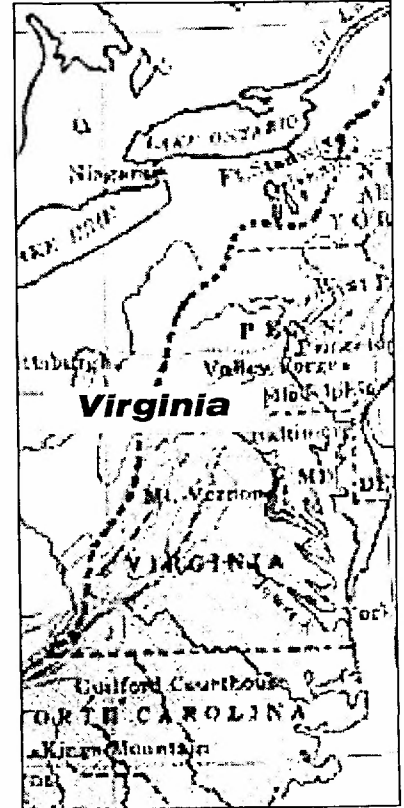
Armistead Burwell's eldest son, Lewis IV, born September 26, 1745, lived as an adult in *Stoneland* in Mecklenburg County, Virginia. His first marriage was to Anne Spotswood, daughter of Colonel John and Mary Dandridge Spotswood. Lewis and Anne had twelve children. Their third child, Anne, married John Starke Ravenscroft (called "Mad Jack"), who became the first Episcopal bishop of North Carolina.

Alabama families with connections to the Burwells are the Armisteads, the Cabells, the Bryans, the Carters, the Spotswoods, and the Whitfields.

Submitted by Mrs. Taylor Dowe Littleton

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Taylor Dowe Littleton (Mary Lucy Williams); Auburn



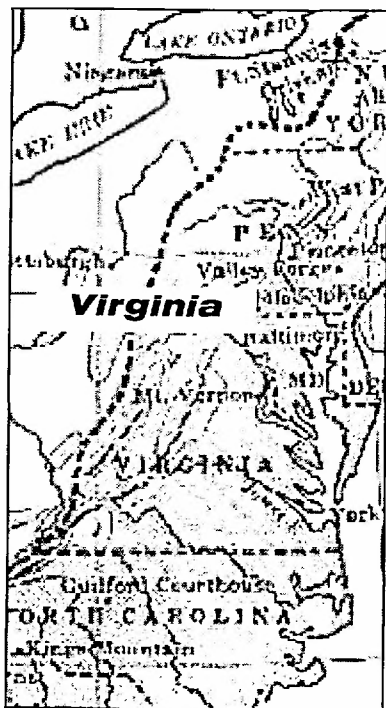
SOURCES:

The Ancestry of Benjamin Harrison, by Charles Keith, published in Philadelphia by an unknown publisher in 1893.

Record of the Burwell Family, originally published, date unknown; reissued in Richmond, VA in 1908.

In Grateful Remembrance
RICHARD CALLAWAY

1717/22-1780



SOURCES:

Callaway Families of Virginia, by Mrs. A.E. Hart, published privately in Los Angeles, CA, in 1928.

Madison County: 200 Years in Retrospect, by William Ellis, H.E.

Everman, and Richard Sears, published in Richmond, KY, by Madison County Historical Society in 1985.

Our Kin: Genealogies of Early Bedford County Families, by Mary D. Ackerly and Lula Parker, published in Harrisonburg, VA, by C.J. Carrier Company in 1981.

Richard Callaway of Virginia and Kentucky, by Mrs. A. E. Hart, located in the DAR Library, Washington, DC, published in 1934.

Richard Callaway (spelled Calloway in some records) was born in Caroline County, Virginia. Some sources give his birth date as 1722, but it is listed as June 1717 in the transcription of his Bible record. In 1745, he married Frances Walton, of New Kent County, Virginia, who bore him twelve children. He served in the French and Indian War (1755-1764), rising to the rank of major. A year after the death of his first wife, in 1766, he married a widow, Elizabeth Jones Hoy, by whom he had three more children. In 1775 he, with his wife and the younger children of both marriages, followed Daniel Boone to Kentucky, where he helped to establish Boonesborough in connection with Richard Henderson's Transylvania Company. (See Glossary: Transylvania Company.)

The settlers of the Transylvania Company often had trouble with the local Indians, who believed the newcomers had no right to ownership of the land in Kentucky. In July, 1776, Richard's daughters, Betsy, about fifteen years old and Frances, about thirteen, together with their friend, Jemima Boone, were captured by a group of Indians while canoeing near the fort. As the Indians fled with them, the girls attempted to leave a trail of torn bits of petticoats, and to slow the progress of the party through the woods. A rescue party left Fort Boonesborough, one group headed by Daniel Boone, the other by Richard Callaway, now a colonel in the militia. Boone's group caught up with the Indians when they made camp the third day. Their shots killed two of the Indians and the remainder fled. The rescuers returned with the unharmed girls to Boonesborough. Several years later, Frances married one of the rescue party, Captain John Holder. The name Frances has appeared consistently in every generation since then.

In 1780, while serving as a colonel in the Kentucky militia during the American Revolution, Richard Callaway was killed and scalped by Indians friendly to the British. The war party returned to their camp, where several other settlers were held captive. Seeing the scalp with its flowing silver locks, one of the captives exclaimed, "They must have gotten Colonel Callaway!"

Submitted by Mrs. Thad Gladden Long

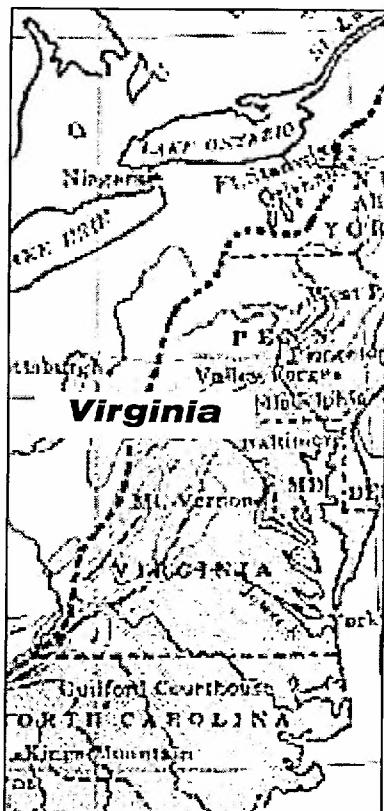
DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Thad Gladden Long (Carolyn Frances Wilson); Birmingham

1640-1706

In Grateful Remembrance **CHRISTOPHER CALTHROPE**

c.1606-c.1662*



SOURCES:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-24/5), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.

William and Mary Historical Quarterly Magazine, Volume II, by Lyon Tyler.

Born the third son of Christopher Calthrope, Esquire, of Blakeney, Norfolk County, England, and his wife Maude Thurton Calthrope around 1606, Christopher Calthrope at age sixteen came to Virginia with Lieutenant Thomas Purifoy in the ship *Furtherance*. Being young, he set about enjoying himself, apparently to the concern of family friends. On March 28, 1623/4, George Sandys worried to James Wrote, in a letter dated from James Citties (Jamestown):

I used Mr. Calthrope at his landing with all courtesie I could and brought him acquainted with the Governour. I proffered him the entertainment of my house and my own Chamber to lodge in wch he refused of my almost dailie attendance at the Council...

I have given him from time to time the best Councell I am able: at the first he kept company too much with his Inferiours who hung upon him while his good liquor lasted. After, he consorted with Captaine Whitacres (at Hampton), yet wheresoever he bee, hee shall not bee without the reach of my care nor want for anie thing that I or my credit can procure him.

Despite this somewhat unpromising beginning, Christopher Calthrope settled down and became a prominent resident of Elizabeth City, York County. He named his plantation in Virginia *Thropland*, after his family estate in England. He was a member of the House of Burgesses for York in 1644, 46, 52, 53, and 60, and from Elizabeth City in 1645.

The first reference to the city of Pocoson was in the colonial records of a land grant to Christopher Calthrope in 1631. The church building of New Pocoson parish, later Charles parish, dating to 1635, sat on the Calthrope tract, and the foundation of the site of an early church is preserved. When Christopher Calthorpe's son died in 1688, his will granted "200 foot of land square to the Parish of new Pocoson for the use of the church where it now stands."

Records show that Christopher Calthrope married a woman named Anne, born in England in 1609, who was perhaps a widow. They had four children: James, who became a justice in York County, who married twice—first to Elizabeth, then to Mary—and died on August 3, 1688 in York County, Virginia; Barbara, who married Henry Freeman of New Pocoson and was buried on July 26, 1680; Ann, buried in April of 1685; and Elinor, who married Thomas Ragg (Wragg).

Christopher Calthrope died sometime before his will was probated on April 24, 1662, and his wife Anne died five-and-one-half years later, on December 9, 1667.

*NSCDA *Register of Ancestors* lists 1661.

Submitted by Mrs. Sumner Toulmin Greer

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Ansley Giddens Green (Zelma Ansley Giddens); Mobile
Mrs. Sumner Toulmin Greer (Therese Elaine Giddens); Mobile

FARQUHAR CAMPBELL

c.1721-1808

Farquhar Campbell was born about 1721 in Scotland, probably in Argleshire or Kintyre. He was one of the Scottish Highlanders who settled in America in 1740.

He was married three times. His first wife was Isabella McAllister (daughter of Coll McAllister and Janet McNeil), with whom he had five daughters before her death in 1780. Two years later, Farquhar married Elizabeth Whitfield Smith on March 25. She gave him four sons before dying in Cumberland County, North Carolina. Farquhar's third wife, Rachel, bore him no children and survived him.

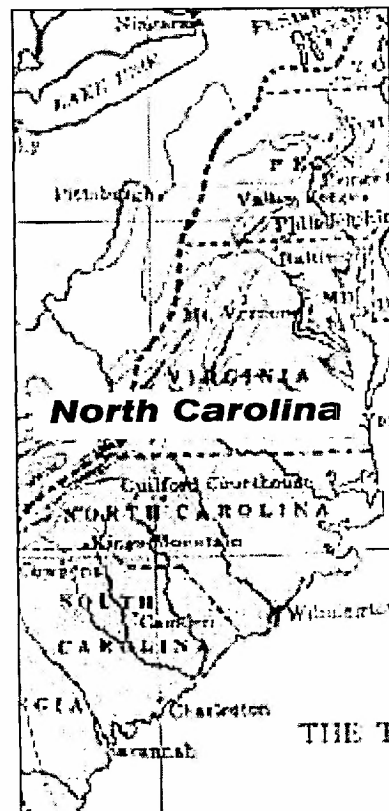
Early records of the American Revolution contain several mentions of Farquhar Campbell's name. He served as a representative of Cumberland County in the legislature assembled in Wilmington in 1764, 1769, 1770, and 1775. He was a charter member of The Sons of Liberty in North Carolina when the chapter was formed in the fall of 1765. He also served on the Cumberland County committee of safety in 1775.

Described as a gentleman of wealth, education, and influence, Farquhar Campbell died in Cumberland County in 1808.

Submitted by Mrs. Brockway Jackson Jones

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Brockway Jackson Jones (Sarah Anne Killingsworth); Tuscaloosa



SOURCES:

The Story of Fayetteville and the Upper Cape Fear, Second Edition, by John A. Oates, published in Fayetteville, NC, by the Fayetteville Woman's Club in 1972.

William and Mary Armstrong, 1784-1987: Their Ancestors and Descendants, by Jimmi Anderson Carruth, privately published in San Angelo, Texas in 1987.

In Grateful Remembrance
JOHN CARRUTHERS

1700-1751

John Carruthers was born in England in 1700 and, according to passenger records, came to America in 1710. Records of his parents are not found, but he was obviously a young child if this recording is correct. He was a resident of Craven County, North Carolina, where he served as a burgess in the General Assembly from 1746 through 1751.

Married to Content (last name unknown) about 1720, the Carruthers union produced six children. He owned lands in New Bern, North Carolina, which are evidenced in his will. Also named in his will are his wife and the children, detailing their inheritance at his death.

Because records are scarce, a man's will is a tool by which to identify both his heirs and his property. In John Carruthers' will he leaves "all lands and lots in New Bern" to his widow, Content. He also leaves her all of his slaves to be sold, with the proceeds going to his sons (hopefully, after her death). He leaves personal items to his children. To his eldest, John, he leaves a riding saddle and bridle, and assorted decorative shoe and knee buckles. Joseph was to receive six large silver spoons; William four large silver spoons and a set of silver tea tongs and a tea strainer.

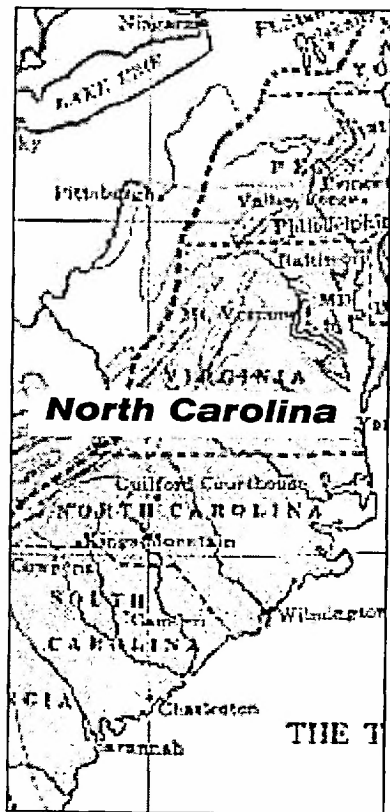
The three daughters were also designated an inheritance. Sarah (married name Rice) received gold buttons; Rocksolanah (Witherington) was to get one lot in New Bern; and Frances (Hodges) would receive his cattle and one slave.

John Carruthers died in 1751 and his will, which was signed on September 20, 1751, was probated in February of 1752.

Submitted by Mrs. Frank Hardy Bromberg, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Frank Hardy Bromberg, Jr. (Lella Hudson Clayton); Birmingham



SOURCES:

Abstracts of North Carolina Wills, by
Grimes (Will also found on
Ancestry.com at the Alabama
Department of Archives and History).
Colonial Records of North Carolina,
Volume IV.

ROBERT (KING) CARTER

1663*-1732

Robert "King" Carter had fewer wives but more children than his father, Colonel John Carter, who came to the Virginia colony from England in 1635. John Carter, patriarch of the illustrious Carter dynasty, married five times and had six children. In 1663, John's fourth wife, Sarah Ludlow Carter, gave birth to Robert, John's fifth son. Although John died in 1669 when Robert was only five years old, he left wise and careful directives for Robert's education and inheritance. Young Robert's upbringing became the responsibility of his half-brother, John II, who hired a tutor to school Robert in both English and Latin, then sent him to London to receive a classical education and to prepare him for the "uses of his estate." When he returned to Virginia, Robert continued his education through self-directed reading from his guardian's extensive library.

Robert married twice, first in 1688 to Judith Armistead (1655-1699) and in 1701 to Betty Landon Willis (1684-1719). The two wives gave him fifteen children, who, with their descendants, made their places in the history of the young colonies and later in the new nation as a myriad of elected officials (including six governors of Virginia), three signers of the Declaration of Independence, a chief justice of the Supreme Court, and two presidents of the United States. Robert himself became one of the largest landowners and most powerful men of his day. Some accounts attribute the soubriquet "King" to Carter's sphere of influence and use of his power in both business and politics; others deem it a derisive term referring to his success at extensive land acquisition. Whether used to compliment or disparage, the nickname is found in most references to Robert Carter of *Corotoman*.

Corotoman was the estate on the Rappahannock settled and developed by John Carter I in the 1650s, willed to John Carter II, and then, at his death in 1690, to his half-brother Robert. It became the centerpiece of Robert's 300,000 acre estate that contained forty-eight plantations. It was from here that Robert "King" Carter directed his agricultural and shipping operations and at various times served as Virginia agent for Lord Fairfax's Northern Neck Proprietary, representative from Lancaster County in the House of Burgesses, treasurer of Virginia, colonel and commander-in-chief of militia in Lancaster and Northumberland Counties, president of council and Acting Governor of Virginia, and life-long warden of Christ Church. All the while, following the model of his own father, he worked to acquire land, favors, and positions for his sons. One source notes that "No other Virginian of his generation was so successful in his political career, in the marriages made by his children, and so ruthless in building his estate for the benefit of those children."

Robert, from his early education in England, was thoroughly grounded in the Christian religion and remained an active member of the Church of England throughout his life. At his own expense, in 1730 he built a new brick church for Christ Church Parish of Lancaster County. Robert "King" Carter and many members of his family are buried in Christ Church Yard.

*NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1662.

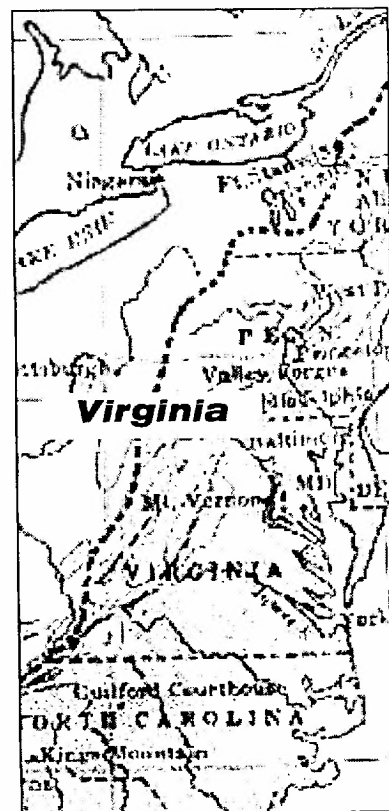
Submitted by Mrs. Louise McFaddin Gould

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Louise McFaddin Gould (Louise LeVert McFaddin); Selma

Mrs. Ralph Nicolson Hobbs (Frances Grace Gould); Selma

Miss Frances Elizabeth Turner; Selma



SOURCES:

Adventurers, Cavaliers, Patriots: Ancestors Remembered, by The National Society of the Colonial Dames of America in the state of Maryland, published in 1994. Specifically, "Robert 'King' Carter of Virginia," by Mrs. Richard Gordon Garrett.

Some Colonial Mansions, by Thomas Glenn, published in Philadelphia by Henry T. Coats in 1897.

In Grateful Remembrance

MILES CARY

c.1620-1667

The spelling of this surname has changed through the generations from Kari, Karry, and Carye to Cary. The first "Cary" on record was Lord Adam DeKarry, 1208, in Somerset, England. The spelling changed from DeKarry to Cary or Carey about 1300.

Miles Cary left Bristol, England for Virginia in 1645. He was not the first Cary to arrive in the New World: his uncle, James Cary, had immigrated from Bristol to Charlestown, Massachusetts, in 1639. Descended from a long line of sea captains, merchants, and clergy, Cary immigrants continued those traditions in America. Miles started out as a young merchant in Warwick County, Virginia, living with and working for Captain Thomas Taylor. Within his first year in America, 1645, Miles had married Captain Taylor's daughter, Anne. They would have seven children: Thomas, Anne, Henry, Bridget, Elizabeth, Miles Jr., and William.

By 1652, Miles Cary was a judge in Warwick County court and living on a plantation called *Magpie Swamp*, which may have originally belonged to his father-in-law, as did another Cary estate, *Windmill Point*. To these, Miles Cary added *The Forest*, and *Skiffs Creek* to eventually total more than 2,600 acres. He had numerous slaves, a mill, and a store.

Miles Cary's military ranks included major in 1654, lieutenant colonel in 1657, colonel and county lieutenant in 1660. He also held the positions of collector of tobacco duties for James River, escheator general for the colony, (See Glossary: Escheator) member of the Publique Committee of the Assembly, and member of the Council of Burgess from 1660 through 1665.

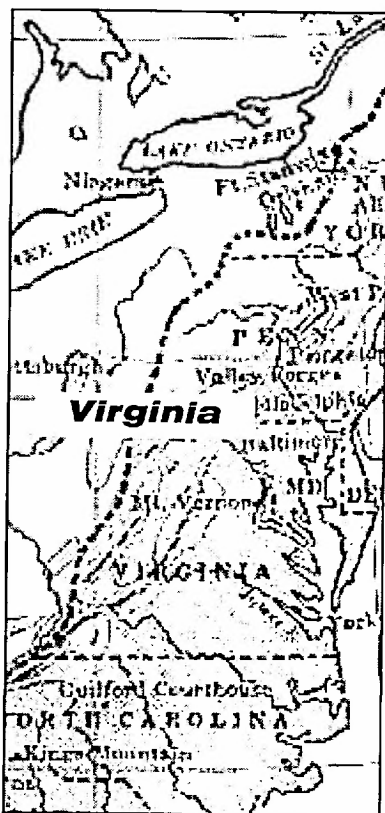
Lieutenant Colonel Miles Cary was commander of Old Point Comfort and was killed there in a battle against the Dutch on June 10, 1667. He is buried on a high bluff over the mouth of the Potash Creek, looking down on the Warwick River in a grave said to be the oldest in Newport News, Virginia. The tombstone, now in fragments, reads,

Here lyeth ye body of Miles Cary, Esq.
Only son of John Cary and Alice his wife,
Daughter of Henry Hobson of ye city of Bristol.

Alderman, he was born in ye city and departed this life the 10th day of June, 1667. About the 47th year of his age, leaving four sons and three daughters [viz] Thomas, Ann, Henry, Bridget, Elizabeth, Miles and William.

In a developed area of Newport News lie the archaeological remains of *Richneck*, which was probably built during the late seventeenth century for Miles Cary, Jr. He, then his descendants, lived in it until it burned it 1865. A family member saw the ruins three years later and noted that "the mansion was a pile of ruins, though from the remains of the walls still standing, I could estimate its former extent. It was a long-fronted, two-storied brick building with the usual outhouses and must have been very commodious." *Richneck* had a cruciform plan and probably resembled other substantial late seventeenth century and early eighteenth century homes in the details of its elevation.

Miles Cary, Jr. held several positions in the government of colonial Virginia, including the rectorship of the College of William and Mary. Cary's grandson, Wilson Miles Cary, was among the patriots that met at Williamsburg's Raleigh Tavern to sign the "Association of 1774," one of the first acts of the First Continental Congress.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Bridget Cary, Miles Jr.'s sister, married Captain William Bassett in 1670. Their great-granddaughter, Elizabeth Bassett, married Benjamin Harrison. Benjamin was a signer of the Declaration of Independence. Elizabeth and Benjamin's son, William Henry Harrison, was the ninth President of the United States.

Henry Cary, son of Miles Cary, Sr. and brother to Bridget and Miles Jr., was appointed to superintend the building of the Capitol at Williamsburg when the seat of government was removed from Jamestown. He later supervised the rebuilding of the College of William and Mary, which had burned.

Miles Cary, Jr. and his wife, Mary Milner Cary, are buried in the family graveyard, which is now part of the grounds of McIntosh Elementary School in Newport News, Virginia. The remains of the plantation were discovered during the construction of this school, and the excavation became an instructional project for high school students.

Submitted by Mrs. Jerald William McCoy and Mrs. William Inge Eskridge

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Joseph Frank Bear (Margaret Garrison Morton); Montgomery
Mrs. Stephen E. Brown (Kate Minor Eustis); Birmingham
Mrs. William Inge Eskridge (Josephine Pratt Haas); Montgomery
Mrs. Henry Paul Haas (Dora Pratt Smith); Montgomery
Mrs. William Lyle Hinds Jr. (Cary Gates Thomas); Birmingham
Mrs. Jerald William McCoy (Eugenia Lockett Elebash); Huntsville
Mrs. Tabor Robert Novak, Jr. (Caroline Louise Bear); Montgomery

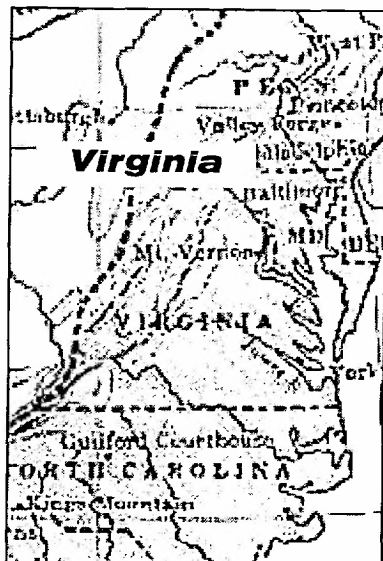
SOURCES:

Cary-Estes Genealogy, by Mary Folk Webb, published in Rutland, VT, by Tuttle in 1939.

The Virginia Careys—An Essay in Genealogy, privately published by DeVinne Press in 1919. (No author named.)

In Grateful Remembrance **BENJAMIN CAVE**

1684-1762



SOURCES:

Baptists on the American Frontier, edited by Chester Raymond Young, published in Macon, GA, by Mercer University Press in 1995. Originally: *A History of Ten Baptist Churches of Which the Author Has Been Alternately a Member* by John Taylor, published in 1820.

The Complete Book of Emigrants 1700-1750, by Peter Wilson Coldham, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1992.

History of St. Mark's Parish, Culpepper County, Virginia, by Phillip Slaughter, published in Baltimore by Innes and Company in 1877.

Virginia Colonial Militia, by William Armstrong Crozier, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1982.

Benjamin Cave was born in Windsor, County Berkshire, England, and immigrated to Virginia some time before 1725/27, because it was around that time that he married Hannah Bledsoe in Spotsylvania. Hannah was the daughter of William, the first sheriff of Spotsylvania County, Virginia, and Anne (or Elizabeth) Bledsoe. The Caves lived in Orange County where Benjamin represented the county as a Burgess from 1752-1761. He also served as a justice of the peace and, like his father-in-law, as a sheriff. On February 2, 1730, he took an oath as Lieutenant Benjamin Cave in the Virginia militia and is later referred to as Captain.

An ardent Anglican, Benjamin served on the first vestry of St. Mark's Parish in Culpepper, Virginia, in 1731 and continued serving until 1740. It is said that he could recite the whole liturgy from memory and had a penchant for chanting the psalms. His has been called "one of the leading Episcopal families who adhered to the faith of their fathers." Many of his descendants were, however, to become involved in the Baptist movement. His grandson-in-law, John Taylor, was a Baptist preacher who organized and served several churches on the pioneer frontier of Virginia.

Benjamin Cave named nine children in his will: William, John, Benjamin, David, Richard, Elizabeth Johnson, Ann Cavender (Canenaugh or Kavenaugh), Sarah, and Hannah. He left all his houses and the home plantation to his wife, Hannah, for her lifetime, with the property to go to William at her death; he gave assorted acreage to the other boys. Twenty-one slaves are distributed by name to Hannah and the eight children, along with assorted personal property.

Benjamin Cave died in August of 1762 and is buried the Pine Starke Church cemetery in Montebello, Orange County, Virginia. Hannah died after 1770.

Submitted by Mrs. Charles Mixson Miller

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Dilday Abernathy (Louise Morrissett McKinley); Birmingham

Miss Sarah McKinley Cooper; Birmingham

Miss Eleanor Estelle Kidd; Birmingham

Mrs. Charles Mixson Miller (Elizabeth Cade Palmer); Birmingham

Miss Georgia Mixson Miller; Birmingham

Mrs. Walter Alexander Parrent (Sue Clarkson Privett); Opelika

Mrs. Robert Michael Rowan (Leila Anne Kidd); Huntsville

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JAMES CHAPPELL

1694-1769

James Chappell, the youngest of the four sons of Thomas Chappell and Elizabeth Jones, became the wealthiest and most prominent of the brothers and outlived them all by many years. He was born in 1694 in the part of Charles City County, Virginia, that in 1702 became Prince George County. James was named for his maternal grandfather, James Jones, of Prince George County, who was a man of wealth, according to his 1719 will.

His paternal ancestor was Thomas Chappell, the immigrant, who came to Virginia in 1635 on the ship *America* at the young age of twenty-three. Landing at Jamestown, Thomas remained there only a few days. Proceeding up the river about thirty miles, he located on the south side in Charles City County, opposite Westover, at the mouth of a creek named for him, "Chappell's Creek."

The first public record of James Chappell is found in Prince George County:

"I, James Chappell, do hereby acknowledge to have received of James Jones all the part of my deceased father, Thomas Chappell's Estate, both real and personal, left by his will, that was due and belonging unto me, and was put in the hands of the said James Jones, and I do hereby acquit, release and discharge the said James Jones and his heirs forever from every part and parcel of the same. Witness my hand and seal this tenth Day of May, A.D. 1715."

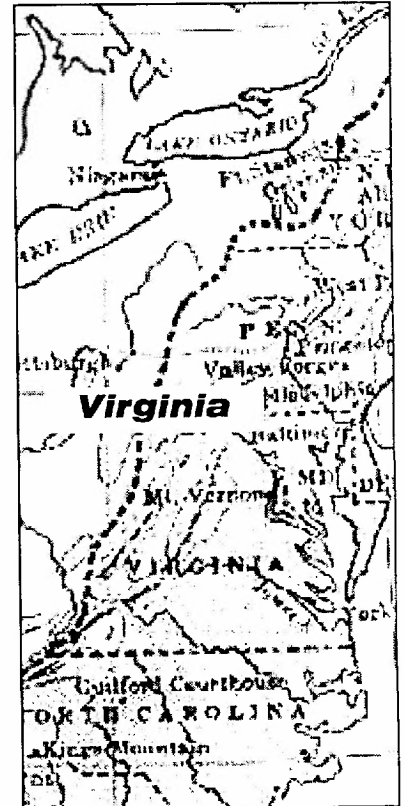
Soon after becoming of age, James moved to Surry County accompanied by his oldest brother, Samuel. In 1725, he patented 235 acres of land in Surry County. Records reflect that he later patented additional large tracts of land in Surry and Sussex counties. In these patents, the grantee is called "James Chappell, Gentleman," a title of distinction at that day in the colony; it denoted that the recipient was a man of prominence in the community in which he lived. As such, James served as acting justice and on the Commission of the Peace in Surry County.

James Chappell was married twice, coincidentally, to two women named Elizabeth. The first was Elizabeth Howell, daughter of Thomas Howell, whom he married in Surry County sometime between 1720 and 1730. She died on September 20, 1744. His second wife, whose maiden name is unknown, died in Sussex County, July 11, 1762. James was the father of four sons (James, Thomas, Howell and John) and six daughters (Elizabeth, Mary, Sarah, Rebeckah, Amy and Lucretia) who are mentioned by name in his will dated October 31, 1768. Besides the children mentioned in his will there were three who were then dead: Henry, William and a daughter whose name has been lost. James was seventy-five years old when he died in Sussex on February 12, 1769, leaving a large estate in land and slaves. His will was proved March 16, 1769.

Submitted by: Mrs. Leonard Preuit Mauldin

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Leonard Preuit Mauldin (Rebecca Ruth Ingram); Florence



SOURCES:

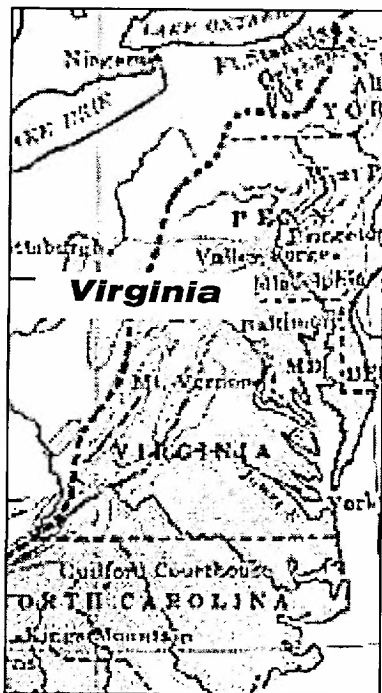
A Genealogy of the Chappell, Dickie and Other Kindred Families of Virginia, 1635-1900, by Phil E. Chappell, published in Kansas City, MO, by Hudson-Kimberly Publishing Company in 1900.

Land Office Records, Volume XII, Richmond, Virginia.

William and Mary Quarterly Historical Magazine, Volume XVI (2).

In Grateful Remembrance **LARKIN CHEW**

1675-1729



SOURCES:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-1624/5), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Dietz Press, in 2007.

History of Fredericksburg, Virginia by Alvin T. Embry and published in Richmond, VA, by Old Dominion Press in 1937.

Holy Things and Profane: Anglican Parish Churches in Colonial Virginia by Dell Upton, published in New Haven, CT, by Yale University Press in 1997.

The Rappahannock Gazette, Newsletter of the Rappahannock

Colonial Heritage Society, Volume I, Number 6, by Trip Wiggins, published in Fredericksburg, VA, in 2003.

Larkin Chew, one of four male siblings, was born in 1675 in Annapolis, Maryland, to Joseph Chew and Ruth Larkin. Larkin's grandfather, John Chew, had lived in Sommersetshire, England and came to Virginia between 1618 and 1622, moving to Maryland after the Second Indian Uprising. Larkin reversed John's steps and moved from Maryland to Spotsylvania, Virginia. There he married Hannah Roy of what is now Caroline County, Virginia.

The marriage produced at least six children: Joseph, who died in infancy, Thomas, Ann, John, Larkin, and Mary. Thomas married Martha Taylor, the sister of President Madison's grandmother and great-grand-aunt of President Taylor. At least four of the children married persons from Spotsylvania.

Larkin lived in Spotsylvania until his death. His ancestors had been jurists and merchants and he was a justice of that county in 1722, sheriff in 1727 and 1728 and a member of the House of Burgesses from 1723-1726. Records exist which detail his petitions for clearing of roads, his buying and selling land, and the construction of at least one bridge that he arranged to have built in Spotsylvania.

In his long career, Larkin Chew built many important public buildings, including the King and Queen County Court House of 1700 (King and Queen County was the earlier name for Spotsylvania); the Essex County Court House of 1702; and an addition to the Petsworth Parish Church in 1707. An ardent Anglican, Chew offered his home for services until his construction of the Mattaponi Church of St. George's in 1725, which was built on land purchased from Chew.

Larkin Chew achieved high social and material success in his long life and is memorialized through the beautiful structures that he created; his service as burgess and county justice marks him as one of the leaders of his day. He died in 1729 and is buried at St. George's Episcopal Burial Ground in Fredericksburg, Virginia.

Submitted by Mrs. Arthur Moody Mazyck

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Arthur Moody Mazyck (Elizabeth Maxwell); Montgomery

WALTER CHILES I

1600-1653

Walter Chiles I, gentleman and merchant, was born in England and came to America on the ship, *The Blessing*, in late 1636 or 38, bringing with him his wife, Elizabeth, and two sons, Walter II and William. Four other persons accompanied the Chiles: Henry Fulton, John Covey, John Shaw, and Sarah Cole.

On March 1, 1638, Chiles was granted four hundred acres of land in Charles City County, Virginia, near the falls of the Appomattox River: "50 acres being due to him for his own personal adventure; 50 acres for his wife, Elizabeth; 50 acres for his son, William; 50 acres for his son, Walter; and 200 acres for the transportation" to the colony of four other persons. A second grant was made to him of 250 acres, due "for his own personal adventure" and the transportation of four persons on May 2, 1638/39.

Walter Chiles represented Charles City County, Virginia, in the House of Burgesses in 1642 and 1643. He owned a house in James Towne and, by 1645, he had moved to represent James City County as a burgess and served in 1645, 1646, 1649 and in 1653, when he was elected speaker of the assembly, but did not serve, because of a conflict of interest concerning his ownership of the ship, *Leopoldus*, which he had purchased after it had been confiscated for violation of the navigation laws. It and another ship, *Fame of Virginia*, were vital to his business of trade with Holland, England, and Brazil.

At the 1642-43 session of the House of Burgesses, Chiles was appointed, along with Walter Austin, Rice Hooe, Joseph Johnson and "such others as they shall think fit to join them" to undertake the discovery of a "new river or unknown land, bearing west and southerly from the Appomattox River." They were also given the privilege of trading with the Indians for fourteen years.

Walter Chiles had a distinguished career in service to the colony of Virginia as a planter, merchant, and vestryman of James City Parish and as a member of the House of Burgesses. He is referred to as "Lieutenant Colonel Walter Childs" in some sources, indicating the rank he attained in the militia. He died in 1653, leaving his estate to his eldest son and heir, his wife Elizabeth having apparently preceded him in death.

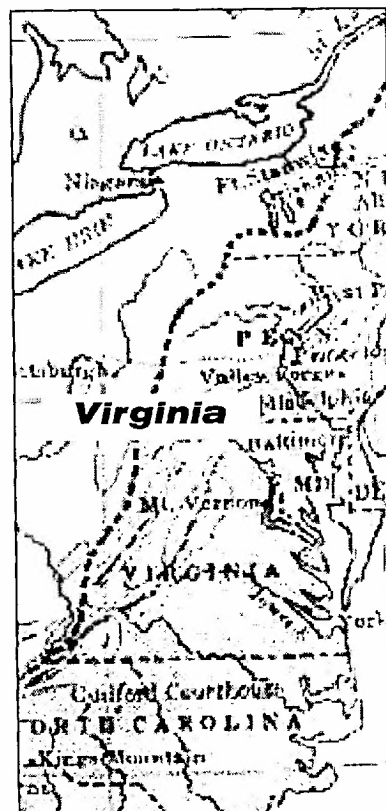
Walter Chiles II married Mary Page, daughter of Colonel John Page. They had a son, John, and a daughter, Elizabeth. Elizabeth married Henry Tyler, who was an ancestor of President John Tyler.

William Chiles, the second son of Walter and Elizabeth, is never mentioned again in any record after coming to America. It is thought he either returned to England or died shortly after coming to America.

Submitted by Mrs. Arthur Philip Cook, Jr. and Mrs. James Joseph Ryan

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Arthur Philip Cook Jr. (Deane Kinney Poellnitz); Birmingham
Mrs. David Shield Hassinger (Augusta Cobbs Poellnitz); Birmingham
Mrs. Richard Hooker Poellnitz (Betty Morgan Kinney); Greensboro
Mrs. James Joseph Ryan (Caroline Crenshaw Poole); Greenville



SOURCES:

"Lieut. Col. Walter Chiles," by Lyon G. Tyler, published in *The William and Mary Quarterly*, Volume 1, No. 2. (October 1892)

Tidewater Virginia Families: Generations Beyond, by Virginia Lee Hutcheson Davis of Baltimore, published by in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1998.

Tidewater Virginia Families: A Magazine of History and Genealogy, Volume 1, by Virginia Lee Hutcheson Davis, published in Williamsburg, VA, by Littleton Quarter.

In Grateful Remembrance
WILLIAM CLAIBORNE

1600-c. 1677

William Claiborne was baptized on August 10, 1600, in the parish of Crayford, Kent County, England. As a second son he, in the custom of the time, could expect very little from his father, as the bulk of the family inheritance would go to his elder brother. From an early age, he knew that any fortune he might enjoy would come from his own enterprise. He, however, never forgot the family motto, which was "FORWARD;" and of such firm commitment and background was William Claiborne, younger son. Claiborne descendants treasure this heritage to this day.

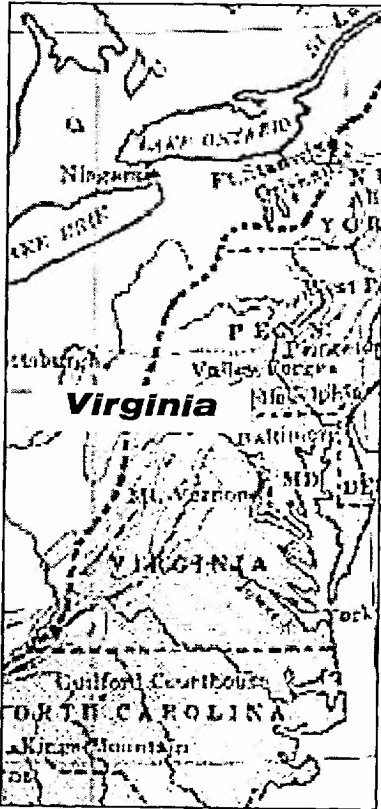
After studying at Pembroke College, at Cambridge, England, he was appointed a royal surveyor for the Virginia Company by King James I, and traveled with Sir Francis Wyatt in October 1621 to Jamestown on the ship *George*. The wording of his appointment is as follows:

The Comitte appointed by the Preparative Courte to treat with Mr. Cleyborne (Commended and proposed for the Surveyor's place) having mett the next day and taking into their consideration the allowances that a former Comitte had thought fit to State that Office withall in respect for the service hee was to per forme as well in generall as particular Surveys did agree for his Salary to allow him Thirty pounds per annum to be paid in two hundred waight of Tobacco or any other valuable Comoditie growing in that Country and that hee shall have a conveyent howse provided at the CompanyS charge and twenty pounds in hand to furnish him with Instruments and books fitting for his Office which hee is to leave to his Successor....

William Claiborne's salary of thirty pounds sterling per year included a grant of two hundred acres of land, plus the fees he would be paid by those needing surveys. Foremost in his mind was the encouragement of settlers to the New World, and with his connections at Court, he was able to survey land in an orderly manner with lots for sale to encourage colonists.

He laid out the area known as New Towne on Jamestown Island, and quickly became one of the most successful of the early English colonists. By 1626 his own holdings included the two hundred acres assigned to him as surveyor, plus two hundred fifty acres at Archer's Hope in James City, five hundred acres at Blount Point in Warwick, and one hundred fifty acres at Elizabeth City, for a total of 1,100 acres.

Claiborne was appointed Governor Wyatt's military aide in retaliatory raids to quell the Indian attacks after the Indian Massacre of 1622. He led subsequent battles to restore order, and was awarded five thousand acres in Northumberland County for this service. It is reported that he, with sixty colonists, defeated eight hundred bowmen in battle. He later was awarded another sixteen hundred acres of marsh and sunken land in the area that would become King William County.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

On March 30, 1623 Claiborne was named as Member of Council, a position he would hold until 1660. He was appointed by Virginia's governor, Sir George Yeardley, as secretary of state, a post second only to governor in political influence, for the periods of 1623-1635 and 1652-1660. He was treasurer of the colony from 1642 to 1660. In 1640, he was in charge of the colony's seal. In 1653, Claiborne was appointed acting deputy governor of Virginia.

In his position as surveyor of rivers and creeks, Claiborne discovered the land that he named Kent Island after his homeland of Kent County, England, in the Chesapeake Bay at the convergence of the Potomac and Susquehanna Rivers. He purchased the land from the Indians for twelve pounds sterling, planning to establish a trading settlement there that would become the center of a vast mercantile empire along the Atlantic coast. His plan was for the settlers to have individual ownership of land with private property rights for colonists. In 1631, he traveled to England to obtain a royal trading commission that gave him the right to trade with the natives on all lands not already licensed by someone else; and there he acquired a number of investors. He recruited indentured servants to populate the trading settlement, and soon the settlers had established a small plantation, named *Crayford* for Claiborne's childhood home in England, and there was a clergyman for the island. The potential for Claiborne to prosper was great, as he was trading beads and hatchets for furs that brought high prices in England and for corn that found a brisk local market. At the same time, Claiborne sought not to exploit, but to convert the native people to Christianity while establishing a trade colony to benefit all.

However, and despite Claiborne's vigorous efforts to prevent it, King Charles I granted to George Calvert, Lord Baltimore, the land on both sides of the Chesapeake in which to establish a proprietary colony. Despite various appeals to the Virginia governor, and to the Privy Council of London, in 1638, Claiborne's final appeal was rejected and he had to relinquish ownership of his settlement on Kent Island to the new colony of Maryland.

In the midst of all the strife about Kent Island, around 1635 or 1636, he married Elizabeth Butler (Boteler), born before 1612, who was the daughter of John and Jane (Elliott) Butler of Roxwell parish, Essex County, England and sister of John Boteler, reputed to be one of Claiborne's business partners in the Kent Island venture. They had six children: William, Thomas, Jane, Leonard, John, and Mary. (Some sources list only five children, excluding Mary.)

William Claiborne was active in political affairs in Virginia, and was appointed by the king in 1642 as treasurer of Virginia for life. He remained loyal to the Crown, and with the restoration of the British monarchy in 1660, he fell out of favor with the ruling factions of Virginia's government and retired from public life. He retired to *Romancoke*, his home on the five thousand acre estate he had established near West Point on the York River, dying about 1677, certainly before August 25, 1679, the date his will was probated.

In Grateful Remembrance

A plaque in his memory has been erected at Jamestown, Virginia:

To The Glory of God
And To The Honored Memory Of
William Claiborne
Son of Thomas Cleyborne Of
Crayford, Kent, Gentleman, and
Sara Smith James. Born 1587.*

Settled in Virginia 1621. Member of Council 1625-60.

Treasurer 1642-1650. Deputy Governor 1653.

Commanded Expedition Against the Indians 1629-1644.

At Kent Island He Made the First Settlement Within
The Present Boundary of Maryland.

*NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1600.

Submitted by Mrs. James Stanley Sutherland

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. John Michael Corliss (Amanda Claiborne Oden); Andover, Massachusetts

Mrs. Eugene de Juan (Elizabeth Nicrosi Robison); San Francisco, California

Mrs. Clare Hill Draper III (Eulalie Thomas Jenkins); Birmingham

Mrs. Robert Sommerville W. Given (Eulalia Crommelin Draper); Birmingham

Mrs. Thomas Melvin McCulley (Sheard Lovelace Mason); Birmingham

Mrs. Kenneth Phillips McDuffie (Laura Hill Robison); Atlanta, Georgia

Mrs. Donald White Patton (Katharine Crommelin Sutherland); Birmingham

Mrs. Vaughn Hill Robison (Elizabeth Crommelin Nicrosi); Montgomery

Mrs. James Stanley Sutherland (Katharine Crommelin Jenkins); Birmingham

SOURCES:

Adventurers of Purse and Person Virginia 1607-1624/5; Volume I, Families A-F, compiled by John Frederick Dorman, C.G., FASG, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc. in 2004, reprinted in 2005.

Claiborne Pedigree, a genealogical table of the descendants of Secretary William Claiborne, of the Junior Branch in the United States, with some other tracings in the female line, compiled by G.M. Claiborne, published in Lynchburg, VA, by J.P. Bell Company in 1900.

Claiborne in Virginia, Descendants of Colonel William Claiborne, compiled by John Frederick Dorman in collaboration with Claiborne T. Smith, Jr., M.D., published in Baltimore by Gateway Press in 1995.

Roots in Virginia: an account of Captain Thomas Hale, Virginia frontiersman, his descendants and related families. With genealogies and sketches of Hale, Saunders, Lucke, Claiborne, Lacy, Tobin, and contributing ancestral lines, by Nathaniel Chester Hale, privately published in Philadelphia, PA, in 1948.

William Claiborne of Virginia, With Some Account of his Pedigree, by John Herbert Claiborne, M.D., F.A.C.S., published in New York by G.P. Putnam's Sons in 1917.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

RICHARD COCKE

c.1600-1665

Richard Cocke was born in Stottesdon, Shropshire, England, around 1600, a son of John and Elizabeth Cocke. John Cocke, who had been baptized in the same parish in 1569, left a will indicating that Richard was one of eight children.

After migrating to the colony of Virginia around 1630, Richard married Temperance Baley, who was the widow of John Browne, with whom she had had one son. The children of Richard and Temperance were Thomas, Richard "the elder," and, likely, their sister, Elizabeth. This son Richard died young.

Richard represented Henrico County in the Virginia House of Burgesses in 1644 and again in 1654-1655. He may have been the Richard "Coxe" who had represented Weyanoke as early as 1632. He was a "viewer of tobacco," who was an individual entrusted to assure the quality and control the quantity of the colony's most important cash crop. (See entry for Christopher Branch.) Richard was also lieutenant colonel in the Henrico County militia and served as county justice in 1657.

A fellow burgess and friend was Lieutenant Colonel Walter Aston, whose daughter, Mary, became Richard's second wife after Temperance died. The children of Richard and Mary were William, John, Richard "the younger," and Edward.

In 1636-1637, a plantation of three thousand acres was patented to Richard Cocke. A patent for two thousand additional acres recorded in 1639-1640 listed three additional plantations: *Bremo*, *Curles*, and *Malvern Hills*. These estates are situated on the James River, eighteen miles east of Richmond. Additional acreage was to come in the future, as land grants for transporting to Virginia 220 persons. He made his home at *Bremo*, which became a place of military importance.

Clayton Torrence, the well-known historian, writes of Richard Cocke in an issue of the *William and Mary Quarterly*:

His sons and grandsons, at one time or another, occupied nearly every office of dignity and profit in the county.

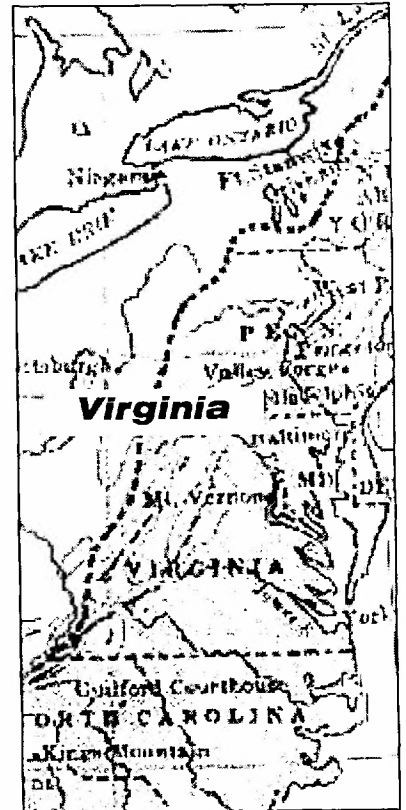
The most powerful families were the Randolphs, Cockes, Eppses, Byrds, Kennons, and Pleasants, who continued to occupy the exalted positions that their founders in Virginia first occupied, to the very end.

When Richard Cocke died in 1665, his property, totaling eight thousand acres, was divided among his sons and assorted kin, with a one-third life estate awarded to his widow, Mary.

Submitted by Mrs. Harold Van Morgan, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Miss Cynthia Sue Harrell; Montgomery
Mrs. Harold Van Morgan, Jr. (Celestine Martin Mitchell); Florence



SOURCES:

The Founding of a Virginia Family, by
William Ronald Cocke, published in
Richmond, VA, by Southern Stamp &
Stationary Company in 1931;
reprinted in 1989.

William and Mary Quarterly
Historical Magazine, Volume XXIV.

In Grateful Remembrance **TRISTRAM COFFIN**

1610-1681

In 1659, Tristram Coffin, along with eight other proprietors, was deeded the Island of Nantucket from Thomas Mayhew, who asked for payment of "30 pounds...and also two beaver hats, one for myself and one for my wife." The following deed was published in the *New England Genealogical Register, Volume XII*, for the year 1858:

The Twentye first day of June 1660.

Thes presents Doe wittnis y Peeter folger of Martaines vinyard did upon The Request of Tristram Coffyn senior And with The Consent of Pattachhaunet, Sachem of tuckanuck devid the Island of Tuckanuck as followeth: The line Is to Run from a littell Round hill y lyeth a littell above the head of The pond y Is att The East Sid of the Iland; and so to goe by the East northeast point of the Compas to The west Southwest End of the Iland, and The Aforesaid Tristram Coffyn Senior Is to have The South Sid of The Iland and accordinge to This line And Pattacohaunet Is to have The North Sid.

Witness my hand

Peter folger

Witness Edward Starbuck

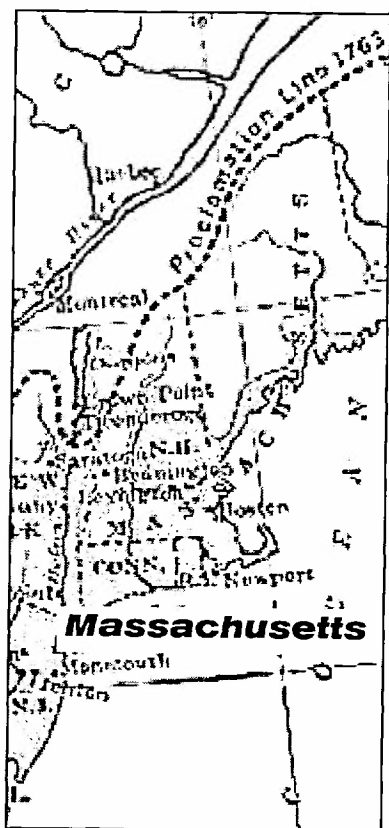
Witness Thomey Trapp

Born in Brixton Parrish in Plymouth, Devonshire, England, and baptized March 11, 1610, Tristram Coffyn (later spelling, Coffin) was the son of Peter and Johanna Coffyn. At the time of Tristram's birth, James I was the reigning king and William Shakespeare, Francis Bacon, and Oliver Cromwell were influential leaders.

Tristram's father died when he was nineteen, leaving him in charge of his mother and five siblings, as recorded in the will dated December 21, 1627. Two years later, Tristram married Dionis Stevens. Their children, Peter (1631), Tristram, Jr. (1632), Elizabeth (unknown date of birth), and James (1639), were born in England.

Because of the civil war in England between the royalists and parliamentarians, and after the death of his brother John at Plymouth Fort, Tristram decided to move his mother, two unmarried sisters, and his family to colonial America. In the year 1642, the Coffyn family left England aboard the *Hector Clement*, arriving in Newburyport, Massachusetts in the summer of 1642. After exploring the area along the Merrimack River, Coffyn decided to settle at Pentucket, which is now Haverhill, Massachusetts.

Coffyn farmed there for several years, but, being interested in business, he moved his family to Newbury, where he opened a ferry on the Merrimack River. *The History of Newbury* records that Tristram Coffyn, Sr. kept an ordinary (tavern), selling wine, operating an inn, and funning a ferry on the Newbury side of the river. Laws from 1645 stated that "every person licensed to keep an Ordinary shall provide good wholesome beer of four bushels of malt to the hogshead which he shall not sell above two pence the ale quart." Tristram's wife concocted an ale that had a bit more punch—she used six bushels of malt instead of four, and increased her price by one more pence. She was summoned to court to defend her practice, but charges against her were dropped, and Newbury residents and travelers alike continued to enjoy her "quality ale."



Biographies of Our Ancestors

The desire to be out from under the strict Puritan laws and to test his entrepreneurial skills led Coffyn to relocate his family to the island of Nantucket, known at that time as Tuckanuck, or "faraway land." His son, Peter, accompanied him, along with his partners, Thomas Macy, Richard Swayne, and William Pike and five others. The owner of Nantucket, Thomas Mayhew, also owned the island of Martha's Vineyard, and prior to the sale of the island to the Coffyn group, required them to visit and discuss their venture with the indigenous Wampanoag Indians. About seven hundred Indians lived in six villages on the island. They were friendly, and with the help of Peter Folger, a formal deed was drawn up in 1660 with the sachem, or chief, of the Indians, Pattachohaunet. Tristram Coffin was later described as being "a just and kind friend to the Indians" and as "exhibiting Christian character."

Tristram and Peter became quite wealthy and influential residents of Nantucket, owning at one point about one-fourth of the island. They farmed, raised sheep, and operated a corn mill that employed the native Americans. In 1671, Tristram Coffin was appointed chief magistrate of Nantucket. He stayed active in the development of the island until his death on October 3, 1681.

Submitted by Mrs. Thomas Herbert Patton, III

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Donald Boyd (Gretchen Ann Donald); Montgomery
Mrs. Clinton Gordon McCarty (Martha Ann Liddell); Mobile
Mrs. Thomas Herbert Patton, III (Susan Elizabeth Donald); Tuscaloosa

SOURCES:

Coffin, transcribed by Carolyn Brown and published in New York by Lewis Historical Publishing Company in 1910.

The Coffin Family, by John Coffin Jones, published by David Clapp and Son in 1881, digitized at www.jack-sonsweb.org/coffin.htm

My Father's Shoes—Our Coffin Story, by Ross Coffin, digitized at www.islandregister.com/rcoffin

A Genealogical History of the Clark and Worth Families, by Carol Clark Jackson, published in Orange Park, FL, by Quintin Publications in 1970.

New England Genealogical Register, Volume XII, 1858.

The US Genweb Project, by David Sylvester, Nantucket, Massachusetts, October 2004.

In Grateful Remembrance **FRANCIS COOKE**

c.1583-1663

Francis Cooke was born about 1583, in England, perhaps from the Canterbury or Norwich area. He married Hester le Mahieu on July 20, 1603, in Leiden, Holland. She was a French Walloon whose parents had fled initially to Canterbury, but then went on to Leiden.

(Walloons, like Huguenots, were Protestant exiles from Europe.) Francis and Hester's marriage took place six years before the Pilgrim Church began moving into Holland; it is not known what inspired his move there from England, but he occupied himself as a wool-comber. The Cookes left Leiden for about a year in 1606 to spend some time in Norwich, Norfolk, but returned for the christening of their son, John, at the French church in Leiden sometime between January and March of 1607.

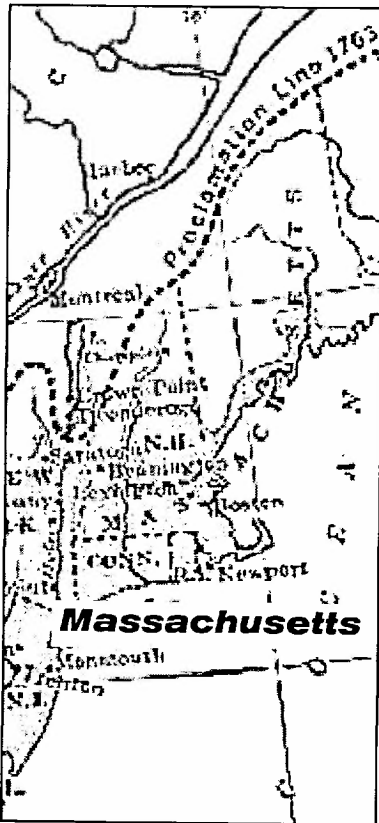
Thirteen years later, Francis and son John started out for America, originally on the *Speedwell*. They were, however, transferred to the *Mayflower*, along with about a third of the Pilgrim congregation headed to the New World. Arriving at what is now Provincetown, Massachusetts, on November 11, 1620, forty-one passengers, including Francis Cooke, signed the Mayflower Compact before disembarking. The compact, which became a forerunner of the Declaration of Independence and the United States Constitution, was intended to unite and guide the passengers in their effort to develop a community.

By 1623, the colony had had time to firmly establish itself, so Hester and the remainder of the Cooke children, Jane, Jacob, and Elizabeth, arrived at Plymouth on the *Ann*. Two more children, Hester and Mary, subsequently came along.

As a freeman (See Glossary: Freeman) in early Plymouth, Francis had several duties. He served twice on the grand inquest, once in 1638 and again in 1640. He served on numerous juries from the years 1638 to 1648. In 1637, he was appointed to the committee to lay out highways. He followed this appointment with the job of surveyor of the highways for Plymouth in 1641, 1642, and again in 1645. He also served on a committee to find the best route for a new road.

There is no record of what kind of work Cooke was engaged in, other than managing his land. He had an apprentice, John Harmon, for seven years, beginning in 1636. Francis Cooke was also on the 1643 Plymouth list of those who were permitted to bear arms.

Francis Cooke died in 1663 in Plymouth. Twelve years earlier, in 1651, fellow Pilgrim William Bradford had written of him, "Francis Cooke is still living, a very old man, and hath seen his children's children have children. After his wife came over with other of his children, he hath three still living by her, all married and have five children, so their increase is eight. And his son John, which came over with him, is married and hath four children living."



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Some of the Cooke descendants are United States presidents George H.W. Bush and George W. Bush, as well as Franklin D. Roosevelt. Other famous descendants include Cephas Thompson (an artist), William D. Washburn (1831 Representative and Senator from Minnesota), Anna Mary Robertson ("Grandma Moses"), Orson Welles, Julia Child, and Abel Head "Shanghai" Pierce (the cattleman who introduced the Brahman breed into Texas).

Submitted by Mrs. Charles Dixie Jordan

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Charles Dixie Jordan (Alice Lee Kern); Montgomery

SOURCES:

"Francis Cooke," in *Mayflower Families for Five Generations, Volume 12*, by Ralph V. Wood, published in Plymouth, MA, by the General Society of Mayflower Descendants in 1996.

"Francis Cooke of the Mayflower and His Descendants for Four Generations," in *Mayflower Families in Progress*, compiled by Robert S. Wakefield, FASG, Ralph Van Wood, and others, published in Plymouth, MA, by the General Society of Mayflower Descendants in 1987.

Mayflower, by Nathaniel Philbrick, published in New York, NY, by the Penguin Group in 2006.

"*The Mayflower Marriage Records at Leiden and Amsterdam: Francis Cook*," by George Bowman, in *The Complete Mayflower Descendant, Volumes 1-40*, published in Provo, UT, by The Generations Network, Inc., c. 1996.

"The Pilgrims and Other English in Leiden Records: Some New Pilgrim Documents," by Jeremy D. Bangs, in *New England Historical and Genealogical Register, 158 vols.*, published in Boston by New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1847-2004. (Citation for a specific volume could not be found.)

In Grateful Remembrance **JOHN COOPER**

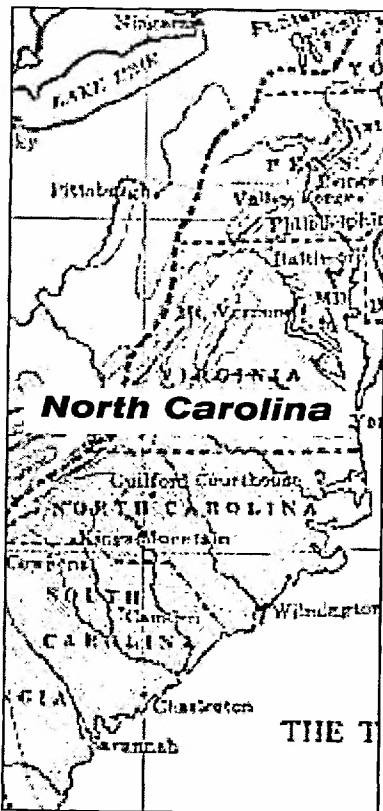
1730-1794

John Cooper, the son of Thomas Isles Cooper and his fourth wife, was born about 1730 in Beaufort County, North Carolina and had one brother, Isles Cooper. John Cooper married around 1755 to a woman whose name has been lost: they had eleven children.

As an adult, he lived in Halifax County, North Carolina, where he was a member of the Provincial Congress that met on April 4, 1776. Eight days later, on April 12, the Congress voted to adopt the "Halifax Resolves," which empowered its four delegates to the Congressional Congress to join with those from other colonies to declare independence from British rule. The North Carolina assembly thus became the first to empower its delegates in the Continental Congress to vote for independence from Britain. Virginia soon proclaimed a similar resolution.

John Cooper died in 1794. His will, dated October 4, 1794, lists the names of his children and is interesting in the lack of equality in the distribution of his assets. Perhaps he had already provided for his older children.

- Item 1. I give my son Samuel Cooper one shilling.
- Item 2. I give to my grandson, Zachus Cooper, one horse colt by the name of Spidel.
- Item 3. I give to my daughter Mary (Cooper) Ward ninety-six acres of land and her heirs, lying between Richard Campbell's and Humphrey Pines.
- Item 4. I give to my son Thomas Cooper one shilling to him and his heirs.
- Item 5. I give to my two daughters Sarah (Cooper) Glasgow and Elizabeth (Cooper) Heath one negroe fellow by the name of Peter to them and to their heirs.
- Item 6. I give to my daughter Dolly (Cooper) Gray one shilling to her and her heirs.
- Item 7. I give to my son Isles Cooper one shilling.
- Item 8. I give to my daughter Sophia (Cooper) Curlin six head of sheep and one negroe boy by the name of Bob
- Item 9. I give to my daughter Frankey (Cooper) one negroe wench by the name of Jane and one box iron and heaters.
- Item 10. I give to my son John Cooper my plantation whereon I now live, it being one hundred and sixty acres and one mare.
- Item 11. I give to my son James Cooper fifty acres of land known by the name of the Scots place and one negroe girl by the name of Rach and one colt by the name of Derrick.
- Item 12. I leave to my loving wife all the rest of my whole estate during her natural life or widowhood and after her decease or marriage to be equally divided between my two sons John Cooper and James Cooper.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Lastly I constitute, nominate, and appoint my two sons John Cooper and James Cooper executors of this my last will and testament, revoking all others and asking void all former wills heretofore by me made and declare this to be my last will and testament.

John S. Cooper
(seal)

Submitted by Mrs. John Larry Jones

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. John Larry Jones (Edith Plant Morthland); Selma
Mrs. Leland Thompson Moore (Carmen Parks Weaks); Mobile
Mrs. Rex J. Morthland (Ann Cooper Plant); Selma
Mrs. Marshall Scott Patterson (Mary Ann Morthland); Selma

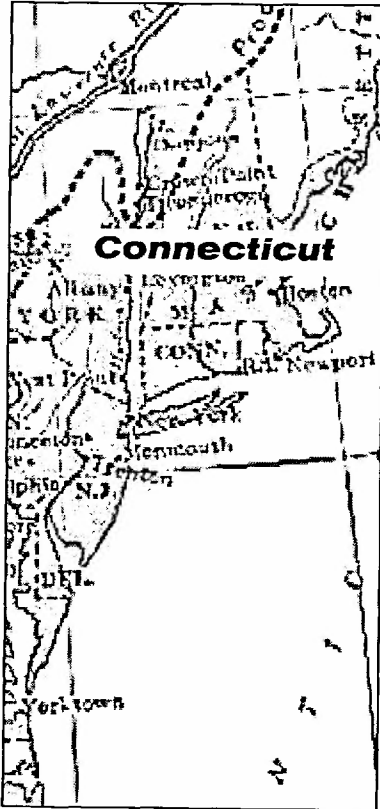
SOURCES:

[http://www2.arkansas.net/~bcooper2k/
Family%20Tree's.htm](http://www2.arkansas.net/~bcooper2k/Family%20Tree's.htm)

Record of Wills, 1758 -1824,
Halifax County, NC, Volume 3, page
233

In Grateful Remembrance **JONATHAN CRANE**

1658-1735



Jonathan Crane's grandfather, John Crane, came from Suffolk County, England, to America and was, by 1637, living at Muddy Brook (now Brookline), Massachusetts. He had two sons, Benjamin and Henry, who went to Wethersfield, Connecticut, and set up a tannery business around 1665.

Benjamin's son was Jonathan, born on December 1, 1658 in Wethersfield. Jonathan would settle his father's estate around 1670 with the help of his Uncle Henry, then take over the tannery. In addition to the business, Jonathan received seventy-six acres in Wethersfield.

By 1672, Jonathan Crane owned land in Norwich, Connecticut. He was married in 1678 to Deborah Griswold, daughter of Francis Griswold. In the intervening years, he established himself in Windham, where he had one thousand acres. In 1691, he built the first sawmill in the area, which he followed with a grist mill. In that year he was one of the petitioners for a town charter for Windham in the general court at Hartford; he also surveyed the town lines, appointed someone to select a minister, and was made tax collector for the city. The next year saw him as one of the town's selectmen (a member of the governing council), then a townsman, and finally a patentee of the town in 1703. In 1695, he traded the gristmill and some property for a new house in Windham, at the location of what is now called the Hither Place. Five years later he bought the remainder of the lot on which his house sat and donated it to the town of Windham for "a meeting house plot or common." His partner in this venture was the Reverend Samuel Whiting, and the first church in the town was erected on the space, with the remaining acreage becoming Windham Green. Jonathan Crane's service to Windham continued as he sat on committees to survey and build a meeting house, call town meetings, take care of public lands, and sign laws.

In May of 1695, Jonathan Crane had been chosen "Ensign in the Train Band of Windham," (a military company formed to protect the settlement from Indian attack) and was promoted to lieutenant in October of 1703. His first term as deputy in the Colonial Assembly was in 1703; he served twelve more terms throughout the next nineteen years. He was also chosen deputy to the general court at Hartford several different years. He served his church as deacon, then treasurer, and was, in 1726, named one of the "seven pillars or councilors of the church."

Jonathan Crane died in Lebanon, Connecticut on March 12, 1735.

SOURCES:

Fifty Puritan Ancestors, 1628-1660:
Genealogical Notes, by Elizabeth Todd Nash, published in New Haven, CT, by The Tuttle, Morehouse & Taylor Company in 1902.
Public Records of Connecticut, 1689-1706.

Submitted by Mrs. Rogers Neilson Laseter

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. John Harris Harper (Margaret Manger McCall); Birmingham
Mrs. William Brown Hawkins (Mary Neilson Laseter); Arvada, Colorado
Mrs. Jeffrey Parker Hendry (Mary Margaret Harper); Birmingham
Mrs. Rogers Neilson Laseter (Mary Winston McCall); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. David Brian Melton (Caroline Winston Laseter); Wellington, Florida
Mrs. Lee McWhorter Pope (Winston Fontaine Harper); Birmingham
Mrs. John Worrell Poyner (Nancy McCall); Birmingham

Biographies of Our Ancestors

DAVID CRAWFORD I

1625-1710

The first David Crawford immigrated to colonial Virginia about 1643, only a few decades after the founding of the first permanent English settlement at Jamestown. At the time of his arrival, mid-seventeenth-century Virginia was still very much a wilderness outpost.

David Crawford I (spelled Crafford in some early records) came with his father, John Crawford, to James City County, Virginia, from Kilburney, Ayrshire, Scotland. John Crawford is believed to have been a widower when he came to Virginia, and David, born 1625 (possibly 1623), was a young man. According to family tradition, John Crawford prospered as a tobacco planter in the colony until his death in 1676 during Bacon's Rebellion, when he was killed by Indians or by the British. (See Glossary: Bacon's Rebellion.)

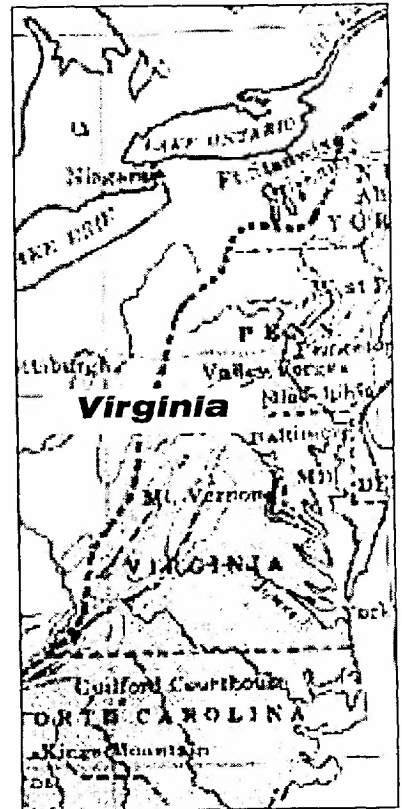
Because many public records are missing—some destroyed by a courthouse fire in the eighteenth century and others during the Civil War—documented facts of David Crawford I's life are limited. Existing records relate primarily to land acquisition, and some of these are complicated by three successive generations named David Crawford.

David Crawford I became one of the large landowners in Tidewater Virginia. In addition to purchasing land outright, he received a number of land grants in return for bringing new immigrants to the colony. (Under this system, the sponsor of the immigrants assured that they would be cared for during a period of indentured service, usually seven years, after which they typically would settle in the colony as artisans or small landowners.)

The first land acquisition record is dated August 7, 1667, when David Crawford purchased eighty-six acres in the parish of Martyns Hundred (see Glossary: Bermuda Hundred) in James City County, a transaction approved by the royal governor, Sir William Berkeley. Five years later, Governor Berkeley made him a direct grant of one thousand acres in New Kent County in return for bringing twenty people to Virginia. Crawford relocated to New Kent County and continued to acquire land there. In 1676, the year of Bacon's Rebellion, he added 1,350 acres (for transporting twenty-seven persons to the colony) and 375 acres (for transporting eight persons).

In 1682 he purchased thirteen hundred acres from Mr. William Taylor in St. Peter's Parish, New Kent County, a transaction not settled until 1685, when he received an additional land grant for 277 acres (for bringing six people to settle in the colony). The latter acreage appears to have adjoined the Taylor purchase. It was at this site, through which flowed Assiskins Run, that David Crawford I built his final plantation, named *Assiskins Run*, also known as *Assassquin*. In 1693 he deeded this land with all appurtenances to his grandson, William Meriwether. In 1697, he deeded two hundred acres in New Kent County to another Meriwether grandson, David. (These land holdings became part of Hanover County when it was created from a portion of New Kent County in 1720.) On April 2, 1692, David Crawford I was elected to the House of Burgesses from New Kent County for a term of two years. His death came eighteen years later, in 1710.

Crawford's son, also named David Crawford (sometimes called Captain David Crawford to distinguish him from his father), had a record of colonial service as well. David Crawford II was captain of a troop of cavalry in the Colonial Virginia Militia and was sheriff of Hanover County in 1733-34. Born in 1662 in New Kent (now Hanover) County,



In Grateful Remembrance

and married to Elizabeth Smith in 1692, David II was prominent in St. Peter's Parish of New Kent County, where he was elected vestryman on June 23, 1687, and subsequently served as vestryman and then warden for well over a decade. He died September 1762.

Submitted by Mrs. Alice Meriwether Bowsher

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Alice Meriwether Bowsher (Alice McLean Meriwether); Birmingham

Mrs. William Chambers Waller (Ruth Couch McIntyre); Birmingham

SOURCES:

Crawford Family History—Part 1 and Part 2, by Bob Chope, published online at http://www.daviesofpebbleton.org/archives/crawford_part1.html and http://www.daviesofpebbleton.org/archives/crawford_part2.html

Laurus Crawfordiana: Memorials of that Branch of the Crawford Family which Comprises the Descendants of John Crawford, of Virginia, 1660-1883, by Mrs. Frank Armstrong Crawford Vanderbilt, privately published in New York in 1883.

The Meriwethers and Their Connections, by Nelson Heath Meriwether, published in Columbia, MO, by Artercraft Press, in 1964.

The Vestry Book and Register of St. Peter's Parish, New Kent and James City Counties, Virginia, 1684-1786, edited by C.G. Chamberlayne, published in Richmond, VA, by the Library Board in 1937.

In Grateful Remembrance **JOSEPH CROSHAW**

1612-1667

Joseph Croshaw was the son of Raleigh Croshaw, who came to the Virginia Colony in the fall of 1608 with his friend, Thomas Graves, on the *Mary and Margaret* in the second supply. (These supply ships were critical to the life of the newly established colonies, as they brought not only new colonists, but also the basic supplies necessary for their survival.) Joseph was born in Virginia around 1612, but was educated in England, apparently with some legal training, since he is recorded as having appeared as an attorney in county court. He resided in Virginia and served as a gentleman justice of York County in 1655, and was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1656 and 1659-1660.

The first of many land patents that Joseph Croshaw received was for six hundred acres in Charles River County in 1637. His home was on the south side of the York River and the west side of Queen's Creek, and called *Poplar Neck*, where he patented over one thousand acres in 1651.

It is recorded that he married five times, although sources disagree about who was the mother of his first five children. For the purpose of this biography, the wives' names were: first—unknown name; second, a Mrs. Finch (possibly Elizabeth Yearly, daughter of Governor George Yearly); third, Anne Hodges, to whom he was married by 1661; fourth, Margaret Tucker, who died in 1664; and finally, to Mary Broomfield, who survived him. The five children recorded from one of his early marriages were named Mary, Unity, Richard, and Benjamin and Joseph (who died in childhood). From his marriage to Mary Broomfield came Joseph II or Richard (sources disagree), who was born in 1667, one month before his father died.

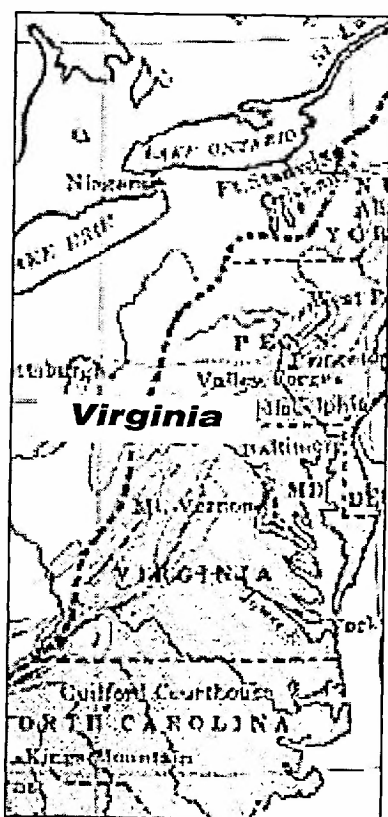
In his will dated March 10, 1667, Joseph Croshaw bequeathed three silver spoons and three silver sack cups to his wife; and one silver beaker, one candle cup, and two dram cups of the same metal to his son, Richard. The will was probated on April 10, 1667, in York County, Virginia.

After a couple of generations, this line of male Croshaws died out, but Joseph Croshaw's granddaughter, Unity, married Ralph Graves, descendant of Thomas Graves, who came to Virginia with Raleigh Croshaw in 1608, thus formally uniting the families who had been so closely related since their arrival in America.

Submitted by Mrs. James Somerville McLester French and Mrs. Paul Priestly McCain

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. William R. J. Dunn (Frances Beverly White); Birmingham
Mrs. James Somerville McLester French (Mary Beverley Dunn); Birmingham
Mrs. Paul Priestly McCain (Lucy Durr Dunn); Decatur



SOURCE:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-1624/5), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by the Order of the First Families of Virginia in 2007.

Biographies of Our Ancestors
EDWARD DALE

c.1628 – 1695

According to Dr. Joseph Lyon Miller's book, *The Descendants of Captain Thomas Carter*, Major Edward Dale, Captain Carter's father-in-law, sought refuge in Virginia after the death of King Charles I of England. He and his family were among a group of royalists fleeing the protectorate of Oliver Cromwell. This group of emigrants "enjoyed an influence far out of proportion to their mere numbers." Married around 1652 to Diana Skipwith, the daughter of Sir Grey Skipwith, Edward Dale was referred to as Major Edward Dale, Gentleman.

Charles I was beheaded in 1649, and if Dr. Miller is correct, Major Dale was residing in Lancaster County, Virginia, by 1652. Dale soon began taking a prominent role in county affairs and was the first clerk of Westmoreland County with the help of a deputy. He enjoyed numerous political offices. From 1655-74, he was clerk of Lancaster County; from 1669-84, was Justice of the County Court, and in the years 1670, '71, '79, and '80, he was chosen by the governor as high sheriff. In 1677 and 1682-83, he was a member of the House of Burgesses, and a member of the militia in 1680.

These "old worthies," such as Edward Dale, brought with them to the New World the "tastes and habits" of the English gentry. "They were very careful of their honor and dignity and prompt and severe in their resentment of any infringement of the same." Two stories related by Miller seem to illustrate the customs of the times, as well as capturing Mr. Dale's personality.

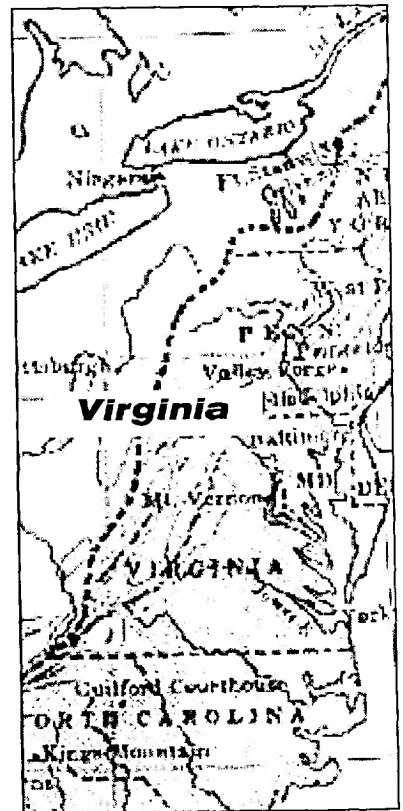
A recorded incident of November 8, 1671, relates that at St. Mary's White Chapel a Mr. Richard Price, in an "uncivil and irreligious manner," attempted to intrude himself into Major Dale's pew, where Dale himself and several other "worthies" were seated. Mr. Price was summarily summoned to court.

Another story passed down by descendants relates that one day a stranger stopped by the Dale home about dinnertime. His horse was stabled, and the stranger was invited to have dinner with the family. Upon being seated, the guest bowed his head and offered a long, puritanical prayer, asking blessings on Oliver Cromwell and maledictions on the pretender, Charles II. Major Dale was so incensed that he ordered the man out to find his dinner elsewhere, thus "In his loyalty to his king, he transgressed one of the strongest laws of all time—the law of hospitality."

Submitted by Mrs. Benjamin Hogan Craig, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Benjamin Hogan Craig, Jr. (Ann Landis Bradsaw); Florence



SOURCE:

The Descendants of Captain Thomas Carter, by Dr. Joseph Lyon Miller, published in Bridgewater, VA, by C.J. Carrier in 1912.

In Grateful Remembrance

CHRISTOPHER DE GRAFFENRIED

1661-1743

Citizen of Bern, Honorary Citizen of London, Governor of Yelverton, Lord of Worb, member of the Order of Sunshine, Knight of the Purple Ribbon, Master of Arts, Doctor of Laws, Anton Christoph von Graffenried was born on November 15, 1661, in Bern, Switzerland to Anton and Katherine von Graffenreid. He possessed a brilliant mind, was strikingly handsome in appearance, and had the ability to make friends and inspire confidence, which, together with an ardent love of adventure, endowed him with the elements necessary for his unusually interesting career.

Christoph von Graffenried married Regina Ischarner on April 25, 1684, and the couple had four sons and seven daughters. Even though both husband and wife had descended from nobility, they found that to be no protection from financial hardship, and Christoph began listening carefully to stories about opportunities in the New World, particularly in the colonies of North Carolina and Virginia.

Eventually, von Graffenried, himself a Protestant, was directed by Queen Anne of England to found a colony in America as a haven for ten thousand Palatine (non-Catholic) German and Swiss immigrants who wanted to escape religious discrimination in their homelands. He purchased five thousand acres near the coast of North Carolina, and was granted the titles of Landgrave (Count) of Carolina and Baron of Bernburg. (See Glossary: Grand Model.)

In 1710/11, after numerous adventures and dangers, the Baron founded the New Bern community where the Trent and Neuse Rivers join. He designed a town on a triangle-shaped piece of land between the two rivers. He constructed a line of fortifications around the entire settlement, and erected a water mill for grinding grain. His plan was to make the new settlement as appealing as possible, in order to attract various artisans to New Bern. The colony grew in its first year, but later found that getting additional supplies was very difficult. Settling in the New World in any circumstance meant battling disease, hardship, and poor harvests. However, the location and hard-working settlers of New Bern vested the colony with great potential as a business center.

Political turmoil, disease, and land disputes with the Indians increased the difficulty of establishing prosperity in New Bern. Baron von Graffenried tried to arbitrate between the colonists and the Indians, but during the summer of 1711 he and his surveyor, John Lawson, were captured and held for six weeks by the Tuscarora Indians. Lawson was burned at the stake, but von Graffenried was spared. When he returned to his settlement, he found the colony burning and deserted. In 1714, he went back to Bern, Switzerland, disappointed and financially drained. He wrote a book-length explanation of his reasoning about why his colony had met with failure, *Relation*. He died in 1743 at the family castle, Worb, near Bern.

Christoph von Graffenried's oldest son, named Christopher and born in 1661, came to America with the Baron and remained here. On February 22, 1714, in Charleston, South Carolina, he married Barbara Needham Tempest, daughter of the distinguished Sir Arthur Needham of Wymondsley, Herfordshire, England. They changed the spelling of the name from von Graffenried to de Graffenried, and became the progenitors of thousands of American de Graffenrieds.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Note: History has been kind to both Baron von Graffenried and to New Bern. Colonel John H. Wheeler, in his Historical Sketches of North Carolina, said, "It has been the boast of one of the earliest historians that this colony was the only instance of a nation planted in peace, and located without bloodshed of the natives. This was true at the time."

Once the trouble with the Tuscarora tribe was over, settlers returned to New Bern and began to look to natural resources for their support. Tar, pitch, and turpentine, along with other native products were shipped to England, New England and the West Indies. The ships returned with rum, molasses, sugar, and manufactured goods, and the town became the business center originally envisioned. Because of its location equidistant from Albemarle Sound and Cape Fear, the colonial assembly often met there, and New Bern became the first capitol of the state. Christ Church parish was established in 1715, and the first church building was constructed in 1750.

Submitted by Mrs. Aimée Coleman Scott and Mrs. Brightman Blonzo Coker, Jr.

DECENDANTS:

Mrs. William Shapard Dowdell Ashley (Camille Wright Cook); Montgomery
 Mrs. Wayne Eugene Barrineau (Nicole Stephanie Bruckman); Gulf Breeze, Florida
 Mrs. Brightman Blonzo Coker Jr. (Glenda Street Atkinson); Mobile
 Mrs. Camille Wright Cook (Camille Searcy Wright); Tuscaloosa
 Mrs. Robert Clifford Cowen Jr. (Mary Cameron Williams); Birmingham
 Mrs. Karl Savary Elebash Jr. (Camille Searcy Maxwell); Tuscaloosa
 Mrs. Camille Elebash-Hill (Camille Maxwell Elebash); Montgomery
 Mrs. Herndon Inge III (Gertrude Amanda Hunter); Mobile
 Mrs. William Jacob Long (Grace Murphy Nabers); Birmingham
 Mrs. Samuel Jackson McKissack III (Mary Ruth Russell); Valley Grande
 Mrs. Hugh Appleton Ragsdale (Martha Comer Nabers); Tuscaloosa
 Mrs. Jay Dickie Roberds III (Lauri Amanda McKissack); Mobile
 Mrs. Augusta Cobbs Robinson (Augusta Tunstall Cobbs); Tuscaloosa
 Mrs. Aimée Coleman Scott (Aimée Clothilde Coleman); Magnolia Springs
 Mrs. Charles William Thomas (Alfreda Tunstall Maxwell); Tuscaloosa
 Mrs. Rickman Edgar Williams (Elizabeth Anne Russell); Selma
 Mrs. William Copeland Wood III (Mary Elizabeth McKissack); Birmingham

SOURCES:

Christoph von Graffenried at <http://history.swissroots.org/179.0.html>

Christoph von Graffenried's *Account of the Founding of New Bern*, edited by Vincent H. Todd, published in Raleigh, NC, by the North Carolina Historical Commission in 1920.

The De Graffenried Family Scrap Book, by Thomas P. de Graffenried, published in Charlottesville, VA, by the University of Virginia Press, in 1958.

(Note: *The de Graffenried Family Scrapbook, Volume I*, 1191-1925, and *The de Graffenried Family Scrapbook, Volume II*, 1925-1956, both by Thomas P. deGraffenried, had been privately published earlier.)

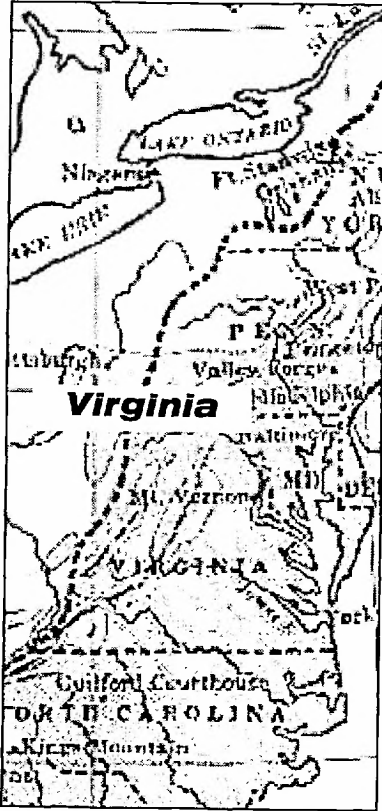
Historical Sketches of North Carolina, from 1584 to 1851, by John Hill Wheeler, published in Philadelphia, PA, by Lippincott, Grambo, and Co. (successors to Grigg, Elliot, and Co.), in 1851.

A History of New Bern and Craven County, by Alan D. Watson, published in New Bern, NC, by the Tryon Palace Commission in 1987.

<http://docsouth.unc.edu/nc/graffenried/graffenried.html>

In Grateful Remembrance
HENRY DELONY

c.1720-1785



Henry DeLony was born in Surry County, Virginia to Lewis DeLony II and his wife, Anne Allen. He was married the first time to Frances Jefferson and they had a daughter, Mary. In 1752, the Delony family was living in Lunenburg County (from which Mecklenburg County would later be formed), as a deed is recorded in the county records of April of that year, showing that Henry sold three hundred acres to Isham East for three hundred pounds sterling. In this record, Frances releases her dower rights in said piece of property.

Frances died shortly thereafter, and on May 11, 1753, Henry DeLony married Rebecca Broadnax Walker (1733-1822), the widow of Alexander Walker, in Brunswick County, Virginia. They had three sons and two daughters: Henry Jr., Lucy, William, Francis and Edward. After Mecklenburg County was formed in 1764, Henry was administered an Oath of Allegiance to the Crown along with twelve other men. Rebecca and Henry remained in Mecklenburg, where he was a member of the committee of safety and served as a justice. DeLony was also a member of the House of Burgesses from 1766-1768, and was serving as a colonel of the Mecklenburg County militia at the beginning of the Revolutionary War. During the War years, he furnished supplies of guns, ammunition and food to the Continental army.

Henry DeLony's will is dated April 29, 1785, and was recorded June 13, 1785. He died and is buried in Mecklenburg County, Virginia.

Submitted by Mrs. Frederick Cushing, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Allen Roff Cameron, Jr. (Celia Lile Cushing); Mobile

Mrs. Frederick Cushing, Jr. (Sylvia Sargent); Mobile

SOURCES:

Early Settlers of Mecklenburg County, Volume I, compiled by Katherine B. Elliott in South Hill, VA, in 1964.

The General Assembly of Virginia, July 30, 1619-June 11, 1978, Bicentennial, published in Richmond by the Virginia State Library (now Library of Virginia) in 1978.

Mecklenburg County, Virginia, Will Book 2.

Revolutionary War Records, Mecklenburg County, compiled by Katherine B. Elliott in South Hill, VA.

JACOB RUTSEN DEWITT

1729-1792

Jacob Rutsen DeWitt, son of Egbert B. and Mary Nottingham DeWitt, was born April 6, 1729, at Wawarsing, in Ulster County, New York and baptized April 13 of that year in the Kingston Dutch Reformed Church of Kingston, New York. His father, Egbert B. DeWitt, owned a lead mine that operated throughout the Revolutionary War. These DeWitts were directly descended from the physician, Dr. Nicholas (Claus) DeWitt, who sailed with Henry Hudson aboard *The Half Moon* to explore the Hudson River in 1607 for the Dutch East Indies Company.

Jacob Rutsen DeWitt married Janneke DePuy, daughter of Moses and Margaret Schoonmaker DePuy, in the Kingston Dutch Reformed Church on April 15, 1756. They began married life in Naponock, New York, and had three children—Maria (born 1756), Margrita (born 1757), and Elizabeth (born 1759), by the time they moved to Port Jervis and built a frame house near the Neversink River.

During 1759, in the French and Indian War, Jacob served as a lieutenant of a company of rangers under General Loudon who guarded the frontier. When the war was over, Jacob built a grist mill upstream from the point where the boat canal crosses the Neversink; the mill's raceway and waterwheel site, carved out of solid rock, is visible to this day from the rocks above. During the next few years, the DeWitts had four more children: Rachel (born 1762), Jannetje/Jane (born 1765—family legend holds that she was captured by Indians, but quickly rescued), Moses (born 1766), and Egbert (born 1768).

The DeWitt family moved to Sullivan (now Orange County) and again purchased land along the Neversink River. The first town meeting of Sullivan County was held in April of 1774 in the DeWitt home. They completed their family with three more children, for a total of ten: Hannah (born 1770), Esther (born 1774), and, Jacob Rustsen Jr. (born 1776). The DeWitts prospered, owning a couple of slaves and a large library of books in both English and Dutch.

Jacob Rutsen DeWitt was a signer of the Revolutionary Articles of Association, Mamakating Precinct, in 1775. During the Revolution, a stone building, Fort DeWitt, was built near Jacob's home. (The original stone structure has been enclosed in a wooden frame and is not readily identifiable.) Jacob DeWitt was captain of a militia company during the Revolution, and on February 1777, the committee of safety for the state of New York met at Kingston and directed that "the Company of Rangers, commanded by Captain Jacob Rutsen DeWitt, be placed under the command and direction of General George Clinton," and thereafter DeWitt was frequently mentioned in official dispatches in the public papers of Governor George Clinton.

When Jacob was stationed at Peepack Fort, he took depositions of survivors of the massacre at Wyoming, Pennsylvania on April 19, 1778. Later, as Captain of Sixth Company, Second Ulster County Militia, he served under his son-in-law, Colonel James Clinton. He died in Mamakating, New York, before January 6, 1792, the date his will was probated.

Jacob's son, Moses, was one of the surveyors to establish the line between New York and Pennsylvania. He became surrogate judge of the courts and justice of the peace in Onodaga and Herkimer Counties. The town of DeWitt, in Onodaga County, is named for Moses.



In Grateful Remembrance

Jacob's nephew, DeWitt Clinton, son of Mary DeWitt and Colonel James Clinton, was mayor of New York, twice the governor of New York, and a United States senator.

Submitted by Mrs. Stephen William Rowe

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Harlan Lee Horton (Kathryn Reed Flournoy Rowe); Gadsden
Mrs. Stephen William Rowe (Katherine Daughdrill Glover); Gadsden

SOURCES:

The DeWitt Family of Ulster County, New York, by Thomas G. Evans; originally published in 1886 and reprinted from New York Genealogical and Biographical Records, Volume 17.

Old Gravestones of Ulster County, NY, by DeWitt Genealogy, published by Ulster County Historical Society (no date).

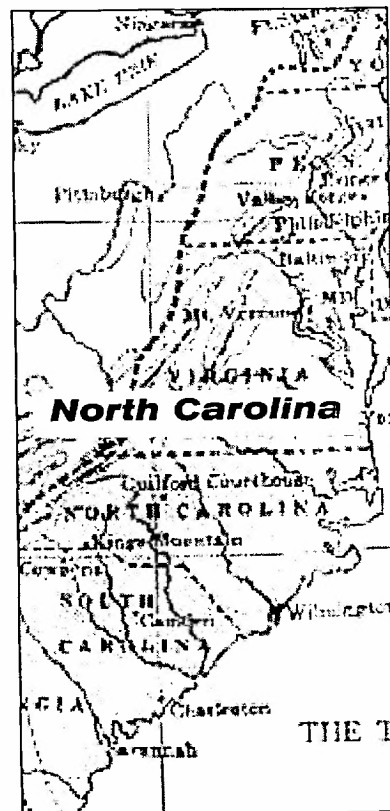
Ulster County, New York Probate Records in the County Clerk's Office at Kingston, New York, by Gusave Anjou, published in Baltimore by the Genealogical Publishing Company in 1996.

1745-1825

He was a member of the committee of safety of Rowan County in 1775, and the same year was commissioned a captain in the colonial army. In 1779, he joined Generals Rutherford and McDowell in South Carolina. During the summer of 1780, and at the battle of King's Mountain, as a major of the "Lincoln County Men," he rendered heroic service. In 1781, he opposed Lord Cornwallis' invasion of North Carolina and, for gallantry and efficient conduct, was promoted to colonel; the following year he was made brigadier general. He was a state senator 1788-1795, and a founder and one of the original trustees of the University of North Carolina. He was elected to the sixth congress of the United States (March 4, 1799-March 3, 1801), and when the election of president of the United States devolved upon the House of Representatives, his vote helped elect Thomas Jefferson over Aaron Burr.

Submitted by Mrs. Hubert Franklin Guthrie

Mrs. Hubert Franklin Guthrie (Ann Kathleen Wheeler); Northport

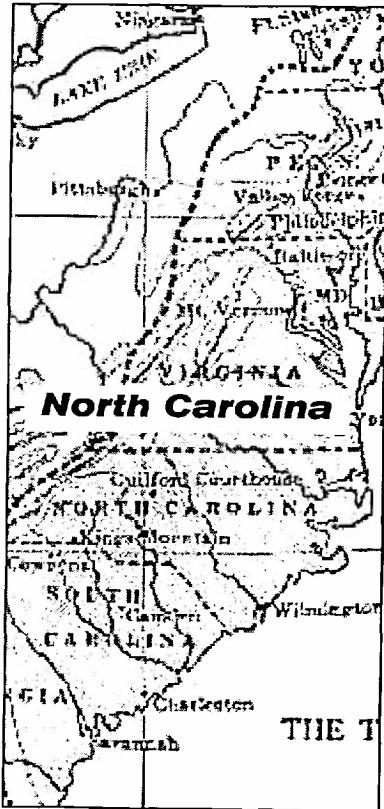


*The Biographical Dictionary of the
Tennessee General Assembly, Volume I,*
by Robert McBride and Dan Robison,
published in Nashville by The
Tennessee State Library and Archives
and The Tennessee Historical
Commission in 1975.

69

In Grateful Remembrance
HENRY DOWNS

1728-1798



Henry Downs signed the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence on May 20, 1775. The document was an effort of the Scotch-Irish to oppose British authority. It was signed by twenty-seven prominent citizens of Mecklenburg County, from all walks of life, and had great influence in Charlotte, North Carolina's colonial history.

Born on May 5, 1728 in Pennsylvania to Henry Downs, Sr. and Lady Jane Douglas, Henry moved as a young child with his father to Orange County, Virginia. His mother apparently died soon after he was born.

In 1750, Henry married Frances Chew, daughter of Thomas Chew and his wife, Martha Taylor. The couple settled in Mecklenburg, North Carolina, where they raised a large family. A surveyor of lands who also served as tax assessor and as justice of the peace, Downs was a captain in the colonial militia that fought against the Indians in 1763. When Charlottetown (now Charlotte) was chosen as county seat, Henry Downs was selected as one of the commissioners.

His religious ties were with the Providence Presbyterian Church in southern Mecklenburg County, where he and his wife owned large tracts of land. When he was a young man, he was presented to the grand jury of Orange County for "Sabbath-breaking by traveling with a loaded horse to the Shenardosh". He must have been acquitted, as there is no record of his being fined or imprisoned.

Henry Downs died at the age of seventy, having lived long enough "to see his country free and to enjoy the blessings of a well-spent life," cites Mecklenburg historian, George W. Graham. Also according to Graham, "One correspondent speaks of 'Henry Downs of precious memory,' indicative of his worthy character and the good name that he left behind him." He and his wife are buried in the Providence Presbyterian churchyard located twelve miles from Charlotte, North Carolina.

Submitted by Mrs. Charles Averet Stakeley

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Charles Averet Stakeley (Winifred Hutcheson Lightfoot); Montgomery

SOURCES:

Lives and Times of the 27 Signers of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence of May 20, 1775, by Victor C. King, published in Charlotte, NC, in 1956.

The Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence May 20, 1775, by George W. Graham, published in New York and Washington by The Neale Publishing Company in 1905.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

FRANCIS DRAKE

c. 1615-1687

Francis Drake was born about 1615 in Devonshire, England. He was probably the great-nephew of the British admiral, Sir Francis Drake (c. 1546-1596), although some claim that he was a direct descendent of this colorful character. Whichever is true, this Francis Drake was significant in his own right.

In 1646, Drake was one of twenty-one persons to sign an agreement to have a committee lay out land in Portsmouth, Rockingham County, New Hampshire, making him one of the first settlers in that area. He married Mary Walker, the daughter of George Walker, about 1650 in Portsmouth. (Mary was born about 1625 in County Meath, Ireland, and died July 29, 1688, in Piscataway, New Jersey.) They settled in an area called Olde Strawberry Bank, a neck between two creeks that grew to become Portsmouth. Their children were Elizabeth, George, and John.

Records show that Francis Drake served on a grand jury in Norfolk County in 1663. That same year, he and Nathaniel Drake were surveyors of highways. He became estranged from his neighbors because he had become a Baptist and in 1665, signed a petition to the Commission for Affairs of New England in America (the governing body of the English colonies in America) and to the King, asking that Portsmouth be removed from the Massachusetts Bay Colony, which was known for its rigid Puritanism and governed the territories to the north with a heavy hand.

Receiving no relief, and unable to bear the conditions any longer, Francis and Mary disposed of their Great Bay property, and within two years, the family had moved to Piscataway, in Middlesex County, New Jersey, where they were among the first settlers. Their only daughter married there in December of 1670. In 1675, three hundred acres of land were allotted to the Drake family, and later that year, on July 15, Francis was made captain of the township militia. He acquired another two hundred acres of property in March of 1677 or 1678. By 1682, Francis Drake was Justice of the Peace and Judge of Middlesex County. He died in Piscataway on September 24, 1687.

Submitted by Mrs. Robert Houston Young, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Kennedy Lowder (Margaret Elizabeth Berry); Montgomery

Mrs. Michael Harlow Luckett (Laura Compton Cates); Montgomery

SOURCES:

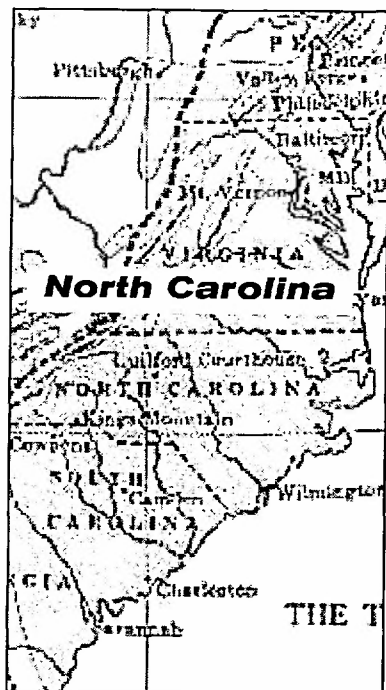
History of Piscataway Township, by Walter C. Meuly, published by the Piscataway Bicentennial Commission in 1976.

Ye First Settlers of Ye Plantation of Piscataway and Woodbridge, by Ora Monette, published in San Diego in 1930-1935.



In Grateful Remembrance **GEORGE DURANT**

1632-1692



Born in England to William Durant and Alice Pell, Durant was in Northumberland County, Virginia, before July 4, 1658. From there he moved to Nansemond County. He was associated with Nathaniel Batts, a fur trader, and with Richard Batts, a sea captain. Together, the three explored the Albemarle Sound area of Virginia.

In August of 1661 Durant purchased, in the second oldest recorded deed of the area, land from Cisketando, king of the Yeopim Indian tribe. In March of the following year, a second purchase was made from the Yeopims. By 1662, Durant was living on his property, known as Durant's Neck in Perquimans County, North Carolina, on Albemarle Sound. The plantation was known as Wicocombe, and the house served as an inn; its exact location is now a mystery.

George Durant was one of the most influential men in Perquimans County, if not the colony. He is sometimes called the "Father of North Carolina;" indeed he established Wicocombe before Carolina became a formal English province, in the initial charter issued in 1663, and amended in 1665. He served as attorney general and as speaker of the House of Burgesses.

A mariner by profession, George Durant was a leader of Culpepper's Rebellion, a protest against the British requirement that all colonial goods be transported in British ships. Durant was arrested and imprisoned for openly opposing Seth Sothel, one of the eight Lords Proprietors sent by the British to oversee the colony. When Sothel confiscated two thousand acres from Durant, the residents of the Albemarle area rose in Durant's defense and banished Sothel.

Durant's wife and the mother of eight children, Ann Marwood Durant, achieved a measure of independence unknown to most women of her time. Because her husband was often off at sea, she ran the plantation and often hosted political dignitaries. Court trials were usually held in private homes during Carolina's proprietary period, and hers was often chosen. A set of stocks was even erected on the grounds. Ann became comfortable with legal matters, and on May 25, 1673, she represented a seaman, Andrew Ball, for wages he had not received. It is believed that she acted as attorney for her husband, as he empowered her to bring suit and collect debts due him, as well as recover property. Records show that Ann also appeared in court on her own behalf in suits involving debts. Her debts obviously were connected with the operation of Wicocombe as an inn, which included the services of sewing, arranging funerals, attending the sick, providing beverages, food, and clothing, as well as accommodations.

Note: The Durant family Bible is one of the oldest English Bibles in the United States. Printed in 1599, it was brought by Durant to the New World. It is displayed in a locked cabinet at the University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill.

Submitted by Mrs. Charles Trueheart Clayton, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Charles Trueheart Clayton, Jr. (Louise Harrison Bradford); Birmingham

SOURCES:

"Ann Marwood Durant," by Mattie Erma E. Parker in the *Dictionary of North Carolina Biography, Volume 2*, published in Chapel Hill by the University of North Carolina Press in 1986.

History of Perquimans County, by Ellen Goode Rawlings Winslow, published in Baltimore by Baltimore Regional Publishing Company in 1971.

The North Carolina Historical and Genealogical Register, Volume I, by J.R.B. Hathaway, published in Washington, D.C., by the Southern History Association in January 1900.

Wikipedia.com

SAMUEL EARLE III

1692-1771

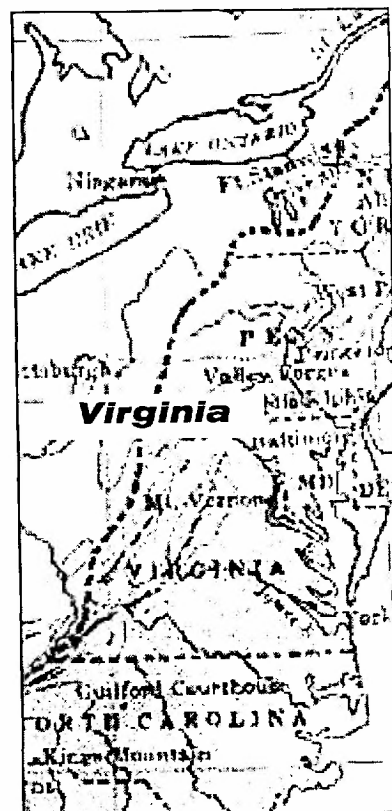
Samuel Earle III, affectionately called "our tired ancestor" because of all the Colonial Dames who have joined through his lineage, was born in 1692 in Westmoreland County, Virginia. The firstborn of five children, he was the only son of Samuel Earle II (born 1662, Westmoreland County, died August 6, 1746), a planter and a surveyor, and his wife, Phillis Bennett (born 1766).

Upon finishing his formal education at The College of William and Mary, Samuel III managed the four hundred acres at Aquia Creek that his father owned near their original *Yeocomico* plantation, in addition to the 450 acres at Falmouth that young Samuel purchased for himself in 1725. His father deeded him the Aquia Creek parcel plus two hundred acres of the *Yeocomico* plantation, along with livestock and slaves, at the time of his marriage on May 5, 1726. His bride was Anna Sorrell (born 1707, died 1748), the recently-orphaned youngest of the seven children of Elizabeth Ocanny (died 1725) and Thomas Sorrell (died February 1726), a planter who also served as a clerk of Westmoreland County for some time. Thomas's Sorrell ancestors were Huguenots who had left France for England in the late sixteenth century.

Anna Sorrell and Samuel Earle III became the parents of seven children: Samuel Earle IV (born 1727, died 1752); Anna Sorrell Earle Buck (born c.1728); Baylis Earle (born August 8, 1734); Colonel John Earle (born June 5, 1737, died November 24, 1815); Rachel Earle Neville (born 1740); Hannah Earle Wilcox (born c.1742); and Lettice Earle Neville (born 1744).

While he continued to manage his agricultural holdings and to acquire additional land and property, Samuel was also an attorney. He served in a variety of church, commercial, and public offices throughout his long and active adult life. He became a justice at Prince William court in 1738, and was named an inspector of tobacco at the Falmouth warehouse in 1739. He was appointed a commissioner to oversee necessary road construction to serve the newly-founded town of Winchester. Elected one of the first three representatives from the then frontier Frederick (now Warren) County, he served in the Virginia House of Burgesses from 1742 through 1748. He built a still and a grist mill to serve himself and his neighbors in Frederick County, and eventually became licensed to operate Earle's Ford, a ferry across the Shenandoah that provided convenient access to Earle's Mill. He was elected to the first vestry of Frederick Parish in 1744, and was named a church warden in 1751. In 1747 he was made high sheriff of Frederick County. He became a major of horse in the colonial militia regiment organized by Lord Fairfax in 1749 to protect the frontier settlers from the Indians and the French.

By the time of the French and Indian War, Samuel had left the frontier country of Frederick County to return to his Aquia Creek plantation in Stafford County. Widowed since Anna's death at forty-one in 1748, Earle remarried in his sixty-second year on January 13, 1754, to Elizabeth Holdbrook (born 1733). She was about forty-one years his junior, younger than his oldest children. Her parents were Jeannette and Randolph Holdbrook. The couple's first child was born later that same year. In all, his second wife bore Samuel seven children, bringing his total progeny to fourteen. There appears to be some understandable confusion about the total, since his firstborn child by Anna and his fourth child by Elizabeth were both named Samuel IV. (The first Samuel Earle had died in 1752, leaving a son, Samuel V, born in 1750.) The children of the second family were: Theodicia Earle Compton (b. 1764); Elizabeth Earle Elkins (b. 1756); Mary Ann Earle



In Grateful Remembrance

Byrne Overall (born 1758, died 1830); Samuel Earle IV (born 1760—ten years later than his nephew, Samuel V); Colonel Elias Earle (born 1764); Esaias Earle (born 1764); and Ezias Earle (born 1767).

Samuel Earle III died in Virginia in 1771; his place of burial is variously listed as unknown and as Warren County, Virginia. Elizabeth survived him. The next year she married Joseph Byrne (Burns), who had been co-executor with her of Samuel's estate. Their daughter, Nancy Holland Earle Burns was born on December 4, 1773. Upon Joseph Byrne's death, Elizabeth Holdbrook Earle Byrne married for the third time, to Edward Rogers.

All of Samuel Earle III's male children but Ezias were soldiers in the American Revolution. His grandson, Johnny Baylis Earle (born October 23, 1766, died 1836), son of John Earle and Thomasine Prince, served as a drummer boy in his father's regiment. After its poor performance in the War of 1812, the South Carolina legislature reorganized the state's militia. The then-Colonel John Baylis Earle, a South Carolina native, was made its Adjutant and Inspector General, charged with training and equipping the troops. He was promoted to the rank of brigadier general and has become known in the family tree as General John Baylis Earle. His father's name has come down as Colonel John Earle.

SOURCES:

History and Genealogy of the Earles of Seacaucus, by the Reverend Isaac Newton Earle, published in Marquette, Michigan by Geulft Printing Company in 1924.

"The Venturers," by Virginia Meynard in *Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography*, Volume I, No. IV, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1981.

Submitted by Mrs. William George Sherling

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Claude Leon Buerger Jr. (Caroline Purvis Ellis); Theodore
Mrs. Thomas Oliver Coleman (Katherine Irwin Grubb); Montgomery
Mrs. George Roland Dreher (Elizabeth Martin Haynes); Birmingham
Mrs. John Howard Joyce (Rosa Miller Hobbs); Selma
Mrs. William A. Krusen (Dorothy Davis Gray); Tampa, Florida
Mrs. Dorothy Haynes Miller (Dorothy Gray Haynes); Birmingham
Mrs. John Reese Murray (Mary Earle Bradley); Birmingham
Mrs. William George Sherling (Sarah Ellen Joyce); Auburn
Mrs. William Daniel Tyler (Patricia Earle Buerger); Tampa, Florida

Biographies of Our Ancestors
FRANCIS EPES

1657*-1720*

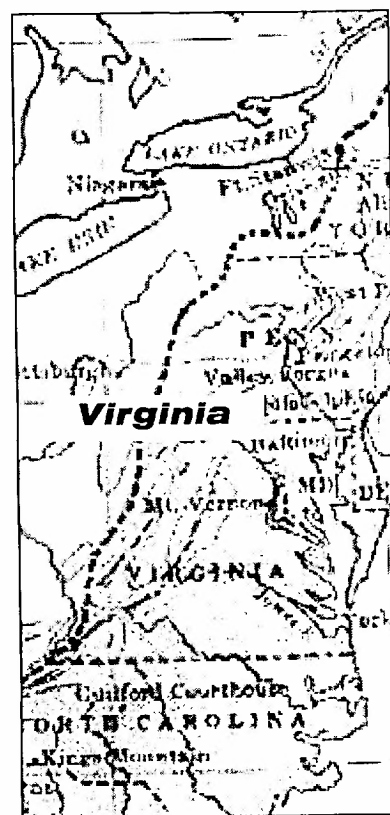
Arms, Per fess gules, and/or a pale counter charge. Three eagles displayed of the last Crest. Three eagles displayed of the last Crest: On a chaplet veet flowered or a falcon rising of the last: thus is the family crest of "Eppe of Canterbury Kent" described by early English heraldic writers. Indeed, the first Epes to emigrate to the New World, Lieutenant Colonel Francis Epes II, was frequently painted with his favorite hawk (falcon) upon his wrist. In 1636 he obtained a grant of land for the transportation of himself, his three sons, and thirty slaves to the Virginia Colony.

The Epes property was located on the southeastern shore of the James River, near the mouth of the Appomotox (Appomattox) River. The Appomotox served as the line between the southern halves of Henrico and Charles River Counties, both of which spanned the James River. The property remained in the Epes family until 1979, when the National Park Service gained ownership. At that time it was reported to be the oldest plantation in the hands of the descendants of the original owners. The home is built on a point of land that extends into a broad expanse of water; the first house was torn down in 1751 and the materials from it used to build the second house, which still stands. The British set it on fire during the Revolution, but the blaze was extinguished before much damage was done; many bullet holes from that incident remain in the house. During the War Between the States, General Grant had about sixty cabins built as wards for the wounded Yankee soldiers; they were torn down prior to World War I.

Francis Epes (1657-1720) was the only child of Lieutenant Colonel Francis Epes II and his first wife, Elizabeth Worsham, whose maiden name was Littlebury, and who was the widow of William Worsham. He married Anne Isham, daughter of Henry Isham and Katherine Banks Royal. Francis and Anne had seven children: Isham (b. 1681, d. 1709); Francis, William, Anne, Sara (who married William Poythress, Elizabeth (married Henry Randolph); and Mary (married William Randolph, nephew of Henry Randolph).

Francis Epes was sworn in as justice of the peace for Henrico County on June 1, 1683, then became sheriff in 1685 and again in 1686. By October 12, 1688, he had acquired the title of Captain. Epes served as sheriff in 1700, 1710, and 1711. He was a Burgess for Henrico County in 1691-92, 1693, 1702/3-1705 and 1705-6. He was commissioned to take subscriptions toward the establishment of William and Mary College in 1690; the college was chartered in 1693 in Williamsburg.

Francis Epes and his brother-in-law, William Randolph, were trustees of Bermuda Hundred, the first incorporated town in English America, having been established in 1613 and named by John Rolfe for the similarity of its mimosa trees to Bermuda's Royal Poinciana trees. ("Hundred" is a colonial English term used to define a jurisdiction of one hundred families.) Epes and Randolph had married sisters, daughters of Henry Isham of Bermuda Hundred; subsequently, Epes became known as Francis Epes of Bermuda Hundred. (See Glossary: Bermuda Hundred.)



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCE:

*Ancestors and Descendants of Francis
Epes I of Virginia (Epes,
Eppes, Epps), Volume One*, edited by
John Frederick Dorman,
published by the Society of the
Descendants of Francis Epes I
of Virginia in 1992.

Since 1636, when Lieutenant Colonel Francis Epes obtained his first land grant, four descendants in lineal succession were named Francis Epes. The spelling of the surname has been inconsistent, varying from Epes, to Eppes, to Epe, or Eppe. Notwithstanding the various spellings, from this lineage are descendants of the Royal, Archer, Robertson, Jefferson, Fields, Kennon, and many early Virginia families.

**NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1659-1719.*

Submitted by Mrs. Elizabeth Allen Callaway and Mrs. William James Samford III

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Elizabeth Allen Callaway (Elizabeth Rives Allen); Point Clear

Mrs. William James Samford III (Nell Vickers Allen); Opelika

WILLIAM FARRAR I

1594* - 1637

William Farrar was born in 1594 in England (County York). He came to the New World on the *Neptune* via a long and arduous passage that departed London on March 16, 1618, and continued for sixteen perilous weeks. Sickness was a constant companion, and the director of the voyage, Lord DeLaWare, was returning to Virginia to be its governor, but died on the ship. Finally, in August, the *Neptune* made landfall in Virginia. William Farrar's grant was for one hundred acres on the Appomattox River, at Henrico Towne, Charles City County, about three miles from where it flows into the Charles River. Henrico Island was eventually re-named Farrar's Island. Farrar's land holdings eventually grew to two thousand acres.

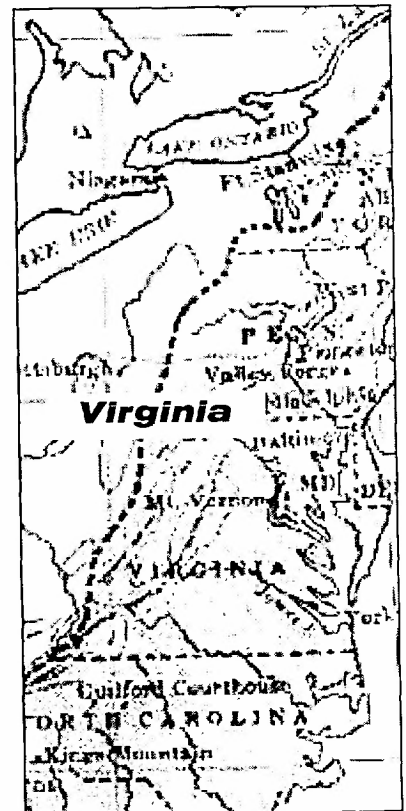
The Great Massacre of March 12, 1622, saw "slain at Mr. Farrah's house Master John England and his man John Bell; Henricke Peterson, Alice his wife, William his son, Thomas his man, James Wardlaw, Margaret and Elizabeth, maidservants." William Farrar sought refuge, with other survivors, at the home of his neighbor, Mrs. Samuel Jordan, owner of *Jordan's Journey* on the James River. He remained at *Jordan's Journey* for at least two, possibly four years.

Mr. Jordan was married to Cecily Bayly Jordan, who had come over on the *Swan* in 1610; he died in March of 1623, almost a year after the Great Massacre. The Reverend Greville Pooley, minister of the Parish of Fleur Dieu Hundred, near *Jordan's Journey*, read the burial service. Four days later, he wooed the widow, and thought he had been accepted. However, Mrs. Jordan went before the governor and council and formally contracted herself to marry Mr. William Farrah. The parson, undaunted, went before the council to state his claim, but was finally persuaded to drop the case. The Reverend Pooley signed an agreement freely acquitting Mrs. Jordan from her former promises.

This was the first recorded breach of promise suit in this country. Reverend Pooley, in his joy at having won her hand, had boasted of his good fortune, which Mrs. Jordan resented, saying he would have fared better had he not revealed it, for she had not wanted her engagement announced so soon after her husband's death. William Farrah married Cecily Bayley-Jordan prior to May 2, 1625, when his bond as overseer of her deceased husband's estate was canceled. The marriage produced three children: Cecily, William, and John.

William Farrar was given a position of great responsibility when, on March 4, 1625/6, Charles I appointed him a member of the king's council. He served during the critical period from 1625 to 1635, when many laws were passed and the representative form of government took firm root. On August 6, 1626, he was also made Commissioner of the Upper Partes, according to the following decree:

Monthlie Courtes to be kept above Percies hundred shal be kept at the discretion of Mr. William ffarrar, one of his Majesty's Councill of State, either at Jourdan's Journey Or Shirley Hundred.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

- Adventurers of Purse and Person, Virginia 1607-1624/5*, edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.
- Captain Smith's Travels and Works*, edited by Edward Arber, published in Edinburgh in 1910.
- The Farrar's Island Family and its English Ancestry*, by Alvahn Holmes, published in Baltimore by Gateway Press, Inc. in 1977.
- Genesis of the United States*, by Alexander Brown, published in Virginia by Houghton, Mifflin & Co. in 1890.
- The History of Henrico County*, by Louis H. Manarin and Clifford Dowdey, published in Charlottesville, VA, by University Press of Virginia in 1985.
- Minutes of the Council and General Court of Colonial Virginia, 1622-1623*, edited by Henry Read McIlwaine, published in Richmond, VA, by The Colonial Press, Everett Waddy Company in 1924.
- The Original Lists of Persons of Quality—Emigrants, Religious Exiles, Political Rebels 1601-1700*, edited by John Camden Hotten, published originally in London in 1874 and reprinted in New York by Empire State Book Company in 1931.
- Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VII, VIII, IX, and X. Virginia Vetusta*, by Edward Duffield Neill, published in Albany, NY, by Joel Munsell's Sons in 1888.

Farrar attended quarterly court at Jamestown and was closely associated with the governor, councilors, and burgesses. He died in 1637 at the age of 43.

*NSCDA *Register of Ancestors* lists 1583.

Submitted by Mrs. James Edward Park, Jr. and Mrs. James Buford Boone, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Buford Boone, Jr. (Jane Carolyn Farrior); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. James Edward Park, Jr. (Charlotte Cammack McEachin); Huntsville
Mrs. Clyde Everette Rivers (Elizabeth Anne Porter); Selma

NICHOLAS FAULCON, JR.

1735 -1793

Nicholas Faulcon, Jr. was born in Surrey County, Virginia, in 1735, the son of Nicholas Faulcon. The Faulcon family was prominent in Surrey County for many generations.

With his first wife, Lucy Wyatt, Nicholas had two daughters, Elizabeth (born 1774), who married Samuel Alston, and Rebecca Emily (born 1777), who married James Harris Fitts. Lucy died around 1788, and Nicholas later married Elizabeth Cocke, the widow of John Harwell Cocke, with whom he had four more children.

Faulcon was a lieutenant in the colonial militia in 1764, and captain of the Surrey militia from March 1775 through 1781. He served as justice of county court from May 11, 1770 to December 12, 1771. He was a member of the House of Burgesses from 1773 through 1775. On May 27, 1774, he signed, along with eighty-nine other members of the House, a resolution listing acts of the British parliament considered to be infringements of the rights of American colonists:

TEA...is charged with a duty, imposed by Parliament...without the consent of the people, it ought not to be used by any person who wishes well to the...rights and liberty of British America.

The signers included George Washington, Thomas Jefferson, and John Talbot.

A specific description of the location of Faulcon's home can be found in a brief item from the *Virginia Gazette* of December 20, 1776:

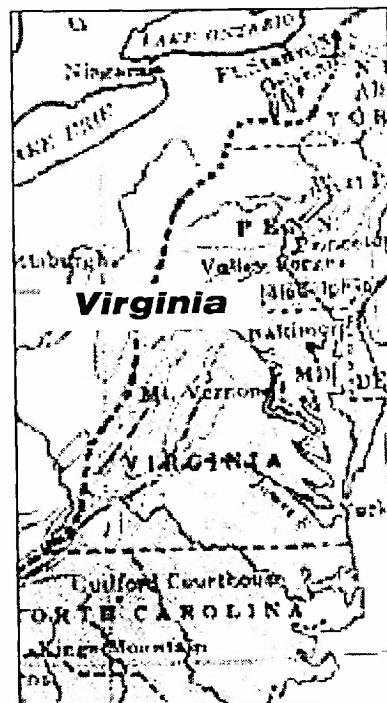
John Hawkins, Quartermaster, ordered "The Gentleman of North Carolina from whom I purchased hogs, are to deliver them to Captain Nicolas Faulcon on the road three miles below Cobham."

However, Nicholas Faulcon, Jr. did not remain in Cobham all his life; he moved to Southampton in his last years and died there in 1793.

Submitted by Miss Mary Fitts Bennett

DESCENDANTS:

Miss Mary Fitts Bennett; Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Edward Lyle Cain (Warren Leach Bailes); Birmingham
Mrs. William Minge Cochrane (Mary Kate Jamison); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Edward Veston Colvin (Mary Emily Rogers); Birmingham
Mrs. Emily Cochrane Jamison (Emily Leach Cochrane); Tuscaloosa



SOURCES:

The Alston and Allstons of North and South Carolina, by Joseph A. Groves, published in Atlanta by Franklin Printing and Publishing Company in 1901.

John Williston Talbot, by Farris W. Womack, posted in 1999, revised in 2004 at www.geocities.com/fww64/johntalbot.htm

Justices of Peace of Colonial Virginia 1757, 1775. Bulletin from Virginia State Library.

Southside Virginia Families, by John Bennett Bodie, published in Redwood City, CA, by Pacific Coast Publishers in 1955.

Virginia Gazette, April 1, 1773; December 20, 1776.

In Grateful Remembrance **HENRY FELDER**

c.1725-1781*

In a petition to the General Assembly, Henry Felder, Jr. paints a poignant picture of Revolutionary life in South Carolina's back country. He recounts not only his own experiences, but also those of his father, Captain Henry Felder, and those of his brother, John. In personal terms, the Revolution cost Felder his father, his brother, and his family home. In his 1786 petition, he seeks redress for his economic losses, for his father's economic losses, for the support of his father's young children, and for the support of his brother's family. In 1786, the South Carolina General Assembly recommended a payment of 130 English pounds to reimburse Felder for his cattle, and they paid him for a bay horse taken for military use, but failed to provide for his other requests.

Captain Henry Felder and his son, Henry Jr., both served in the South Carolina legislature. The senior Felder was elected to the second provincial congress, the first state general assembly, and the second state general assembly (1775-1778). He was the son of Hans Heinrich and Ursula Felder and emigrated from Switzerland to Orangeburg District in 1735. Between 1760 and 1775, Henry Felder received grants to more than two thousand acres in the district. Most of his land lay along the Edisto River, and he was one of the commissioners appointed by the legislature to make the Edisto River navigable.

Henry Felder married twice. On December 15, 1747, he married Mary Elizabeth Shaumloffel, with whom he had eight children—Henry Jr., Jacob, John, Frederick, Samuel, Abraham, Peter, and Mary Elizabeth. Mary Elizabeth died around 1761, and Henry married Anne Catherine Snell about two years later. Anne Catherine gave Henry at least six children—Ann Margaret, Rebecca, Catherine, Rachel, David, and Barzelia.

During the Revolutionary War, Felder served as a militia captain under Lieutenant Colonel Christopher Rowe in Colonel William Thomson's Orangeburg Regiment. As was the tradition, seven of his sons—Henry, Jacob, John, Frederick, Samuel, Abraham, and Peter—served in his militia company. They had a successful engagement with a force of Tories near Holman's Bridge on the South Edisto River. He also helped General Thomas Sumter when Sumter attacked Orangeburg with a strength that forced the British garrison to surrender on May 11, 1781.

On September 23, 1778, Felder placed a notice in the *Gazette of the State of South Carolina* saying that on September 3 his house had been "plundered and burnt," and "all his papers either burnt or destroyed." According to one account, when Felder was warned of an upcoming Tory attack in 1781, he fortified his rebuilt house, armed his sons and overseer, and together they repulsed the enemy. He then dispatched his sons to ambush the Tories as they were retreating. The Tories, however, returned, set fire to the Felder home, and wounded Felder mortally as he fled the burning house. At Felder's death, his son Henry assumed command of the militia company.

Henry Felder, Jr. was born on September 8, 1748 and baptized on September 25. He married Margaret Stoudemire; they had six children: Henry, Harriet, Samuel, Ann L., Rebecca, and Lewis. They lived on the Santee River in Orangeburg District. During his lifetime he accumulated 880 acres, five lots in the town of Orangeburg, and twenty-one slaves. He died on February 10, 1803.

By his account, in addition to his Orangeburg militia service, Henry Felder, Jr. enlisted with Colonel Charles Myddleton in 1781. His life of public service included being justice of the peace in 1784, commissioner of the roads for Orange Parish, and commissioner to repair and rebuild the courthouse and jail in Orangeburg. He served in the South Carolina



Biographies of Our Ancestors

General Assembly 1782-1786 and 1792-1794. In 1791, he contested the role of election manager Samuel Rowe, alleging that Rowe and his appointee had read the ballots and discarded those they "did not like." The House Committee on Privileges and Elections found no impropriety, but recommended that any "opening of votes" be discouraged. In the contested election, Rowe was the successful candidate for the South Carolina House of Representatives.

*NSCDA *Register of Ancestors* lists 1780.

*Submitted by Mrs. Harry Edward Myers, Jr.
and Mrs. Henry Clay Barnett, Jr.*

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Henry Clay Barnett, Jr. (Katherine Hails Hutchinson); Montgomery
Mrs. Louis Brett Chambliss (Martha Jackson Myers); Dunwoody, Georgia
Mrs. Harry Edward Myers, Jr. (Mary Antoinette Jackson); Mobile

SOURCES:

*Biographical Directory of the
South Carolina House of
Representatives III, 1775-1790*, by
N. Louise Bailey and Elizabeth
Ivey Cooper, published in
Columbia, SC, by the University
of South Carolina Press in 1981.

*The History of Orangeburg County,
South Carolina*, by Alexander
S. Salley, Jr., published in
Baltimore by Regional Publishing
Company in 1978, a reprint of the
1898 edition.

Records of the Comptroller
General, Accounts Audited for
Revolutionary Service, AA2336.

*Roster of South Carolina Patriots in
the American Revolution*, by
Bobby Gilmore Moss, published in
Baltimore by Genealogical
Publishing Company in 1983.

*South Carolina Revolutionary
Battles—Part Six*, by Terry W.
Lipscomb, Jr., published by "Names
in South Carolina," a project of the
English Department of the
University of South Carolina,
Columbia, SC, Volume XXV,
Winter 1978.

*Unification of a Slave State: the Rise
of the Planter Class in the South
Carolina Backcountry, 1760 - 1808*,
by Rachel N. Klein, published in
Chapel Hill, NC, by University of
North Carolina Press for the
Institute of Early American
History and Culture in 1990.

In Grateful Remembrance
THOMAS GODWIN

b. unknown-1678

Family tradition says that originally two Godwin brothers came from England to Virginia. They were of different personalities: one was called "Ruffle-Shirt," and the other "Osnaburg." One was a sportsman and a "man about town," the other was a country gentleman. Tradition is not clear on which was which.

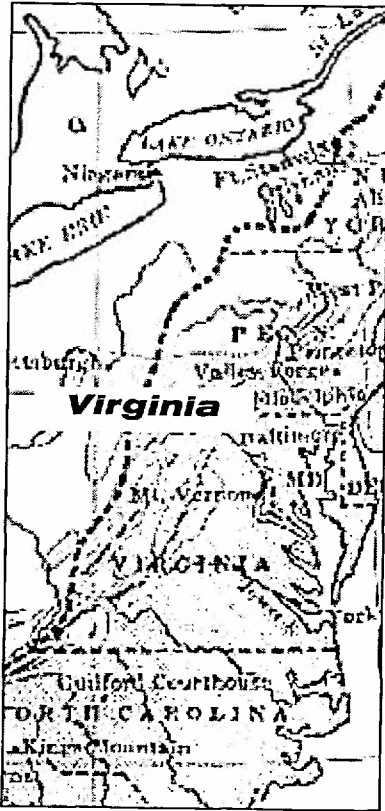
One of the brothers was named Thomas, and his name first appears on a land grant in Rappahannock County, Virginia, made to him and his partner Richard Exum in 1630. He eventually located in Nansemond County, Virginia, around Chuckatuck, and in 1655 Thomas Godwin obtained the first of many grants he would hold there and in Isle of Wight County. He is thought to have built the homestead, called Old Castle, which was on the border of Nansemond and Isle of Wight Counties. When a long-running dispute concerning the boundaries between the two counties was finally settled, it was deemed that Old Castle lay in Nansemond County (now the city of Suffolk).

A captain in the Virginia militia, Thomas Godwin Sr. appears as a burgess for Nansemond County for the first time in 1654, and served several additional terms. He was speaker of the Virginia House of Burgesses during Bacon's Rebellion in June of 1676, and was on the side of the majority of the burgesses who "were much infected with the principle of Bacon and...was notoriously a friend to all the treason and rebellion that distracted Virginia." (See Glossary: Bacon's Rebellion.)

Thomas Godwin Sr. was justice and coroner, and at the time of his death in 1678, colonel commandant (See Glossary: Colonel Commandant) of Nansemond County. In his will, he styles himself a "gentleman," and leaves a widow (but does not call her name) in addition to two sons, Thomas and Edmond, and a daughter, Elizabeth.

Thomas Godwin Jr. married Martha Bridger about 1679. She was the daughter of the Honorable Joseph Bridger of the Isle of Wight. Bridger, the most prominent man of his time in the county, dealt in land and also held many important offices, including a seat in the House of Burgesses. Joseph Bridger, as opposed to his son-in-law, was a staunch supporter of then-Governor Francis Nicholson, who thought that the colonies should be united under a single viceroy and share a standing army, a proposition most Virginians strongly opposed. Although the Godwins and the Bridgers were on opposite sides of the fence politically, the Godwins received their full share of Bridger's estate upon his death.

Thomas Godwin Jr. was sworn in as a burgess in 1699, but was soon ousted when a poll was taken to decide between Godwin and Thomas Milner, who had contested the election. Later, when Thomas Godwin Jr. had again been elected burgess, he spoke of some action of the governor in heated terms and was reprimanded by several other members. Both Thomas Jr. and his brother Edmond were members of the defiant vestry of Chuckatuck in 1682, who denied Governor Nicholson's right of induction. In 1705, Governor Nicholson had additional trouble with Thomas, who by this time was colonel commandant of the county, and removed him from office.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Thomas Godwin Jr.'s will was dated 1713 and probated in 1714. It mentions no slaves, only cattle, and leaves all his personal property to his wife for her life, with remains to go to the three youngest (of nine) children at her death.

Submitted by Mrs. Joseph Abbott Walker, Sr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Joseph Abbott Walker, Sr. (Mary Elizabeth Kilpatrick); Anniston

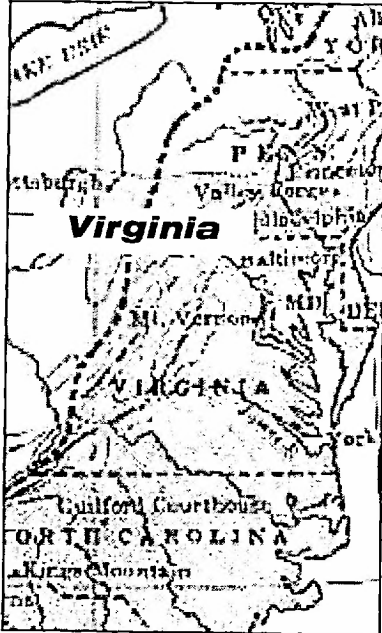
SOURCES:

History of the United States, Volume I, from the Discovery of the American Continent, by George Bancroft, published in New York by Oxford University Press in 2001.

Seventeenth Century Isle of Wight County, Virginia, by John Bennett Bodie, published in Chicago by Chicago Law Printing Company, in 1938. (Reprint available from Genealogical Publishing Company, Baltimore.)

In Grateful Remembrance **HENRY GOODLOE**

1675-1749



Henry Goodloe was the only son of George Goodloe, the immigrant to Virginia from Aspull, Lancastershire, England. Earlier spellings of the name include Gidlow, Goodlaw, and Gudlaw.

Henry was born in Christ Church Parish, Middlesex County, Virginia, in 1675. He was sworn in as justice of the peace for Spotsylvania County on July 5th, 1726.

He married Elizabeth (whose last name cannot be ascertained, but may have been Browning) in 1698. After his father's death, he moved his family to Spotsylvania County, Virginia, where he died in 1749, followed by Elizabeth in 1751.

In Henry Goodloe's will, proven May 2, 1749, he leaves his wife *during her lifetime only* his plantations, three slaves, one feather bed and furniture, three cows and calves, one iron pot and hooks, one pewter dish and three pewter plates. At his widow's death, his son Robert was to inherit the above-mentioned land and slaves, plus five more slaves.

His daughters, Elizabeth, Jane, and Catherine, were to inherit the personal estate left to his wife, with Elizabeth inheriting one slave, and her daughter Elizabeth inheriting one cow and calf, plus twelve pounds sterling in cash.

The third generation moved to Caroline County, Virginia, where they continued service to the state and the country. George Goodloe, son of Henry, was appointed a magistrate for Caroline County in 1734, justice of the quorum in 1735, and sheriff in 1736.

Submitted by Mrs. Reese Ewell Mallette III

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Reese Ewell Mallette III (Clara Ann Rutland); Birmingham

SOURCES:

Colonial Caroline, A History of Caroline County Virginia, by T.E. Campbell, published in Richmond, VA, by Dietz Press in 1954.

Goodloe Genealogy II, by Paul Miller Goodloe, published in Baltimore by Gateway Press in 1982.

Virginia County Court Records, Order Book Abstracts of Spotsylvania county, Virginia, 1724-1730, by Ruth and Sam Sparacio, published in McLean, VA, by The Ancient Press in 1990.

THOMAS GRAVES

b. unknown-d. 1635/6

Thomas Graves, Gentleman, arrived in Virginia in October of 1608, coming from England in the ship *Mary and Margaret* with Captain Christopher Newport's second supply. (See Glossary: Second Supply.) Thomas Graves was probably unmarried when he arrived in Virginia in 1608. He was young, and the prospect of adventure was probably the reason for his coming to the New World. He was obviously educated, of some social status and financial means, and a leader.

Thomas Graves was one of the original stockholders of the Virginia Company of London, and one of the very early settlers who founded Jamestown, Virginia. He was also the first known person named Graves in North America. He immediately became active in the affairs of the infant colony. On an exploring expedition he was captured by the Indians and taken to the Indian town of Opechancanough. Thomas Savage, who had come to Virginia with the first supply on the *John and Francis* in 1608, was sent to rescue him, and was successful. The title of captain was apparently conferred on Thomas Graves around this time.

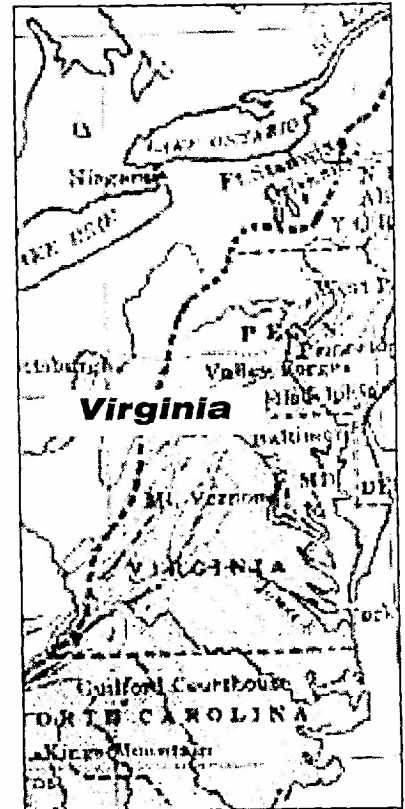
It is likely that he returned to England, possibly in October 1609, either on the same ship with Captain John Smith (who left Virginia for England for treatment of his wounds resulting from an explosion), or on one of the other seven ships that arrived in Virginia in August 1609. In that way he would have missed the "Starving Time" of the winter of 1609-10, which so few survived.

He may have then married in England in about 1610, fathered John Graves and Thomas Graves, and remained in England for several years. Although John Card Graves states that Thomas was accompanied in his 1608 arrival by his wife Katherine, sons John and Thomas, and eight others, including Henry Singleton and Thomas Edge, most other historians agree that he did not bring his wife and children over until later. It is likely that he did not even marry Katherine until 1610, and his first child was born about 1611.

The time of Captain Graves' move to the Eastern Shore of Virginia is not known. It was, however, after August 1619, since he was then a representative from Smythe's Hundred to the first meeting of the House of Burgesses. It was also prior to February 16, 1623, for "A List of Names: of the Living in Virginia, Feb. 16, 1623" shows Thomas Graves "at the Eastern Shore."

His patent for two hundred acres on the Eastern Shore is dated November 20, 1622. This land was in what was then known as Accomack (or Accawmacke, meaning "the across the water place" to the natives), now a part of Northampton County. In the census of February 1625, Captain Thomas Graves was one of only fifty-one people then living on the Eastern Shore. He was put in charge of the direction of local affairs later in 1625. In September 1632 he, with others, was appointed a commissioner for the "Plantation of Acchawmacke." He was one of the burgesses to the Assembly, representing Accomack, for the 1629-30 session and the 1632 session. He attended many of the meetings of the commissioners, but he was absent from December 30, 1632/3 until October 23, 1633/4. It appears that he was out of the country.

The old Hungars Episcopal Church is located about seven miles north of Eastville, on the north side of Hungars Creek. Hungars Parish was made soon after the county was established, and the first vestry meeting was on September 29, 1635, at which Captain Thomas Graves headed the list of those present.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-1624/5), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.

The First Seventeen Years: Virginia 1607-1624, by Charles E. Hatch Jr., published in Charlottesville, VA, by the University Press of Virginia in 1987.

"Genealogies of Virginia Families," *William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine, Volume II*, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1982.

<http://www.gravesfa.org/gen169.htm>

Captain Thomas Graves died between November 1635, when he was witness to a deed, and January 5, 1636, when suit was entered against a servant to Mrs. Graves. His birth date is not known, but is believed to be about 1580. That would have made him only about fifty-five years of age at his death.

Very little is known about Katherine, wife of Thomas Graves. Her maiden name may have been Croshaw. (There was a Raleigh Croshaw, Gent., who arrived with the second supply with Thomas Graves.) Just when she came to Virginia is not recorded. She and her children are not included in the 1625 census of the Eastern Shore, although Captain Thomas Graves is. The patent granted to John Graves (son of Captain Thomas Graves) on August 9, 1637 states that the six hundred acres granted to him in Elizabeth City was "due in right of descent from his father Thomas Graves, who transported at his own cost himself, Katherine Graves his wife, John Graves the patentee, and Thomas Graves, Jr., and 8 persons." The fifty acres assigned for each person transported shows they came after 1616. The other eight persons transported did not include any members of Captain Graves' family. The girls, Ann, Verlinda, and Katherine obviously came later, and Francis was born in Virginia. The last reference to Mrs. Graves shows her living at the Old Plantation, Accomack, as of May 20, 1636.

Since Captain Thomas Graves had been active in the affairs of Virginia from his arrival, the absence of any mention of him during certain periods indicate he had returned to England. Even a cursory reading of Northampton (formerly Accomack) records reveals how frequent were the trips to England, Ireland, Holland, and New England of those living on the Eastern Shore. The land patents show that Captain Thomas Graves made several trips out of the country, to England presumably, and on one of his return voyages his family accompanied him.

Also, there is no record of his being in Virginia after the meeting of the burgesses in July-August of 1619 until he is shown as living on the Eastern Shore in 1623. It seems reasonable that he was in England at the time of the Indian Massacre of March 1622, and upon returning to Virginia settled on the Eastern Shore, where it was less perilous to live. The fact that he fathered three children, the first three girls, during this period certainly lends support to his being in England.

*Submitted by Mrs. James Sommerville McLester French
and Mrs. Charles Eugene Maxwell*

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Sommerville McLester French (Mary Beverly Dunn); Birmingham
Mrs. Charles Eugene Maxwell (Emory Furniss); Arizona (daughter of Mrs. John Perkins
Furniss [deceased]; Selma)
Mrs. Paul Pressley McCain (Lucy Durr Dunn); Decatur

Biographies of Our Ancestors
JOSEPH GRAY

1707-1771*

Joseph Gray was born in 1707 in Surry County, Virginia. His parents were William Gray and Mary Holt, the daughter of Randall Holt and the widow of John Seward.

Joseph married Sarah Simmons on December 14, 1729. She was the daughter of John Simmons and Mary Cocke. Both Joseph and Mary were descended from families who came to America in the early 1600s and settled in Jamestowne, Virginia. They had nine children: William, Mary, Elizabeth, Anne, Sarah, John, Edwin, Peter, and James. Sarah Simmons Gray died in 1747, and in the following year Joseph married another woman named Sarah. The second marriage resulted in three children: Joseph, Lucy, and Jane.

Shortly after his second marriage, Joseph and his family moved to Isle of Wight County, Virginia, where he served as colonel of the militia and justice in 1749, sheriff in 1751, and as burgess from 1742 through 1749.

The Grays moved to Southampton County, Virginia after 1751. There he served as burgess from 1755 through 1769. He was also vestryman of Nottoway Parish.

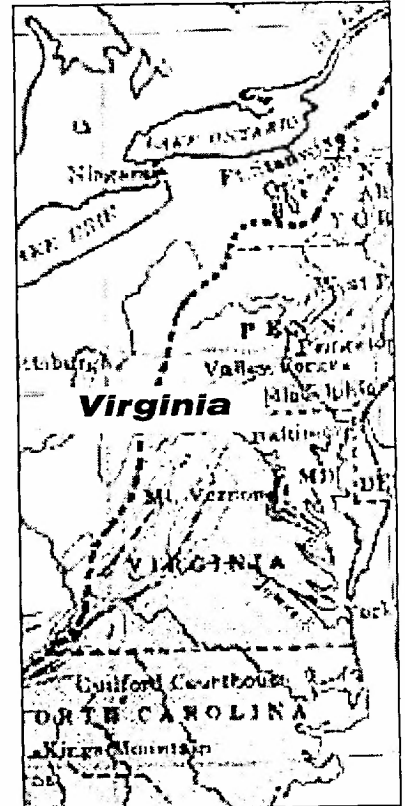
In his will dated August 30, 1769, Joseph left his plantation of 790 acres to his wife Sarah; 115 acres and a grist mill to his son James; and plantations of 1,060 acres and 640 acres to his son Edwin. The rest of his estate was divided equally among his other living children. Joseph Gray died in 1771.

*NSCDA *Register of Ancestors* lists 1769.

Submitted by Mrs. Erskine Ramsay

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Erskine Ramsay II (Laura Leigh Dean); Birmingham



SOURCES:

*Adventurers of Purse and Person:
Virginia (1607-1624/5)*, edited by
John Frederick Dorman, published in
Richmond, VA, by The Order of the
First Families of Virginia, Deitz
Press, in 2007.

Southampton County, Virginia, Will
Book 2.

In Grateful Remembrance **SAMUEL GREEN**

c.1707-1771



Samuel Green was born in Liverpool, England, around 1707. He immigrated to America and settled in the Cape Fear region near Wilmington, North Carolina. By his second wife, Hannah Mercer, he had seven children: Rebecca, Samuel, John, George, Mary, William and Hannah: the family lived in a lovely home called Greenfields. Samuel practiced medicine in Wilmington and served as a town commissioner in 1747.

The governor appointed Samuel Green a town alderman beginning in 1743, which meant that he had the responsibility of overseeing the building of public structures, such as workhouses, market houses, houses of correction, roads and bridges. Aldermen also saw to the levying of fines for letting unruly animals (goats, hogs, or headstrong horses) run loose, or for not having family water buckets, or for not keeping their fireplaces clean. They supervised the public whipping of slaves found playing or making noise.

Dr. Green died in Wilmington in 1771 and is buried at the old and historic St. James Episcopal Church there. In the churchyard cemetery his gravestone can be found bearing the inscription:

*Physician and Surgeon for 30 years.
A sincere friend lived in good esteem with mankind in general.*

Samuel's fifth son, William, is known for his colonial service. He was a lieutenant in Captain Taylor's Company of Sixth Regiment infantry in the Revolution, noted for his bravery and gallantry. He was in the Battle of Brandywine and was confined for some time on a prison ship in the Charleston, South Carolina, harbor.

Submitted by Mrs. Charles Owings Caddis

and Mrs. James Richard Williams

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Charles Owings Caddis (Marguerite Trent Douglass); Birmingham
Mrs. James Richard Williams (Florence Nicholson Douglass); Birmingham

SOURCES:

Genealogy of the Sharpless Family, by Gilbert Cope, published by the family in Philadelphia in 1887.

St. James Church records,
Wilmington, NC

The Wilmington Town Books, Donald B. Lennon and Ida Brooks Kellom, editors, published by the Division of Archives and History of Wilmington, NC, in 1978.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JOHN GRUBB

1652-1708

The Grubb family roots can be traced back to Denmark in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, although the family had distinguished itself as early as the tenth century. By the sixteenth century, Henry Grubbe, Esq., the direct ancestor of the American Grubbs, was residing in Cornwall, England. In the New World, the family became prominent through their holdings of agricultural and mining lands in the Delaware River valley of Delaware, southeastern Pennsylvania, and New Jersey.

John Grubb, the first member of the family in the Colonies, was a son of John and Helen Grubb. Arriving in America at age twenty-five, he hoped to restore his injured fortune, which had probably been decimated through his support of the Royal Cause. Along with William Penn, William Buffington, and others, he had signed the Plan of Government for the Province of West Jersey on March 3, 1676.

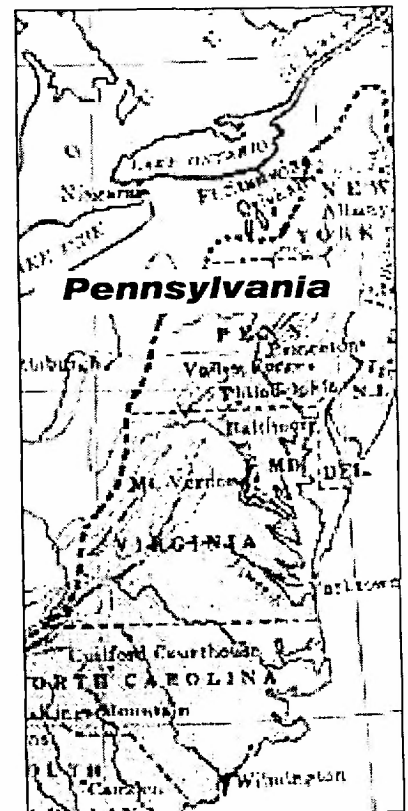
In 1677, he sailed from London on the ship *Kent*, arriving in Burlington, West Jersey. He was granted 340 acres of land on Chester Creek, and soon thereafter, around 1678, he married Frances Vane of Kent, daughter of Sir Henry Vane and Frances Wray. It appears that the couple lived until 1679 in Upland, when John acquired an additional six hundred acres of land at Brandywine Hundred, Delaware, where he erected a tannery. The place became known as Grubb's Landing, and by 1682, it was well-known as the first leather manufacturing site in Penn's Province. Grubb's Landing, which still exists as a town, was one of the first shipping points in New Castle County, Delaware, and later was one of the points of access to the colonies by British ships during the American Revolution.

John Grubb was made a colonial justice in 1693 and was elected to the colonial assembly twice. It has been said of him, "He came from that stock of men second to none on the face of the earth—the English country gentleman."

In 1703, John left Grubb's Landing and located in Marcus Hook, Pennsylvania, where he invested heavily in land in that state, as well as retaining his holdings in Delaware. He died in Pennsylvania in 1708, leaving his wife, Frances, and all nine of their children: Emanuel, John, Joseph, Henry, Samuel, Nathaniel, Peter, Charity, and Phebe. Emanuel appears to have been the first male child born of English parents in the new colony of Pennsylvania. Emanuel and his brother, John II, lived at *Stockton Plantation*, at Grubb's Landing, located on the original six hundred acres acquired by their father. The property would remain in the family for generations. The other children settled in Chester and Lebanon Counties, with Peter becoming a prominent ironmaster.

Prior to her father's death, Charity Grubb had married Richard Beeson, who appears to have been about sixty years of age and an Episcopalian rather than a Quaker.

Frances, the widow, married John's friend, Richard Buffington. Phebe married Richard Buffington, Jr., and, upon his death, Simon Hadly.



In Grateful Remembrance

Massachusetts

SOURCES:

Biographical and Genealogical Encyclopedia of Delaware, 2 vol., published in Chambersburg, PA, by J.M. Runk & Company in 1899.

Historical and Biographical Encyclopedia of Delaware, edited by J. M. McCarter and B.F. Jackson, published in Wilmington, DE, by Aldine Publishing and Engraving Company in 1882.

www.harrold.org/familytree/webtree2/109.htm

www.lib.udel.edu/ud/spec/findaids/grubb.htm

The Grubb family was very well connected, maintaining personal and marriage ties with other politically prominent families, such as the Bassetts, Talleys, Crawfords, and the Claytons. Later, in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, the family embraced the religion of the Society of Friends.

Submitted by Mrs. Robert William Bradford, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Robert William Bradford, Jr. (Nancy Kathleen McEntire); Montgomery

Mrs. William Inge Hill (Ilouise Partlow); Montgomery

Mrs. James O'Neal Mitchell (Katie Lou Pritchett); Decatur

Mrs. Robert Charles Morrow (Rosa Earle Partlow); Tuscaloosa

Mrs. Robert Smith Naftel (Margaret Nixon Partlow); Birmingham

Mrs. Jackson Roger Sharman Jr. (Mary Ellen Ashley); Birmingham

ROBERT HAIRSTON

c. 1719*-1783*

In Scotland the Hairstons were staunch Royalists, adherents to the Stuart dynasty, and they fled to Wales when William, Prince of Orange, seized power in 1688. They joined the Irish army to fight with Charles Edward, "The Pretender," in Scotland.

Peter Hairston, c. 1696-1780, of Dumfries, Scotland, came with four sons to America as early as 1730. His son, Robert (1719-1783), who became the progenitor of the Hairstons in America, lived in Bedford, Pittsylvania, and Franklin counties in Virginia.

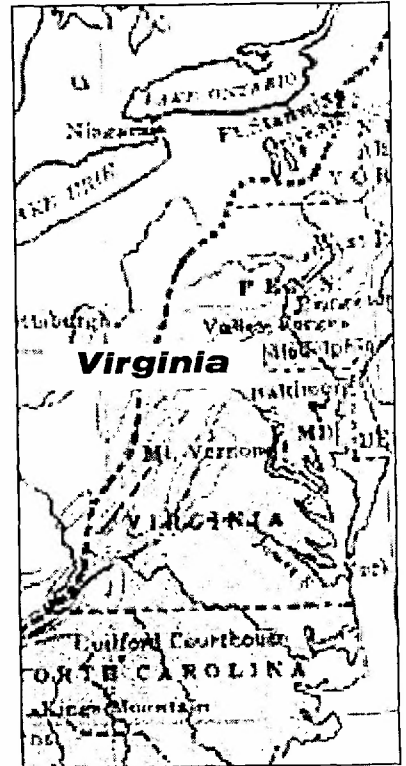
Robert married Ruth Stovall (1725-1808), daughter of George Stovall Sr., a captain in the Revolutionary War and clerk of the House of Burgesses. They moved immediately into their new home, *Marrowbone*, believed to be the oldest frame house in what is now Henry County. Built at a time when most people lived in log cabins, it had a graceful staircase, tall windows, ornamental woodwork, and smooth green lawns sloping down to Marrowbone Creek. (At the time of its construction, the residence was in Pittsylvania County, since Henry County was not created until 1776.)

Robert Hairston in 1753 was listed as lieutenant in the Bedford County militia, and in 1769 as captain in the Pittsylvania militia. He fought in the French & Indian Wars, and in 1774, he was named a justice in Pittsylvania County.

Robert and Ruth, who are buried at Runnet Bag in Franklin County, had six daughters and three sons, George, Peter, and Samuel. A family Bible entry signed by Peter lists his father's death date as 1783. It was at that time that *Marrowbone* came into the possession of the eldest son, George. It then descended from father to son to the fifth generation of George Hairstons.

George Hairston (1750-1825), who became the largest landowner in Virginia, was born in Lunenburg County and died at Martinsville. He married Elizabeth Perkins (1759-1818) of Henry County, daughter of Nicolas Perkins (1718-1762) and Betheny Harden (1719-post 1762). Elizabeth married first William Letcher who was killed by a Tory when their daughter, Bethenia Letcher, was three months old. This daughter married David Pannill and was the maternal grandmother of J.E.B. Stuart and great-grandmother of Henry C. Stuart, Governor of Virginia.

George Hairston served as captain in the Revolutionary Army in Colonel Abram Penn's regiment. Later, he was listed as a colonel. He donated fifty acres of land for the courthouse of Henry County and served in the Virginia legislature in 1798, was a brigadier general in the War of 1812, and became a justice of Henry County afterwards.



SOURCES:

The Cooleemee Plantation and Its People, by Judge Peter Wilson Hairston, published in Advance, NC, in 1986.

The Hairstons and Penns and Their Relations, by Elizabeth Seawell Hairston, published in Roanoke, VA, by Walters Printing and Manufacturing in 1940.

History of Henry County, Virginia, by Judith A. P. Hill.

The History of Pittsylvania County, Virginia, by Maud Carter Clement, published in Lynchburg, VA, by J.P. Bell Company in 1929.

In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES CONTINUED:

An Intimate History of the American Revolution in Pittsylvania County, Virginia, by Frances Hallam Hurt, published in Danville, VA, by Womack Press in 1976.

National Society of the Colonial Dames Registry of Ancestors, Alice Sloan, editor, published in Decorah, IA, in 1990.

Saura Town Bible Records of Hairston Family at Beaver Creek, Martinsville, VA.

Southern Historical Collection #3149, The Hairston and Wilson Family Papers, housed in the Manuscript Department at the Library of the University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill.

Related collections:

Elizabeth Hairston Papers, #1518

George Hairston Papers, #4477

Peter Wilson Hairston Papers, #299

Robert Hairston Papers, #11482

The Stories of Beaver Creek as Gleaned from Family Letters and Records, by Peter W. Hairston, privately printed in the USA in 2003.

The Stovall Family in America: Descendents of Bartholomew of Henrico County, Virginia, 1864, by Carmae Massey Smith, published in Houston, TX by D. Armstrong Company, Inc., in 1979.

Yalobusha Bound, Yalobusha County, Mississippi in 1850, by Chris Morgan, published by Yalobusha Valley Press in 1991.

Elizabeth Perkins Letcher and George Hairston, who are buried at their plantation home, *Beaver Creek*, in Martinsville, had twelve children. Family correspondence documents the westward movement of various Hairston family members and includes papers, correspondence, and documents of Colonel George Hairston, who established the family plantations in Virginia. These letters, documents, and account books describe George Hairston's business interests with associates and family members. Subjects are chiefly land, slaves, the problems of farming, kinds of crops raised, the westward migration of family members, details of family life, weaving, livestock raising, gardening, household production, financial and legal matters, slave lists and slave records, labor contracts with freedmen, and other family business in Virginia and the south.

*NSCDA *Register of Ancestors lists 1717-1791.*

Submitted by Mrs. George Fleming Maynard

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. George Fleming Maynard (Isabel Pointevent Barksdale); Birmingham
Mrs. Mark Powell Zabriski (Isabel Mims Maynard); Fort Washington, Pennsylvania

BENJAMIN HARRISON III

1673-1710

Benjamin Harrison III of Berkley was born in 1673. He married Elizabeth Burwell, daughter of Major Lewis Burwell, in 1693. It is not known where he was educated, but he was attorney general of the colony of Virginia from 1697 to 1702. He held many offices during his lifetime. He was a member of the House of Burgesses at the sessions of April 1704 and October 1705, and was speaker at the second session. He was treasurer of the colony from 1705 through 1710.

Harrison went to London in 1697 and appeared before the Committee on Trade and Plantations on behalf of Virginia. It was probably in view of this that he was admitted to the Inner Temple (see Glossary) on October 16, 1697. He found there a man named David Parke who was hostile to him, because Harrison's brother-in-law, Dr. Blair, was an old enemy of Parke's. Parke charged that, before coming to England, Harrison had gone to Scotland and illegally sold tobacco there. This could have spoiled Harrison's chances of becoming attorney general of Virginia. Even then the rumor mill was hard at work! However, as already stated, Harrison held not only the office of attorney general, but many others as well.

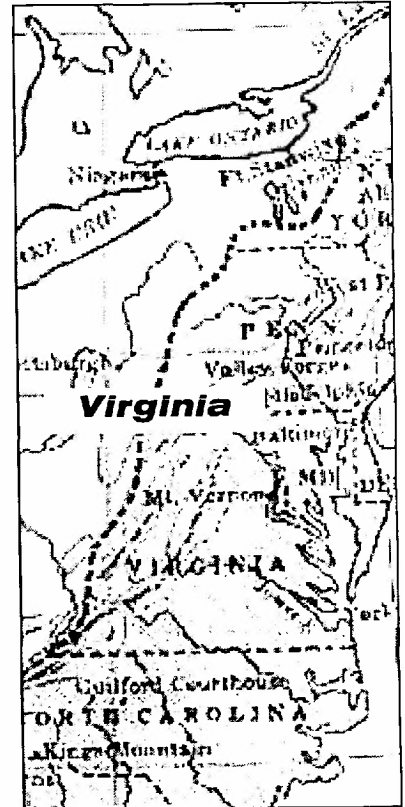
Benjamin Harrison III had a vast amount of land at the time of his death in 1710. Mrs. Harrison was authorized to sell, upon his death, about five thousand acres of land within the county of Surry. He also had holdings in the counties of Charles City, James City, and Prince George. Altogether, he owned around twenty thousand acres. He and his wife, Elizabeth, were buried in the old Westover churchyard, where their tombs remain. They had two children, Benjamin Harrison IV and Elizabeth.

Submitted by Mrs. Ian Rutherford

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Walter Bruckmann (May Beth Walker); Fairhope

Mrs. Ian Rutherford (Mary Jane Walker); Mobile



SOURCE:

*Genealogies of Virginia Families, from
Tyler's Quarterly Historical and
Genealogical Magazine, Volume III:
Pinkethman-Tyler,
published in Baltimore by
Genealogical Publishing Company in
1981.* Source:

In Grateful Remembrance
BENJAMIN HARRISON V

1726-1791

Benjamin Harrison was born on April 5, 1726 at *Berkeley*, the family estate on the James River in Charles County, Virginia, where both his grandfather and his father, both of whom were also named Benjamin, had lived. His father had built the house, thought to be the first three-story brick dwelling in Virginia. The initials of Benjamin Harris IV and his wife, Ann Carter, are carved over a date stone located over a side door of the Georgian house, now a National Historic Landmark.

Although the men did not use Roman numeral designations with their names, the Benjamin of this vignette is actually fifth in a line of Benjamin Harrisons who played active roles in Virginia; the first Benjamin Harrison was born in England c. 1600 and died in Jamestown, Virginia, in 1643. Benjamin V was the eldest son among the ten children of his parents.

Benjamin was a student at the College of William and Mary in 1745 when his father died (he and two of his daughters were killed by lightning at *Berkeley*) and he undertook the management of the family plantation. He soon married Elizabeth Bassett, and they had twelve children, seven of whom survived infancy. Over the years Harrison acquired additional lands, managing some eight plantations; he also expanded his business dealings into shipping and shipbuilding.

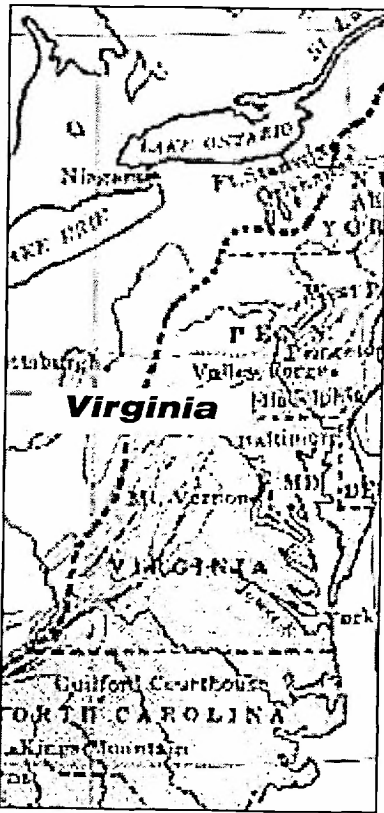
In the tradition of his family, his political career began early and continued throughout his life. Some of his most notable contributions include: member of the House of Burgesses 1749-1775, of the Virginia revolutionary convention of 1775, and of the Continental Congress 1774-1778; signer of the Declaration of Independence; speaker of the house of the Virginia legislature; and three times governor of Virginia.

He was considered one of the most conservative of the Virginia signers of the Declaration of Independence. The following anecdote is attributed to him:

While signing the instrument, he noticed Mr. Gerry of Massachusetts standing beside him. Mr. Harrison himself was quite corpulent; Mr. Gerry was slender and spare. As the former raised his hand, having inscribed his name on the roll, he turned to Mr. Gerry and facetiously observed that when the time of hanging should come, he should have the advantage over Mr. Gerry. "It will be over with me," he said, "in a minute, but you will be dancing on air an hour after I am gone."

However, hanging was not to be his fate (nor Mr. Gerry's). In 1788, at the Virginia convention to ratify the new United States Constitution, Harrison objected to unconditional ratification and suggested amendments that were later to become part of the Bill of Rights.

Characterized by great firmness, good sense, and intelligence, Harrison remained steady, confident and cheerful while making smart choices in decisive situations. He loved good food, good wine, and living a life of luxury. Because he was such a chubby and jolly fellow, he was known as the "Falstaff of Congress."



Biographies of Our Ancestors

In April of 1791, he was elected to the Virginia legislature; however, the very next day he was again stricken with gout, from which he had suffered earlier in the spring. He died at *Berkeley* the day after that, April 24, 1791, at the age of sixty-five. He is buried in the family cemetery at *Berkeley*.

The Harrison family is noted by the distinction of producing two United States Presidents. Benjamin Harrison's son, William Henry Harrison, became the ninth president of the United States and his great-grandson, also named Benjamin, became the twenty-third.

*Submitted by Mrs. Frederick Smith Crown, Mrs. Rudolph Joseph Nordmann, Jr,
and Mrs. Ralph Nicolson Hobbs*

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Frederick Smith Crown (Molly Irwin Inge); Mobile

Mrs. Lee Robinson Gwynn (Maria Lyon Wynne); Fairhope

Mrs. Ralph Nicolson Hobbs (Frances Grace Gould); Selma

Mrs. Landrum Ernest McElroy (Imogene Inge Fulton); Mobile

Mrs. Rudolph Joseph Nordmann, Jr. (Molly Inge Crown); Mobile

SOURCES:

Benjamin Harrison, Signer of Declaration of Independence, The Religious Affiliation of Benjamin Harrison, a Signer of the Declaration of Independence, on line at http://www.adherents.com/people/ph/Benjamin_Harrison.html

Berkeley—James River Plantations: A National Register of Historic Places Travel Itinerary, on line at <http://www.cr.nps.gov/NR/travel/jamesriver/bek.htm>

Biographical Directory of the United States Congress 1774 to the Present. Benjamin Harrison, on line at http://bioguide.congress.gov/scripts/bio_display.pl?index+H000262

Colonial Hall, on line at www.colonialhall.com/harrison/harrison.php

Colonial Hall: Biography of Benjamin Harrison, on line at <http://www.colonialhall.com/harrison/harrison/php>

Greatness to Spare, by T.R. Fehrenbach, published in Princeton, NJ, by D. Van Nostrand Company, Inc. in 1968.

National Park Service—Signers of the Declaration (Benjamin Harrison), on line at http://www.cr.nps.gov/history/online_books/declaration/bio16.htm

Signers of the Declaration of Independence—Short Biographies of each of the 56 Declaration Signers, on line at <http://www.ushistory.org/declaration/signers/harrison.htm>

Virginia's James River Plantations—Berkeley, on line at <http://www.james-riverplantations.org/Berkeley.html>

In Grateful Remembrance
THOMAS HARRISON, JR.

c.1701-c.1773

Thomas Harrison, Jr. was the grandson of the immigrant, Burr Harrison. Although the exact date of his birth is unknown, he was probably born when his father was living in the area of Great Hunting Creek in what is now Fairfax County, Virginia.

Thomas married Ann Grayson Quarles around 1731. She was the widow of John Quarles and the daughter of John Grayson who was originally of Lancaster County and later of Spotsylvania County. At the time of her marriage to Thomas, the widow Ann had three small children. Their mother and stepfather Thomas raised them all, although, in the terminology of the day, Thomas was referred to as "father-in-law."

In 1731, Harrison received a grant from the Proprietor for two hundred seventy-one acres on Holmes Run. This property remained in the family until it was sold in 1767, but it can be identified today as the site of the "Five Corners" shopping mall, one of the first malls to be built in the Washington, D.C. metropolitan area.

Like his father, Thomas Harrison was a tobacco grower and, unlike many of his contemporaries, was never a buyer and a seller of land for profit. He did, however, purchase several tracts to add to his Holmes Run acreage and received other land grants over the years. His agricultural efforts and an inherited wealth served him well and made possible a life-long career of public service.

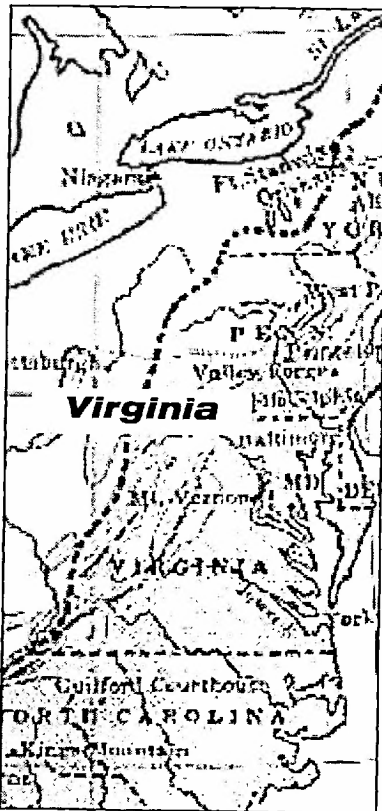
His career as a public servant began in 1733, when Governor Gooch appointed him sheriff of Prince William County. He was still in his twenties when he received this lucrative two-year position in the county administration. After completing his term as sheriff in 1735, he became a member of the new Commission of Peace for Prince William County. He served as head justice from 1744 to 1759, at which time Farquier County was set off from Prince William County. Harrison then chaired the court of Farquier County and faithfully attended the monthly sessions through 1771.

In addition to holding this magisterial office, Thomas Harrison Jr. was an officer in the militia. In 1740, he was called "Captain;" by 1744, "Major;" and in 1746, "Colonel." He was first commander of the Prince William militia and two years after the formation of Farquier County, he became the commander of the new county's militia for the rest of his life.

Thomas Harrison was elected to the House of Burgesses for the first time in 1741. He served as a burgess from Prince William County through the assembly of 1752-55. In 1759, he and John Bell were chosen as the first burgesses from Farquier County.

Colonel Harrison was also active in the affairs of his church. He served on the Hamilton Parish vestry and later, when the parish divided, on the Dettingen vestry until his death.

Although the American Revolution did not officially begin until after his death, Thomas Harrison showed his patriotic spirit when, in 1769, after the dissolution of the assembly by Governor Berkeley, he joined with most of the burgesses to form an association to boycott British goods. He was one of the signers of the association agreement, along with George Washington, Thomas Jefferson, and Patrick Henry. None of his children or close relatives was a Tory, and his sons, Burr and Benjamin, were both officers in the Farquier militia and saw active duty in the war.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

It is believed that, in September of 1773, Colonel Harrison suffered from a serious illness. A month later, he received a commission from Governor Dunsmore to be sheriff of Farquier, forty years after that first appointment. Soon thereafter, the Dettingen Parish vestry appointed him church warden. Both appointments were probably made to honor the colonel for his service to church and state, as he died shortly thereafter.

Submitted by Mrs. John Hans Poulsen, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Charles Richard Moore, Jr. (Sally Hays Bealle); Clanton
Mrs. John Hans Poulsen, Jr. (Oneida Wingfield Moore), Selma

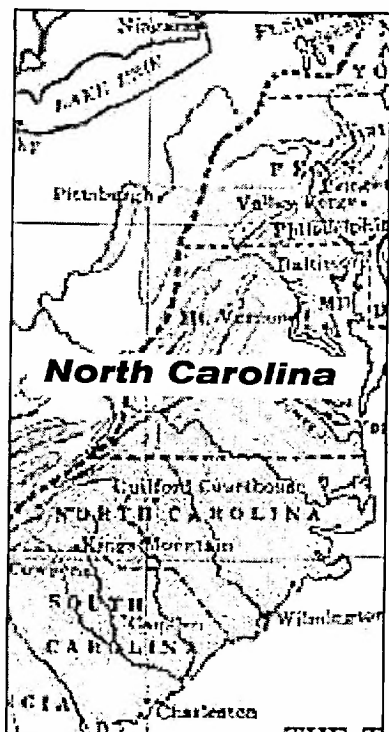
SOURCE:

Five Generations of the Family of Burr Harrison of Virginia, 1650-1800, by John P. Alcock, published in Bowie, MD, by Heritage Books in 1991.

In Grateful Remembrance

DAVID HART

1732-1793



SOURCES:

- Boone, A Biography*, by Robert Morgan, published in Asheville, NC, by The Captain's Bookshelf in 2007.
- The Hart Family*, by Sarah S. Young, printed for private distribution in Memphis, TN, by S. F. Tort and Co. in 1882.
- The Transylvania Company*, by William Stewart Lester, published in Spencer, IN, by Samuel R. Guard and Co. in 1935.
- The Transylvania Company: A Study in Personnel, Part I*—James Hogg, by Dr. Archibald Henderson, published in Louisville, KY, by the The Filson Historical Society Publications in January in 1947.

David Hart was born in Hanover County, Virginia, but considered himself to be a North Carolinian. He was the fourth son of Thomas Hart and Susanna Rice. The couple produced six children: Thomas, John, Benjamin, David, Nathaniel and Ann. Thomas Hart died in Hanover in about 1755. Susanna and all the children migrated to Orange County, North Carolina in 1760. The Harts established themselves well in their new surroundings with Thomas becoming High Sheriff of Orange County and a Representative to the North Carolina Assembly, and David serving as High Sheriff. David Hart commanded a company of the Orange Regiment of Militia in the 1700s achieving the rank of captain. He received grants of land from the Crown for his service.

Brother Nathaniel commanded a company of infantry in Governor Tryon's army but his adventurous spirit led him to partnership with land speculator, Richard Henderson, to form the Transylvania Company with the goal of buying land from the Cherokee Indians for westward expansion across the Alleghany Mountains. (See Glossary: Transylvania Company). Thomas was also an early investor in the enterprise and the brothers were joined by David in 1776.

Daniel Boone was in the position of explorer and surveyor for the company. When his daughter was captured by Indians, both David and Nathaniel assisted in the rescue. Nathaniel was killed and scalped during the combat. Although the venture to create fourteenth colony in the western wilderness failed, the efforts of the Transylvania Company led to the settlement of what is today Kentucky. The Hart's cousin, the Reverend Daniel Rice of the Presbyterian Church, was to settle permanently in Kentucky a few years later.

David returned to North Carolina, selling his property in Orange County and moving north to Caswell and St. David's districts. There he became a leader during the Revolution. In the early part of 1781, when Cornwallis was approaching the neighborhood of his home, David raised a regiment of "light horse," and was named its lieutenant colonel. This regiment joined the American force under General Henry (Light Horse Harry) Lee, and took part in the surprise attack and virtual massacre of some two hundred Tories, under the command of Colonel John Pyle. This battle became known as "Pyle's Hacking Match." It took place at a point below the Haw River at Burlington. David Hart also commanded his regiment at the battle of Guilford Court House on March 15, 1781.

Land was granted to Hart in Caswell County by the state of North Carolina where he continued to live an active life until his death at the age of sixty-one. He left his wife Elizabeth and a daughter, Susanna. David Hart is buried in Caswell County.

Submitted by Mrs. Michael Whetstone Innes

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Michael Whetstone Innes (Laura Lee McDaniel); Huntsville

Biographies of Our Ancestors

THOMAS HARWOOD

b. unknown-1652

Thomas Harwood's initial arrival in America was before December 31, 1619, as his name is mentioned in a Mulberry Island land patent issued to him with his associate, William Pierce. Returning to England after that date, he is next recorded as arriving on the *Margaret and Jane/John* with William Pierce shortly after the Indian massacre of 1622 at Jamestown. At this time he was reunited with his uncle, Sir Edward Harwood, a Virginia Company stockholder, and his brother, William. His wife, Grace, later joined him and they were living at Mulberry Island in 1624/25, tenating Captain William Pierce's house.

On the basis of the "head right" system, wherein he received fifty acres for each person he imported to the colony, Thomas Harwood was patented one hundred acres of land on Blunt Point Creek, called *Harwood Neck and/or Neck O' Land*, in 1626. On July 4, 1627, he accompanied Captain William Pierce as second in command on an expedition against the Chickahominy Indians, an adventure that earned him the rank of Captain in the James City militia.

Respected in the community, Thomas Harwood served as a juror in March, 1628, and was elected to the House of Burgesses to represent Mulberry Island in 1629. He was among those challenged to find settlers for Chiskiack, or Kiskiack, on the York River further inland, which led him to begin acquiring land along Skiff's Creek. In 1632, he was identified as "Thomas Harwood, Gentleman" after acquiring three tracts of land in this area, one of which included one hundred acres near his original Mulberry Island patent of 1619; and, in 1635, fifteen hundred acres near Skiff's Creek adjacent to the land that he already owned, and 1,850 acres in James City County, on the east side of Skiff's Creek.

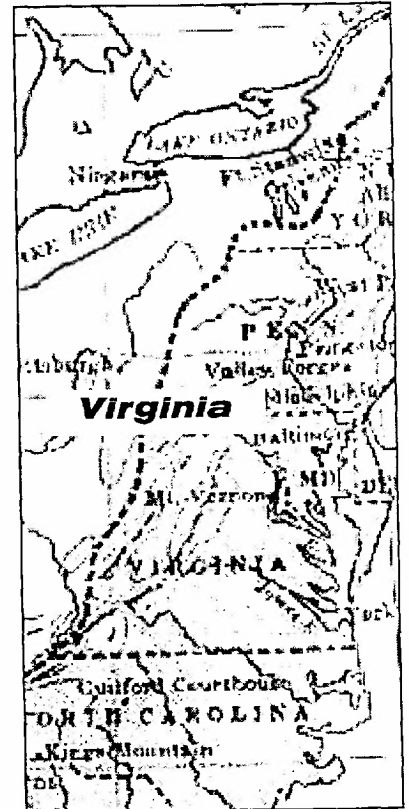
Thomas Harwood named his plantation *Queen's Hith*, an old English term meaning "river landing." He became a tobacco viewer (a regulator of tobacco, which was used as a commodity equal to money), and in 1652, was named to the Council of State. He died shortly after this appointment, but in his long career, Thomas Harwood served as a burgess for Mulberry Island from 1629-1633; a burgess for Warwick River in 1640/42/45 and as speaker of the House of Burgesses from 1647 through 1649.

Thomas Harwood left only one son, Humphrey, whose mother is recorded in one source as being Grace; another source lists a second wife, Anne, as the mother of Humphrey and his two sisters, Grace and Margaret. The first wife, Grace, died shortly after her arrival in America in 1624/25, so perhaps Anne raised the children and was called their mother, or she was the mother of the girls only.

Submitted by Mrs. Luther Leonidas Hill

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Luther Leonidas Hill (Katherine Stuart Pittman); Montgomery



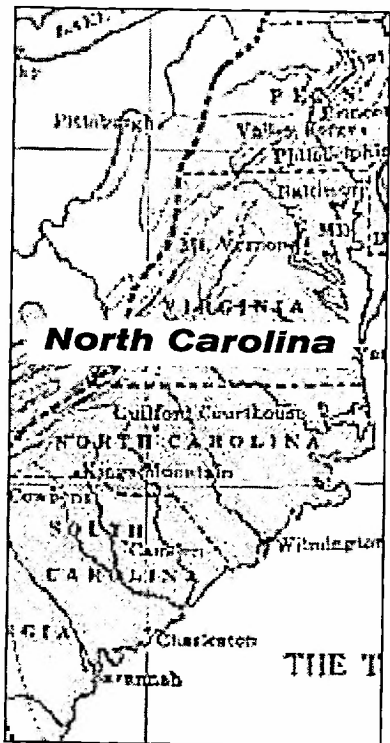
SOURCES:

Pierce Genealogy by Frederick Clifton Pierce, published in Albany, NY, by J. Munsell's Sons in 1889.

Virginia Immigrants and Adventurers, 1607-1635, by Martha W. McCartney, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 2007.

In Grateful Remembrance

1705-1777



Lemuel Hatch was the son of Anthony Hatch and Eliza Durant, the granddaughter of early North Carolina settler George Durant (see entry on George Durant). He married Mary Fonville around 1740 and they were the parents of seven sons and two daughters, whose names were Lemuel, John, Edmund, Durant, Anthony, Ivy, Asa, Elizabeth and Mary.

The fact that he was a farmer and large land owner in Craven County, North Carolina, is confirmed in his will dated April 2, 1774, as he leaves tracts of land to all of his sons. Each tract dates the patent under which Lemuel acquired the property. He left his wife the use of the home plantation during her widowhood and funds to be used to "bring up and educate" his children. The remainder of his property, which included numerous slaves, was to be divided equally among his sons and daughters.

Lemuel Hatch served as lieutenant colonel in the North Carolina militia and as a justice of the peace. He was a member of the Provincial Congress that met at New Bern on August 25, 1774 and at Halifax on April 4, 1775.

Submitted by Mrs. Robert Hillhouse Shaw

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. William Tillman Moor (Margaret Moore Parker); Birmingham
Mrs. Leighton Calhoun Parnell III (Allene Benners Parker); Birmingham
Mrs. Robert Hillhouse Shaw (Margaret Builder Benners); Birmingham

SOURCES:

Owens' History of America, published in
North Carolina in 1955.

Roster of North Carolina Soldiers, published in Washington, D.C., by the Daughters of the American Revolution in 1932.

Wheeler's History of North Carolina,
Volume I.

Will of Lemuel Hatch

WILLIAM HATCHER

1613/14-before 1680*

After obtaining his first Virginia land patent for importation of himself and three others on June 1, 1636, William Hatcher was, by 1639, appointed a "viewer of tobacco," an important position in Colonial America, since tobacco counted as money. His reputation as a man of substance grew as he represented Henrico County in the Virginia House of Burgesses in 1645, 1646, 1649, 1652, and 1659. Continued land acquisitions in Henrico and Chesterfield Counties for importation of others and purchase of a merchant ship, the *Blackbird*, indicated that his wealth was also growing. He came to own three plantations in full: *Varina*, *Necke of Land*, *Pigg in the Hole*, and a portion of *Turkey Island*.

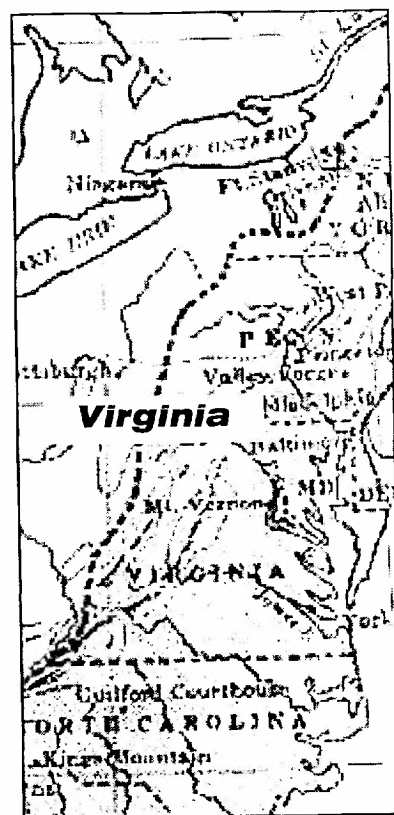
No English birth record for William Hatcher has been found. Separate family traditions from scattered descendants of all three of his surviving sons claim descent from the Hatchers of Cambridge and Careby Manor, Lincolnshire. Multiple accounts record the same tale, adding veracity to the claim.

The Jamestown Society accepts that Hatcher was single upon his arrival in Virginia. His wife's name is unknown—she was deceased prior to 1646. Although two depositions, given by the eldest and youngest sons to establish the years that Hatcher's children were born, do not give the same exact dates, they both indicate that four sons were born between 1637 and 1646: they were Edward, William Jr., Henry, and Benjamin. The existence of these offspring are confirmed by land records in Henrico and Chesterfield counties, and no extant will includes any other children, although it is highly likely that several daughters were also born. The two middle children predeceased their father.

A notable incident occurred in the 1654 House of Burgesses, when William Hatcher called Speaker of the House Colonel Edward Hill a blasphemmer and devil, among other descriptive terms. He was censured for slander, required to apologize to the speaker on bended knee, fined, and set home. His country promptly re-elected him. However, he never served in the House after the 1660 Restoration of Charles II to the English throne.

A second serious episode occurred when, in 1676/77, as an outspoken supporter of the failed Bacon's Rebellion against Governor Berkeley (See Glossary: Bacon's Rebellion.), Hatcher narrowly avoided being hung. A British commission sent to Governor Berkeley the grievances that had been filed against him from each county under his domain, calling for the removal of himself and House Speaker Edward Hill from office: Will Hatcher had signed all five from Henrico County. Hatcher's life was spared because he was an "aged man," but the fine of eight thousand pounds of "drest porke" was an enormous financial penalty.

The date of William Hatcher's death has to be before March 31, 1680, because at that time, his sons, Edward and Benjamin, began to administer his estate. His will contained some surprises and complications. In a document signed by "Will Hatcher" in 1677, he gave a life estate of two hundred twenty-six acres to Thomas Burton Jr., thought to be either a grandchild or a business partner in the *Blackbird*; he specified gifts to no one else, not even his children.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

Cavaliers and Pioneers Abstracts of Virginia Land Patents and Grants 1623-1800, Volume 1, by Nell Marion Nugent, published in Richmond by the Virginia State Library and Archives in 1992.

The Colonial Virginia Register, compiled by William G. and Mary Newton Stanard, published in Albany, NY, by Joel Munsell's Sons in 1902.

Descendants of William Hatcher 1613-1680, Electronic Library, Nel Hatcher, webmaster: on line at <http://homepages.rootsweb.com/~nhatcher/faq.htm>.

Henig's Statutes at Large, Volume I, by William Waller Henig, published in New York in 1823.

Henrico County, Virginia Wills and Deeds, 1677-1705 by Benjamin B. Weisinger III, published in Richmond by Weisinger in 1986.

William E. Hatcher, D.D., LL.D., L.H.D.; a Biography, by Eldridge Burwell Hatcher, printed in Richmond by W. C. Hill Printing Company in 1915.

William and Mary Quarterly Historical Magazine, Volume 16, Series 2, 1936, "The Hatcher Family," by the Reverend Francis Campbell Symonds, D.D.

William and Mary Quarterly Historical Magazine, Volume 24, Number 3, (January, 1916), "Henrico County, Virginia: Beginnings of Its Families: Part II."

(Other sources are available by contacting the author.)

There was also a title challenge to a portion of Hatcher's lands by the descendants of Elizabeth Sharpe Parker, who had patented what appeared to be the same land Hatcher patented when he first arrived in Virginia. The land was granted to Hatcher with no record of abandonment, and although Mrs. Parker's (later Mrs. Baugh) sons never challenged Hatcher's title, her grandson, Robert Sharpe, did, and received a share.

*NSCDA *Register of Ancestors* lists c.1678.

Submitted by Mrs. Elizabeth Legge Dunn

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Elizabeth Legge Dunn (Elizabeth Morris Legge); Birmingham
Mrs. Walter Fowlkes Morris, Sr. (Frances McNeil Newman); Birmingham
Miss Elizabeth Bolton Patton; Athens

THOMAS HAWKINS I

b. unknown-c. 1635

Thomas Hawkins came from England to what would later become Charles River Shire (County). His arrival happened in the midst of the time that English settlers were exploring and settling the areas lying outside Jamestown, which had been founded in 1607. Charles River Shire took its name from King Charles I of England, and was located on the Charles River, as it winds down the Virginia Peninsula. It was one of the original eight shires established in the Virginia Colony in 1634. In 1643, Charles River Shire became York County, and the Charles River became the York River, shifting the naming honor to Charles I's son, James, Duke of York. The first courthouse and jail were located near what is now Yorktown, originally founded as a port for shipping tobacco to England. The original boundaries of York County remain essentially unchanged, making it one of the oldest counties in the United States.

Thomas Hawkins was a young man "of age" when he sailed from England on July 31, 1622 to Virginia on the *James*. On February 16, 1624, he was reported to be living at Hugh Crowder's plantation on the James River; the following year, he was listed as one of Crowder's servants, possibly serving out a period of indenture. He must have prospered in the succeeding eight years, because on February 1, 1633, he was serving as a burgess for the settlers in the Denbigh area. He also attended the second session of the year, which convened on August 21, 1633.

All that is known of his wife is that she was named "Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Hawkins I and mother of Thomas Hawkins II."

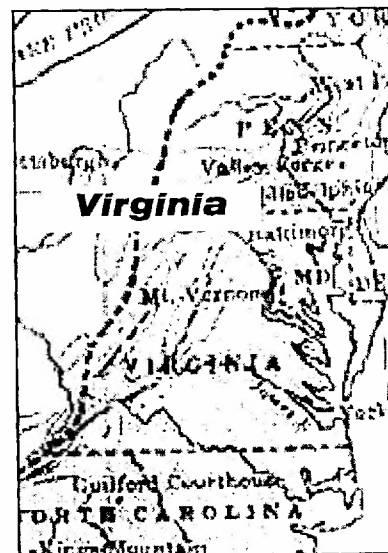
Thomas died around 1635.

The progression of Thomas Hawkins I-IV was maintained until 1755, when Margaret Noel Hawkins married Lunsford Lomax Loving in Virginia in 1801. The Loving and subsequent Wingfield families are heavily documented in genealogical sources of more recent times.

Submitted by Mrs. Lathrop Winchester Smith Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Lathrop Winchester Smith Jr. (Garland Wingfield Cook); Birmingham



SOURCES:

Cavaliers and Pioneers, Volume I, by Nell Nugent; "Statutes at Large," by W.W. Henings, published in Virginia by Charles River Company.

The Complete Book of Emigrants 1607-1660, by Peter Wilson Coldham, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1987.

The General Assembly of Virginia, 30 July, 1619 to January 11, 1978: A Bicentennial Register of Members, by Cynthia Miller Leonard, published in Richmond, VA, for the General Assembly of Virginia by the Virginia State Library in 1978.

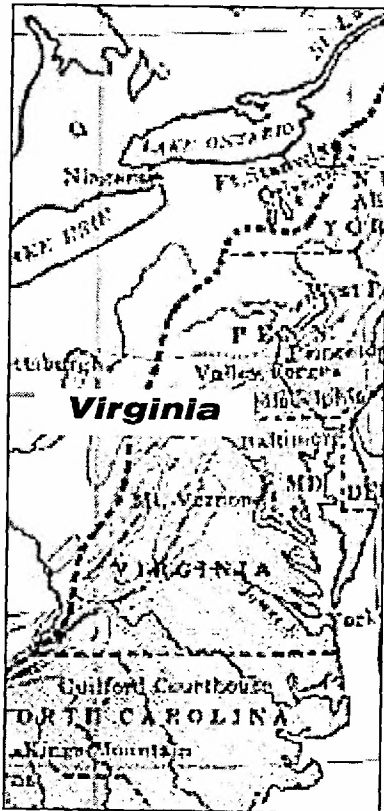
The Loving Family in America 1705-1981, by Carl and Mary Read, published in (location unknown) by Harp and Thistle in 1981.

Virginia Immigrants and Adventurers 1607-1635, by Martha McCartney, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 2007.

Wingfield Americas Immigration List 93-1, by Carl and Mary Read, published in Belleair, FL, by the Wingfield Family Society (date unknown).

In Grateful Remembrance **WILLIAM HAYMOND**

1740-1821



SOURCE:

The History of Harrison County,
by Henry Haymond, published in
Morgantown, WV, by Acme
Publishing Company in 1910.

Major William Haymond, cut from the same sturdy cloth as many of his fellow frontiersmen, thrived in an age when America was still defining herself. Relying on his many talents and strengths, William Haymond established himself as a capable and versatile pioneer.

As a young man, he served under the command of George Washington in the Virginia regiment before settling with his family in Morgantown, a city in newly formed Monongalia County of Virginia in 1776; he was immediately commissioned by Governor Patrick Henry as captain of the Monongalia County militia. He filled many posts in the new county, ranging from coroner to sheriff. In 1777, he commanded Pricketts Fort, and he served as an officer in the Virginia militia during the American Revolution. The major's many accomplishments during the 1770s may seem sufficient for one lifetime, but as the decade came to a close, William Haymond was just opening the chapter of his life that would earn him the distinction for which he is best remembered.

In 1779, the Virginia Assembly passed new land laws that led Haymond to serve as commissioner all over northwestern Virginia. When nearby settlers petitioned for a new county, it was William Haymond who made the trek to Williamsburg, where he earned the necessary certification to become the surveyor of the nascent county. Soon after, a small-pox epidemic forced the Haymonds to relocate once again, this time to Clarksburg. In 1784, William Haymond was sworn in as surveyor of Harrison County. The next four years saw Major Haymond named a trustee of Clarksburg as well as a justice of the peace, commission a road between Clarksburg and the Ohio River, help oversee the construction of Randolph Academy, and he appointed by the Harrison County court to help draw up specifications for a courthouse. During this time, Haymond was recognized by his countrymen for his public service.

One especially telling example of this occurred in 1789, when voters converged on the courthouse to choose an elector to vote for the first President of the United States of America. Although candidate Robert Rutherford ran unopposed, eighteen voters cast their ballots for William Haymond, who was not present and was not seeking the position. That his fellow countrymen would write him in for such a position is a testament to the services he provided for the young country and its people.

Major William Haymond served as the principal surveyor of Harrison County for thirty-one years. He was succeeded by two sons and one grandson. It was the continuity provided by an eighty-nine-year tradition of father-son apprenticeships that assured the accuracy of property lines in Harrison County well into the nineteenth century.

Major Hammond was born on January 4, 1740 in Prince George County, Colony of Maryland, and died on November 12, 1821. He was first married to Cassandra Cleveland (born October 25, 1741, died December 23, 1788). After her death, he married Mary Powers in December of 1789.

Submitted by Mrs. James McRae Petrey

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. James McRae Petrey (Jane Coleman Banks); Auburn

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JOHN HAYWOOD

1684-1758

In 1684, John Haywood was born in the parish of Christ Church, near St. Michaels, Barbados. Nephew of Sir Henry Haywood, a magistrate in England, John grew up in the tangled forests, dense swamps, and vast sugar plantations of Barbados, earning an engineering and surveying education. (See Glossary: Barbados/United Kingdom/United States connection.)

At the age of forty-six, in 1730, John migrated to Carolina to work as an agent for the Earl of Granville, the only one of the Lord Proprietors who had not surrendered his grants to the English king. John rendered pioneer service as an engineer and surveyor. He remained employed for twenty years or more on the vast domain of this nobleman. John Haywood was the first of his name in North Carolina.

He lived at the mouth of Conoconarie Creek, in a part of the colonial county of Edgemcombe, now embraced within the limits of Halifax County. Enfield was the county seat of Edgemcombe County. The plantation that Haywood developed was named *Dunbar*. He married Mary Lovett, believed to have been a New Yorker. She bore him seven children: William, who became a colonel in the Revolution and married Charity Hare; Sherwood, a lieutenant colonel in the Revolution, who married Hannah Gray; Egbert, a major in the Revolution, who married Sarah Ware; John, who died unmarried; Mary, who was the wife of the Reverend Thomas Burges; Elizabeth, who married Jesse Hare; and Deborah, who married John Hardy.

In time, John Haywood served as commander of coast fortifications, sheriff of Edgemcombe County, member of the Colonial Assembly, treasurer of the northeastern counties of the province, and warden of the Anglican Church. It must have been in 1754, when he became commanding officer of the provincial troops of North Carolina in Edgemcombe County that John became a colonel. Some years later, in appreciation for the public service rendered by John and his descendants, a North Carolina county was named Haywood County.

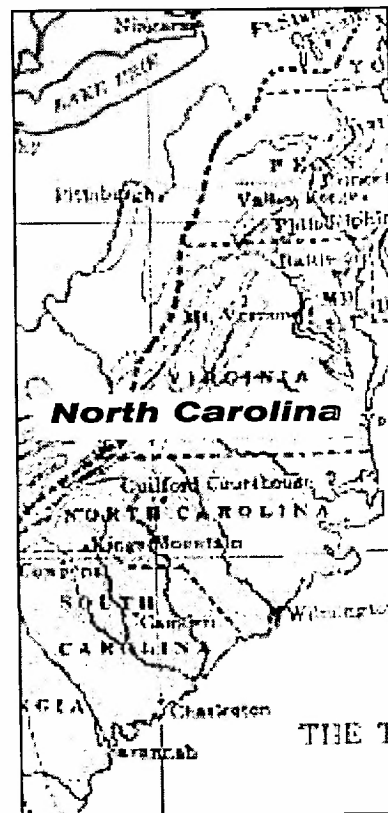
Colonel John Haywood died in 1758 in Edgemcombe County, North Carolina. Shortly after he was interred, a mob visited his grave, dug up the body for inspection, and buried it again. When this news reached the Colonial Assembly, a committee was appointed to study the matter. This committee reported a resolution, adopted by the Assembly, censuring Governor Dobbs for taking no steps to suppress the several mobs that had, for many months, been wreaking violence on the area. The mobs would assemble in various counties to dig up the dead, break open jails, release prisoners, and commit other acts of carnage. The governor denied being responsible for the disturbances and declared that Colonel John Haywood and his sons had worked in Lord Granville's domain and had been guilty of charging exorbitant fees on the surveys they made. The mob had dug up the colonel, it was explained, to see if he was really dead.

John Haywood's will was drafted in 1756, two years before he died, and is still legible. His children, to whom he bequeathed his property, and his grandsons carried on serving the public.

Submitted by Mrs. John Baytop Scott, Jr. and Ms. Frances Harrison Cronenberg

DESCENDANTS:

Ms. Frances Harrison Cronenberg (Frances Wimberley Harrison); Auburn
 Mrs. Charles Hervey Douglass (Mary Minge Neilson); Montgomery
 Mrs. James Turner Inscoe (Elmore Bellingrath Bartlett); Montgomery
 Mrs. George William Jones Jr. (Lida Inge Wylie); Memphis, Tennessee
 Ms. Virginia Bartlett Kingsley; (Virginia Bartlett Kingsley); Waterloo
 Mrs. George Phillip Miller (Bessie Sloss Dugins); Tuscaloosa
 Mrs. John Baytop Scott, Jr. (Elizabeth Bowers Hill); Montgomery



SOURCES:

The Barbados American Connection, by May Lumsden, published in New York by Macmillan Publishers, Ltd. in 1982.

Biographical History of North Carolinians, From Colonial Times to the Present, edited by Samuel A. Ashe, Stephen B. Weeks, and Charles L. Van Noppen, published in Greensboro, NC, by Charles L. Van Noppen in 1906.

Dictionary of North Carolina Biography, Volume 3 H-K, edited by William S. Powell, published in Chapel Hill, NC, by The University of North Carolina Press in 1988.

Sketch of the Haywood Family in North Carolina, by Dr. Hubert Benbury Haywood Sr., published in the United States in 1956.

In Grateful Remembrance
RICHARD HENDERSON

1735-1785

Richard Henderson was born in Hanover County, Virginia on April 20, 1735 to Samuel and Elizabeth Williams Henderson. Around 1745, the family moved to the pioneer country of Granville County, North Carolina. The chance for formal education was limited, and it is thought that Richard's mother taught him at home with the aid of a supplemental tutor. He was clever and ambitious, and, after studying law with his kinsman, John Williams, for only a brief period, he passed the examination necessary for admission to the bar. It was during this time that he married Williams' step-daughter Elizabeth Keeling.

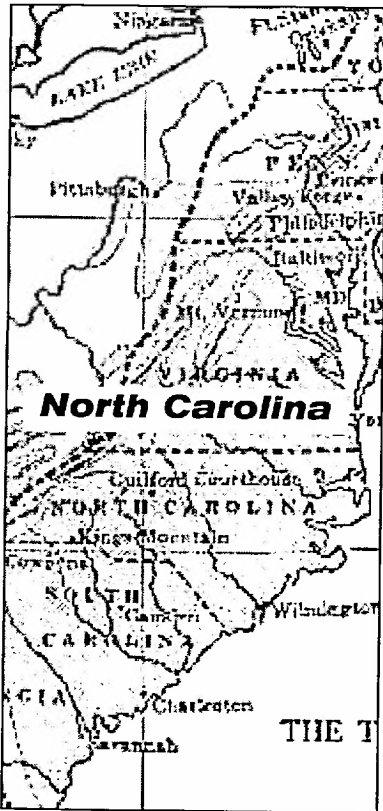
Richard was a self-made man, and rose rapidly in his profession. On March 1, 1769, he was appointed associate justice to the superior court of North Carolina by Governor Tryon, who described him as "a man of candor and ability" to the authorities in England. While still a young attorney, Richard became enamored with the idea of land development to the west and enlisted the aid of the explorer Daniel Boone to investigate the possibility of western colonization. He formed Richard Henderson and Company with Thomas Hart and John Williams, but remained occupied with his duties as a member of the superior court.

A particularly volatile incident occurred in 1770, when a group known as "Regulators" stormed the court in protest of unfair representation to the Colonial Assembly from the frontier counties. Court at Hillsboro was suspended until the insurrection was defeated at the Battle of Alamance on May 6, 1771. Richard was not reappointed to the Court in 1776, and was therefore able to devote all of his time to his land speculation schemes.

The Cherokee Indians held title by treaty to a large tract of hunting grounds along the Kentucky River, and it was there that Henderson cast his eye. Daniel Boone had made efforts to settle Kentucky, but constant skirmishes with the Indians made it impossible for him to do it alone. Richard Henderson and other partners began to negotiate the purchase of territory from the Cherokee. On January 6, 1775, a new company was formed to purchase and colonize these lands. And so was born the Transylvania Company consisting of nine members, including other colonial ancestors presented in *In Grateful Remembrance*, David Hart and Leonard Henly Bullock. (See Glossary: Transylvania Company.)

The sale of over twenty million acres took place, with the Indians receiving ten thousand pounds sterling in money and goods. Colonists began to settle in the new town of Boonesborough in the free state of Transylvania, with Richard Henderson as proprietor. It was his intent to establish a privately owned fourteenth colony.

Unfortunately, the settlement was short-lived, as Henderson and his co-investors had not sought or received approval from the Crown, nor from Virginia or North Carolina, both of which had claims on the territory, which included much of Kentucky and vast tracts in Tennessee. The colony was denounced by the General Assembly and the royal governor of Virginia. As compensation, Henderson and the other proprietors of the Transylvania Company received a total of four hundred thousand acres of land in Virginia and North Carolina.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Richard Henderson has been dubbed by many the "political father of Kentucky" for his efforts to colonize that rugged wilderness. Indeed, the strong settlement at the Transylvania Fort, later known as Boonesborough, did much to discourage British and Indian invaders from attacking the western portions of Virginia and North Carolina. The town of Henderson, Kentucky bears his name, celebrating Richard Henderson's contribution to opening up American settlement to the west.

He remained in North Carolina after the collapse of "the greatest real estate deal in history," and practiced farming on a grand scale: the grant of land he had received from North Carolina was more valuable than the free state of Transylvania. In the Revolutionary War, Richard became Colonel Henderson in the Granville County militia. He died in 1785 at the age of fifty years.

Submitted by Mrs. David Reynolds Pruet, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. David Reynolds Pruet (Susan Taylor Atkins); Daphne

SOURCES:

The Transylvania Company by William Stewart Lester, published in Spencer, IN, by Samuel R. Guard and Company in 1934.

The Transylvania Company and the Founding of Henderson, Kentucky by Dr. Archibald Henderson of North Carolina (publisher unknown) in 1929.

In Grateful Remembrance **SAMUEL HENDERSON**

1700-1783



SOURCES:

Reminiscences and Memoirs of North Carolina and Eminent North Carolinians, by John Hill Wheeler, published in Columbus, OH, by Columbus Printing Works in 1884.

The Transylvania Company, by William Steward Lester, published in Spencer, IN, by Samuel R. Guard and Company in 1935.

Samuel Henderson was the grandson of Thomas Henderson of Fordell Manor in Fifeshire, Scotland, who came to America in 1607.

Fordell Manor is still intact, and descendants are able to visit and stand upon their Scottish roots. Samuel's father was Richard Henderson, who was married to Polly Washer, daughter of Ensign Washer, a member of the House of Burgesses. Richard and Polly lived in Hanover, Virginia, and had four sons and a daughter. Samuel was the second son.

In 1732, Samuel Henderson married Elizabeth Williams, a young lady of Welsh descent. Elizabeth was eighteen years old and Samuel was thirty-two. Elizabeth's kinsman, John Williams, wrote of the pair, "Samuel is a man of likeable temperament; she is a woman of exemplary life and strong, strong talents... a woman of strong and vigorous mind." They moved to Granville County, North Carolina about 1740 and settled at Nut Bush Creek. They had seven sons and four daughters between 1732 and 1756. The children were Mary, Richard, Nathaniel, Elizabeth, Anna, Susanna, John, Samuel, William, Thomas, and Pleasant.

Samuel Henderson built *Ashland*, in Granville County, which became Vance County in 1881. The town of Ashland, in which Randolph-Macon College is located, stands on *Ashland's* original site. Samuel Henderson became sheriff of Granville County soon after his move there in 1740 and was appointed justice of the peace in July 1756, with his commission being renewed on December 5, 1760. He died in Granville County in 1783.

Two of Samuel Henderson's children grew up to be particularly outstanding. Richard became a prominent lawyer, then a judge, proved himself a man of distinguished enterprise and intellect. He was the founder of the Transylvania Company in 1776 (See Glossary: Transylvania Company.) and his story is also recorded in this volume. Samuel's youngest son, Pleasant Henderson, served in the Revolutionary War, then, in 1789, succeeded John Haywood as clerk of the House of Commons, a position he held continuously for forty years. He married, had a family, lived for many years in Chapel Hill, then moved in 1831 to Tennessee, where he died in 1842. The Henderson family was instrumental in the opening up of Kentucky and Tennessee to American settlers.

An interesting story is told about the girl who would become the wife of Samuel II, included in the biography of Richard Callaway, also in this volume. She and her sister, daughters of Colonel Richard Callaway, and the daughter of Daniel Boone were captured by Indians in Kentucky and rescued by Daniel Boone and members of the Transylvania Company. This incident obtained more notoriety by its mention in *The Last of the Mohicans* by James Fenimore Cooper.

Submitted by Mrs. John Matthews Ennis

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. John Matthews Ennis (Lorraine Gaston); Huntsville
Mrs. Mac Bell Greaves (Anne Tennant Wright); Birmingham
Mrs. David Unger Inge (Katherine Denny Wright); Mobile
Mrs. Susan Hardy Justice (Susan Henderson Hardy); Birmingham
Mrs. David Perry Phillips (Mary Margaret Hardy); Birmingham
Mrs. Douglas Stephen Sutherland (Lucy Matthews Ennis); Huntsville
Mrs. Ralph Denny Wright (Anne Catherine Griffin); Mobile

Biographies of Our Ancestors

PATRICK HENRY

1736-1799

Patrick Henry, the "voice of the Revolution," was born in 1736 in Hanover County, Virginia. His father, Colonel John Henry, after attending King's College Aberdeen, Scotland, moved to Virginia in 1727.

Although baptized into the Church of England, Patrick often attended Presbyterian services with his mother, and was presumably influenced by the fiery oratory of the preachers. Educated by his father and an uncle who was an ordained minister in the Scottish Episcopal Church, Patrick first tried farming, then business, before finally choosing law. He married his childhood sweetheart, Sarah Shelton, but she died young, leaving him a widower with six children. He subsequently married Dorothea Dandridge, whom family tradition refers to as the "good stepmother," who not only raised the children from his first marriage, but bore him eleven additional children.

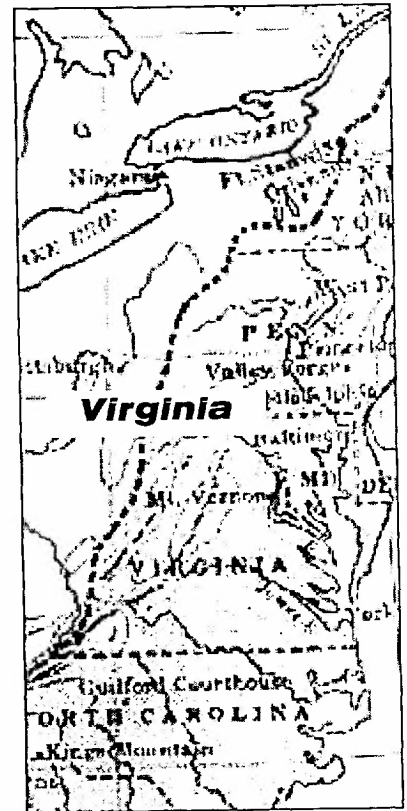
Patrick Henry served in the offices of burgess from Louisa County from 1765-1768; burgess from Hanover County, 1769-1775; member of conventions representing Hanover County in 1774, 1775, 1776; and a representative to the Continental Congress in 1774 and 1775. His was one of the first and strongest voices raised against England's attempt to impose taxation without representation. In 1765, in the House of Burgesses, he attacked the infamous Stamp Act, challenging George III with the statement, "If this be treason, make the most of it!"

A decade later, in 1775, as revolutionary sentiments hardened, he delivered his most famous speech at the second Virginia convention, ending it with the immortal words, "I know not what courses others may take, but, as for me, give me liberty or give me death!"

Following the Revolution, Patrick Henry was elected the first governor of the Virginia Commonwealth. An ironic note is that, as governor, his official residence in Williamsburg was the former royal governor's palace, where he lived with Dorothea, who was the granddaughter of Alexander Spotswood, the first royal governor, who had built the palace in the 1720s.

Henry served five terms as governor, then declined appointments as chief justice of the supreme court, secretary of state, and minister to France or Spain because of declining health. He was an outspoken critic of the United States Constitution, and advocated against its adoption because he believed it granted the federal government too much power. He, with George Mason (see entry in this book), was instrumental in forcing the adoption of the Bill of Rights to amend the new Constitution.

Patrick Henry died at *Red Hill* plantation in Virginia, at the age of sixty-three.



In Grateful Remembrance

Of interest to Alabama Dames is the union of Patrick Henry's great-granddaughter to the great-grandson of Colonel Fielding Lewis of *Kenmore*, a celebrated patriot and brother-in-law to George Washington (see entry in this book). This marriage, in 1846, produced two daughters who were young teenagers during the Civil War, living at *Hayfield* on the Rappahannock River near Fredericksburg. General Lee's headquarters, as he gathered his troops prior to the Battle of Fredericksburg, were located across the river from *Hayfield*. The recollections of these war years by the younger sister, Fannie Lewis Gwathmey (Adams) are described in the *William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine* of July 1943 in "Reminiscences of a Childhood Spent at Hayfield Plantation Near Fredericksburg, Virginia, During the Civil War." In the last year of the war, their widowed mother brought the "Gwathmey girls" to Alabama, where their descendants remain.

SOURCES:

The American Historical Review, Volume 8, Number 2, April 1976.

Patrick Henry, A Biography, by Richard R. Beeman, published in New York by McGraw-Hill in 1974.

William and Mary Quarterly Historical Magazine, July 1943, "Reminiscences of a Childhood Spent at Hayfield Plantation near Fredericksburg, VA, During the Civil War," by Fannie Lewis Gwathmey Adams.

Submitted by Mrs. Charles Glenn Cobbs

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Charles Glenn Cobbs (Naneita McEachin Leach); Birmingham

Mrs. John Newton Wrinkle (Louise Rucker Agee); Birmingham

Biographies of Our Ancestors
JOHN HODNETT

1710-1798

John Hodnett was born in Cork, Ireland, in 1710, the son of John Hodnett and Anne Eyres. He married Lucy Brooks, daughter of Peter Brooks, in 1732 in the Diocese of Cork and Ross, Ireland, the same county in which his parents were married. The parish register of that diocese no longer exists except in index form, so the day and the month of the marriage are unknown. Soon after John's marriage, Peter and Catherine Brooks came to America. John and Lucy stayed in London.

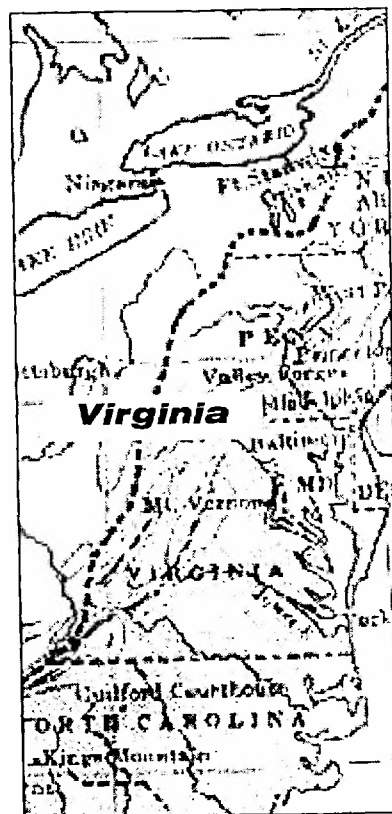
An announcement in the *Virginia Gazette of Williamsburg* dated October 29, 1736 reads as follows:

This is to give notice that if Mr. John Hodnet, Merchant, from London, should arrive in any of these parts of America, he may apply to the printer hereof and be informed where his father-in-law now lives.

There is evidence that John Hodnett responded to this invitation, as he witnessed the marriage of the daughter of Peter Brooks (named for her mother, Catherine) to Daniel Stoner in Goochland County, Virginia, on June 20, 1739. It also establishes a general time of John Hodnett's arrival in Virginia.

Perhaps because of this newspaper notice, there is some speculation that John Hodnett was from London, but the memoirs of one of Hodnett's guests during the Revolution recall that he was from Ireland. The guest was the Marquis de Chastellux, who came to America as head of a French regiment to assist the colonists against England. General Castellux later toured the country and wrote that, on his way from Bedford to Williamsburg, he spent the night with John Hodnett. The marquis said that John told him he should have learned French when he was young, because he had lived in a house in Cork with three French merchants. It would have been the perfect opportunity. In addition, the marquis said that, when John Hodnett showed him his favorite book, it was a geography book with a bookmark at the article on Cork. The marquis flattered John Hodnett by telling him the Hodnetts were known throughout Europe. However, the marquis had originally described Hodnett as a seventy-two-year-old Scotsman, rather than an Irishman. Regardless, he said that Hodnett was quite polite, hospitable, and eager to please, and had been in America for forty years.

Tradition says that, in the time of the Colonies, three or four Hodnett brothers came to America from England, settled in the southern part of Virginia, and soon became large landowners. John is found in a Virginia record stating that he and some other relatives (Edward McGehee and Peter Brooks) are included among several other Virginia gentlemen who sent their tithables in 1739 for a work crew to construct a road from Brook's Mill to Arthur's Road in Goochland County. (See Glossary: Tithable.) In 1741-1744, John served as a gentleman justice of the county, and he patented 3,325 acres between 1738 and 1749 on the Willis River and the Fish Pond branch of the Appomattox River. When Albemarle County was created in 1744, his land was in that county; later, in 1761, it became part of Buckingham County, Virginia. Tax records show that, from 1782 through 1798, John and his second son, Philip, lived fourteen miles south of Buckingham



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

Benjamin Hodnett, Revolutionary Soldier: His Ancestry and Some of His Descendants, by Virdie Hodnett Egger.

Privately published in August of 1977, revised in 1980.

John Hodnett of Colonial Virginia and Some of His Descendants, by Robert A.

Pendergrast. Published in Morrow, Georgia by the Georgia Department of Archives and History, September 1976.

The Journal of Marquis de Chastellux, edited by Howard C. Rice, Jr. 2 vols.

Published in Chapel Hill by the University of North Carolina Press for the Institute of Early American History and Culture in 1963.

McGehee Descendants, Vol. III, by Jane N. Grider and Ethel C. Woodall.

Published in Baltimore by Gateway Press Publishers in 1991.

courthouse, and that Philip inherited this land, owning it until 1814. This is probably where General Chastellux visited.

Records show that John Hodnett, probably serving as a captain of cavalry in the Revolutionary War, furnished for his troops the following: thirty-six pounds of bacon; eighty pounds of pork; one barrel of corn; two bushels of peas, 850 pounds of beef, and one side of sole leather. This made him the largest supplier in that area of meat to the troops. John's wife, Lucy, who was living in Charlottesville during the war, lost a hand during the occupation by British soldiers; the particulars of the incident are subject to several interpretations.

One story goes that, when the British took over her house to use as a headquarters, she moved with her children into the cellar to avoid contact with the soldiers. One morning, when she came upstairs to get milk for her little child, a British soldier called her "Madam," and asked where her husband was. She retorted, "In the Army, where he ought to be." The soldier drew his sword, intending to frighten rather than hurt her, but she threw her arm up and cut her hand off.

Another story says she lost her hand when she refused admittance to British soldiers, and one of them threatened to cut off her hand if she did not stand aside. She did not stand aside, and the hand was severed.

One thing known for sure is that she became "Madam Hodnett," and there is a Madam Hodnett chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution named for her in Mississippi.

John Hodnett died in 1798, three years after executing a will that conveyed his slaves to his daughter, Esther Anderson, whom she was to hire out as a means of income. On Esther's death without children, the slaves were to be divided among Hodnett's three other daughters, Catherine Baker, Jane McGehee, Mary Baker, and a granddaughter, Elizabeth Findley.

Submitted by Mrs. George Mark Wood, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. George Mark Wood, Jr. (Marguerite Hodnett McDaniel); Montgomery

STEPHEN HOPKINS

1581-1644

Educator and historian Richard G. Durnin calls Stephen Hopkins "one of the most interesting characters in the earliest years of Bermuda, Virginia, and Plymouth." Possibly the son of John Hopkins of Winchester, England, Stephen and his wife Mary were living in Hursey, Hampshire on May 13, 1604 when their first child, Elizabeth, was baptized. Their second child, Constance, was baptized there on May 11, 1606, and the third one, Giles, was baptized on January 20, 1607.

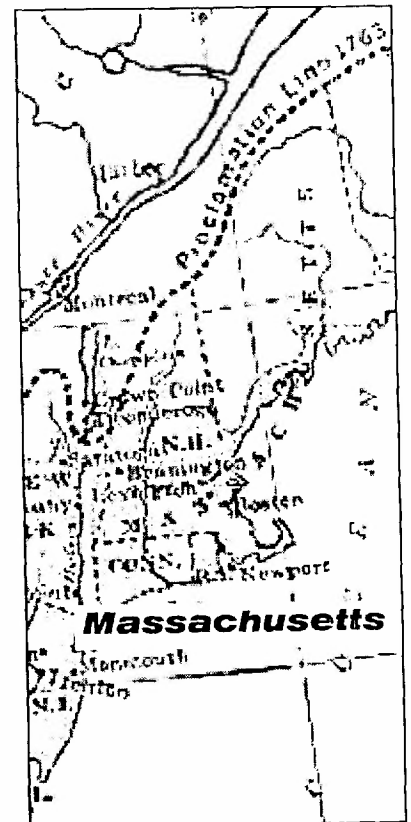
In 1609, at the age of twenty-nine, Stephen left his family to sail aboard the *Sea Venture*, the flagship of the fleet of nine ships bound for Jamestown. It is possible that his mother's kinship with Sir Walter Raleigh provided the impetus for this decision. Hopkins had a good education for the time and served as a clergyman's assistant aboard the ship. When it was severely damaged in a hurricane, the company washed ashore in Bermuda on July 28. The 150 survivors were marooned on the island for nine months, during which time they built the two vessels that ultimately took them to Virginia, where they arrived on May 24, 1610. During the time in Bermuda, Stephen Hopkins encouraged an uprising of his fellows on the grounds that the governor's authority pertained only to the voyage and the regime in Virginia, not to the forced existence in Bermuda. He was arrested but later pardoned. According to William Strachey's record of the voyage, Hopkins was "very religious, but was contentious and possessed enough learning to undertake to wrest leadership from others."

Hopkins may have remained in Virginia for some time. Upon returning to England, he found that his wife had died. Subsequently, on February 19, 1617, he married Elizabeth Fisher at St. Mary Matfellow, Whitechapel, London. Their home was just outside London Wall in the vicinity of Heneage House, in the same neighborhood as John Carver and William Bradford of the Mayflower Company, as well as Robert Cushman, the London agent for the Pilgrims.

Stephen Hopkins was recruited by Thomas Weston as one of the "Strangers" (non-Puritans) who accompanied the Separatists aboard the *Mayflower*. Weston sought individuals with skills that would be helpful to the new colony. Not only did Stephen have prior experience in the New World, he appears to have had military training.

Thus, in 1620, Stephen, his wife Elizabeth, children Constance and Giles by his first wife and daughter Demaris by Elizabeth, sailed aboard the *Mayflower*. Hopkins was obviously a man of substance, as he brought along two menservants, Edward Doty and Edward Lister. Elizabeth was one of three pregnant wives that sailed, and she gave birth to a son, aptly named Oceanus, during the voyage. Unfortunately, Oceanus died during the first year in Plymouth.

The "Mayflower Compact" is the name given in 1793 to an agreement signed aboard the *Mayflower* prior to landing. William Bradford says it was occasioned partly by the discontented and mutinous speeches that some of the 'strangers' amongst them had let fall.... That when they came a shore they would use their owne liberties; for none had power to command them, the patents they had being for Virginia, and not for Newengland, which belonged to an other Government, with which the Virginia Company had nothing to doe. This sounds reminiscent of the stand Stephen Hopkins had taken in Bermuda. Whether he was involved here is unknown, but he did sign the Compact and was a supporting and leading citizen of Plymouth.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

The American Genealogist, Volume 73, Number 3, July 1998; "The True Origin of Stephen Hopkins of the Mayflower," by Caleb Johnson.

Mayflower, by Nathaniel Philbrick, published in New York by the Penguin Group in 2006.

Mayflower Families Through Five Generations—Descendants of the Pilgrims Who Landed at Plymouth, Mass. December 1620, Volume 6, Third Edition, by John D. Austin, published in Plymouth, MA, by the General Society of Mayflower Descendants in 2001.

The Mayflower Quarterly; "Stephen Hopkins," by Richard G. Durnin, published in Plymouth, MA, in August 1998.

The Pilgrim Fathers, Their Significance in History, by Samuel Eliot Morrison, published in New York by Alfred A. Knopf in 1937.

Hopkins accompanied Captain Miles Standish on all his military expeditions and was one of the regular army established by the Plymouth Company in 1621. He was one of three men who accompanied Captain Standish on the first expedition of the Pilgrims in the New World. During the third day out, the company chanced upon a Indian deer trap, and Stephen was able to explain its function and danger to his fellows. In February of 1620/21, when Indians appeared on a neighboring hilltop, Captain Standish took Stephen Hopkins with him to negotiate. Thereafter, Stephen was invariably deputized to meet with the Indians and act as an interpreter. In July of 1621, he served as envoy to friendly Chief Massasoit. He also made a friend for the colonists of Samoset, the Native American who had lived in England, spoke English, and served as an interpreter for the colonists, although in these matters he was sometimes pursuing his own goals. Stephen and his wife, Elizabeth, entertained Samoset in their home.

Referred to as a merchant and a planter in Plymouth records, Stephen is also called "Gentleman" and "Master." The name of Stephen Hopkins headed a list of persons chosen to arrange for trade with outsiders and was repeatedly mentioned as an appraiser of estates, administrator, guardian, and juryman. He served on the Council of Assistants to the Governor of the Colony from at least 1633 to 1636, and he and his sons, Giles and Caleb, and son-in-law, Jacob Cooke (husband of Demaris), were volunteers in the Pequot War of 1637.

He kept for his home throughout his life in Plymouth the six-acre lot on the easterly corner of Main and Leyden Streets that had been assigned to him on arrival, and he enlarged his land holdings through grant or purchase. According to his will, dated June 6, 1644, he had, in addition to the children already mentioned, daughters Deborah, Ruth, and Elizabeth and a son, Caleb, who was listed as "heire apparent."

Submitted by Mrs. Joab Langston Thomas

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Joab Langston Thomas (Marly Allene Dukes); Tuscaloosa

Biographies of Our Ancestors
CALEB HOWELL SR.

c. 1710/12-1785*

Caleb Howell Sr. was born c. 1710-1712, probably in either North Carolina or Virginia. The earliest known record pertaining to him is dated March 8, 1743, a warrant by the state surveyor general to admeasure and lay out two hundred acres of land in Beaufort County, North Carolina; on the same date, the governor issued a grant covering the tract. However, the family lived on the Howell plantation, *Mount Pleasant*, almost due east of the present county seat of Wadesboro, in Anson County.

On March 14, 1745, Howell received a land grant in Bladen County, that portion of which became a part of Anson County in 1750. Howell led the building of the first courthouse on this property in 1753. (It is said that it was in the Anson County Courthouse that the spark was lighted that started the War of Regulation (1764-1771), which was the forerunner of the War for Independence, but this was long after Howell's ownership of the property.)

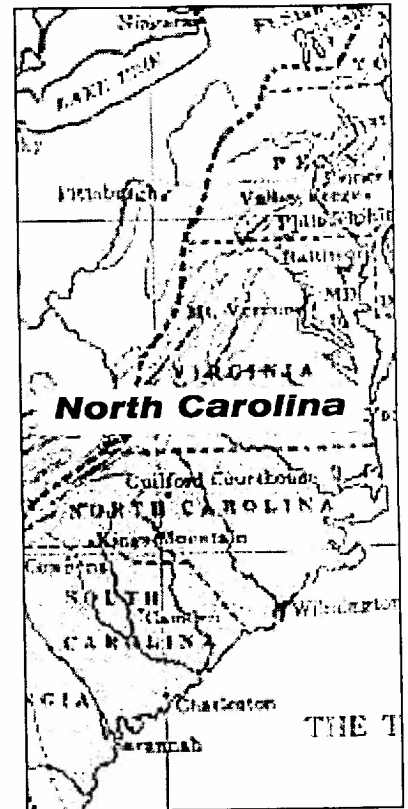
Howell was very active in civic and political life and was a member of Anson County's general assembly. Family records show that on October 12, 1751, the general assembly appointed him collector for the "act of granting His Majesty a duty on the importation of rum and wine into Anson County from South Carolina." In the following spring, on April 15, 1752, he was awarded the additional title of "Receiver and Collector of the Impost or Duty." He was to enforce "an act for licensing traders and petty chapmen (wandering peddlers) imposing a duty on goods and wares and merchandize to raise supplies for defraying the necessary charges of Government." Howell was also one of His Majesty's justices for Anson County.

In 1754, Howell was appointed to lay out the town of Gloucester as a county seat due west of Anson County. He was one of the early pioneers caught up in the excitement of opening and developing the vast wilderness. He continued to acquire more land and to play an active part in the politics of the region.

Early in 1757, Howell disposed of his property in North Carolina, and he, his wife, his seven children, and one slave started their long journey to Georgia. There were virtually no roads in the back country, and the principal means of communication and transportation were the rivers and coastal waters, along which lay most of the early settlements and villages. It is probable that they came down the Great Pee Dee River to Georgetown, South Carolina, and thence made their way by ship to Savannah, the seat of the colonial government in Georgia. They settled in St. Matthew's Parish, on the Savannah River, in July of 1757, and Howell was soon elected a justice of the peace, a position he held for many years.

Over the next few years, Caleb Howell Sr. and his sons, William, Phillip, Caleb Jr., and Daniel, were granted land, with Caleb Sr.'s all being along rivers. Father and sons were planters and owned several mills.

The last ten years of Caleb Sr.'s life must have been hard for him, yet he must have been proud of the leadership roles his sons were taking in settling and defending Georgia. By 1775, he had already lost two of his five sons, William and Thomas, and his three remaining sons were all actively serving the revolutionary cause, both in military and civil service. In 1776, Daniel was commissioned lieutenant colonel in the Georgia militia and head of the Effingham militia. About 1777 or shortly thereafter, he lost a third son, Phillip, then in the prime of his life, who had in that year succeeded Governor John Adam Treutlen as Colonel of the Effingham Militia.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

Colonial records of North Carolina
(Saunders)
Court records and surveyor records of
Anson County, Bladen County and
Beaufort County, North Carolina
Genealogy notes of Mrs. Gabriel
Sherrod Handley (Myrtis), which
cited the following references:
Georgia Archives Screven County
court records in Sylvania, Georgia
Plat records
Deeds

Caleb Jr. was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention in Philadelphia and listed as one of the eight members of the executive council. Among the measures enacted by the Continental Congress in November of 1775 was the raising of a battalion for the protection of Georgia and defense of the western frontiers of the state. In 1776, Caleb Howell, Jr. was commissioned first lieutenant in the Georgia Battalion of the Continental Line.

Caleb Jr. was a member of the house of representatives for Effingham County from 1780-1789. He was selected colonel of Effingham County Field Officers by House assembly in 1781. He was commissioner of federal road construction in 1783, and was one of the delegates to sign the Georgia ratification of the United States Constitution. He was justice of the Inferior Court and served as a justice of the peace.

Caleb Howell Sr. died in March of 1785 at his plantation in Effingham County, Georgia. His will left to his sons, Caleb Jr. and Daniel, large land holdings bounded on the northeast and east by the Savannah River. He lived to see his chosen land a free state and his sons serve distinguished military, civic, and political careers.

**NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1712-1792.*

Submitted by Mrs. George Horace Burgin Mathews

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. George Horace Burgin Mathews (Betty Anne Cooper); Montgomery

Biographies of Our Ancestors

THOMAS HYNSON

1620-1667

Could there be an actual trait or inclination for the practice of law that is passed down through a family? Perhaps that is the explanation for why, in one of Thomas Hynson's descendant families, three out of six children are lawyers, and one of those has been president of the Alabama Bar Association.

Thomas Hynson/Hinson was born in England in 1620. He immigrated to Maryland in 1651 with his wife, Grace, daughters Grace and Ann (the future Mrs. Thomas Norris), son and heir Thomas Jr., and son John. Two additional sons, Charles and Henry, were born in Maryland.

Almost as soon as he arrived, Thomas Hynson became involved in law and local government. An attorney, he was clerk of Kent County, commissioner in 1652, 1654, and 1656. He was high sheriff for Kent County in 1655. At one point, he served as a jury foreman on a jury that had his sons, John and Thomas, and his son-in-law Thomas Norris, as members. He was justice of Talbot County from 1652 through 1657.

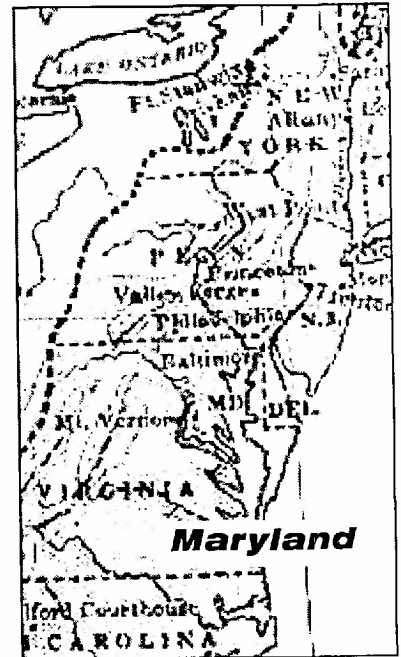
In 1659, a grant of two thousand two hundred acres of land was made to Thomas Hynson; it included the manor house, *Hitchingham*. At that time, Thomas Hynson was thirty-nine years old and serving as a member of the state legislature; court was held several times in the house. Hyson eventually owned three thousand six hundred acres in Kent County. Along with his friend, Joseph Wickes, he had received grants for all the land on Eastern Neck Island. It is supposed that Thomas Hynson made his home at *Hitchingham* for most of the years preceding his death in 1667.

Submitted by Mrs. Andrew A. Smith

DESCENDANTS:

Miss Martha Bayley Crosby; Point Clear

Mrs. Andrew A. Smith (Sarah Norris Crosby); Fairhope



SOURCE:

Maryland's Colonial Eastern Shore: Historical Sketches of Counties and Some Notable Structures, edited by Swepson Earle and Percy G. Skirven, privately published in Baltimore in 1916.

In Grateful Remembrance **ROBERT JONES**

1718-1766



Robert (Robin) Jones was of Welsh descent. His grandfather, also named Robert, had come to Virginia from Wales as a young man on a British man-of-war. He was a boatswain who jumped ship at Old Point Comfort near Norfolk in order to join the girl who became his wife. The family grew and moved from Norfolk and Surrey County, Virginia, southward, eventually settling in Halifax District, North Carolina.

Connections with the mother country and relatives in Britain were strong. Robin went back to England to be educated in the law, and attracted the attention of Lord Granville. Despite the king's revocation of Granville's charter as lord proprietor, Granville had managed to retain holdings in roughly one-half the territory that would become the state of North Carolina. Robin returned to North Carolina from England and served in the colonial assembly from 1754 through 1755. In 1761, he was appointed an agent of Lord Granville and attorney general for the crown in North Carolina. It was said of Robin Jones that he delayed a procedure to have his diseased leg amputated until he could argue a case in court (and presumably win), such was his dedication to the law and his clients.

Sarah Cobb (whom he married in 1737/38) was Robin's first wife, and gave him numerous children. His sons, Allen and Willie (evidence suggests the second name was pronounced "Wylie"), were sent across the Atlantic to attend Eton. They returned to North Carolina and became prominent supporters of the Revolutionary cause.

Submitted by Mrs. Mark Richard McCulloh

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. George Douglas Cunningham (Hetty Lyon Horst); Spanish Fort
Mrs. Mark Richard McCulloh (Audrey Hathaway Rugg); Mooresville, North Carolina
Mrs. David Winston Miller, Sr. (Ann Drummond Russell); Mobile
Mrs. Clyde Carlos Rouse (Lucy Herndon Horst); Mobile
Mrs. Samuel Hathaway Rugg (Katherine Lee Mahood); Greensboro
Mrs. Barry Lewis Wilson (Corinna McCafferty); Montgomery

SOURCES:

A Genealogical History, by Colonel
Cadwallader Jones, published in
Columbia, SC, by Bryan Printing in
1899.

Miscellaneous family papers.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

THOMAS JORDAN

1600-1644

Jordan is derived from the Biblical Hebrew word *jar-den*, which means "river of judgment." Other spellings of the surname include *Jerdan*, *Jordon*, *Jordayne*, *Jordain*, *Jourdan*, and *Jurdan*. The Jordan family was seated in Dorsetshire as early as 1400.

Thomas Jordan was born in England in 1600 and immigrated to the Virginia colony aboard *The Diana* in 1618 or 1624. He was reported to be living in James City, as he is listed in the census of 1624 and again in 1625, where his name heads the list of a dozen of Governor Sir George Yeardley's men. Being in this list indicates that Thomas was one of the Governor's Guards, a position of honor and respect. In 1624-1625, he was living in Pashebaighy (or *Pasbyhayes* or *Pasbehays* or *Pasbehaighs*), in "The Main," James Cittie, the early name for Jamestown.

He "followed the Puritan trek to Nansemond," which may or may not indicate he followed the Puritan religious faith. He was the first of his family in or near the town of Isle of Wight, Warresquoake (or Wariscoyack) County, Virginia. He was a member of the House of Burgesses in from 1629 until 1632. During this same period, he was also made a commissioner of Warresquoake County. By 1637, Warresquoake County was a part of Isle of Wight County.

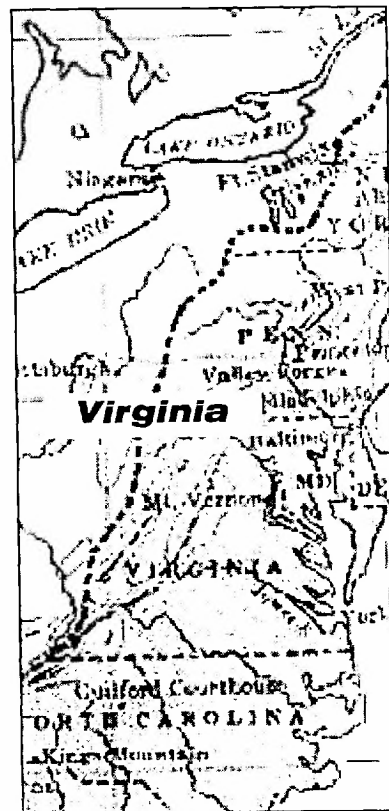
In 1632, Thomas Jordan personally paid for the transport of eighteen new colonists to Virginia. On July 2, 1635, he was rewarded a land grant of nine hundred acres near Isle of Wight in Warresquoake County. In the same year, he also acquired an additional two hundred acres from a Benjamin Harrison. By 1637, Thomas had "Taken up his abode in the Upper County of New Norfolk (Nasemond)." A patent issued to one Thomas Davis on August 10, 1644 for three hundred acres in Nasemond County notes that it adjoined the "land of Thomas Jordan dec'd." Thomas Davis was the father of James Thomas Davis, who married Thomas Jordan's daughter, Margaret (1643-1688).

Thomas Jordan was married before 1634 to Lucy Corker. In addition to daughter Margaret, there was a son, Thomas Jr., and possibly a second son, Richard.

Submitted by Mrs. James Irby Barganier

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Irby Barganier (Jane Elizabeth Ware Jordan); Montgomery
 Mrs. Edward Leo Grund (Constance McDavid Haynesworth); Birmingham
 Mrs. Brian Ward Hindman (Mary Margaret Livingston); Rushton, Louisiana
 Mrs. Ernest Fleetwood Ladd III (Florence Greaves Leatherbury); Mobile
 Mrs. Gregory L. Leatherbury (Florence Morton Greaves); Mobile
 Mrs. James A. Livingston (Margaret Morrow Gresham); Birmingham
 Mrs. Kate Webb Ragsdale (Kate Raney Webb); Tuscaloosa
 Mrs. Edward Hartwell Kidder Smith (Lydia Eustis Lucas); Atlanta, Georgia
 Mrs. Walter Winfield Wilson (Jane Kaul); Birmingham

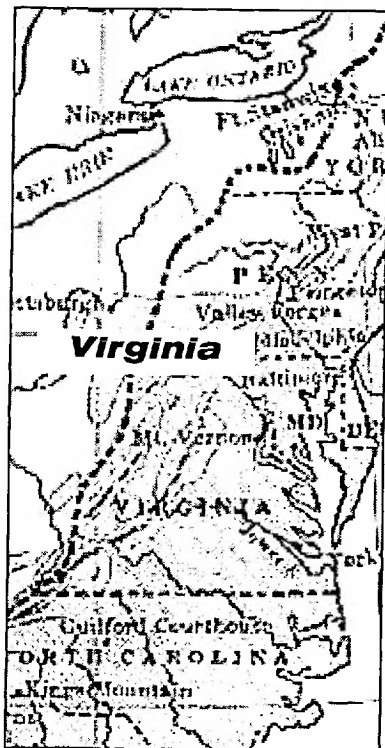


SOURCES:

The Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-24/25), by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.
Virginia Immigrants and Adventurers 1607-1635, by Martha W. McCartney, published in Baltimore by the Genealogical Publishing Company in 2007.

In Grateful Remembrance
RICHARD KENNER JR.

c.1636-1691



SOURCES:

<http://www.lightpatch.com/genealogy/paf/fafn06.htm>

http://www.jamestownchesapeakebay-company.com/Ancestor_Sketches_Of_Members_Of_The_Chesapeake_Bay_Company_Of_The_Jamestowne_Society.htm#RICHARD%20KENNER

"The Kenner Family" in *William and Mary Quarterly Magazine*, Volume III, 1982 (Genealogies of Virginia Families).

Richard Kenner Jr. was born c.1636 in Oxfordshire, England. He married Elizabeth Rodham, who was born in Kent Island, St. Mary's, Virginia in 1649/51. Her father, Matthew Rodham, deeded a wedding gift of 750 acres of land in Northumberland County, Virginia, in 1664 to Richard Kenner Jr. (Matthew Rodham was one of the early English settlers in Northumberland County, being first located in Accomack County in 1634 at age fourteen. In a 1653 deposition, he stated he was about thirty-three years old.)

With his father-in-law's gift, plus the property he already owned and later acquired, Richard Kenner Jr.'s plantation eventually included more than two thousand acres on the Coan River near the mouth of the Potomac. The family seat there was known as Kennersly; Richard Kenner Jr.'s occupation was listed as a tobacco planter and shipper.

Richard and Elizabeth Kenner had seven children. The births of all but the last one are in the register of St. Stephens Parish in Northumberland County, Virginia. The children recorded were: Rodham Kenner (born 1670/71); Richard III (born 1672/73); John (born 1677); Francis (born 1680/81); Elizabeth (born 1684); and Matthew (born 1687/89).

Richard Kenner was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1688 and 1691, and he held the rank of captain in the militia and served as a justice. He died in the year 1691 at approximately fifty-six years of age.

Submitted by Mrs. Henry Edward Warden, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. William Alan Dennis (Mary Beth Seals); Tuscaloosa

Mrs. Patton Biscoe Seals (Marthan D'Alton Turner); Tuscaloosa

Mrs. Henry Edward Warden, Jr. (Susan Ruth Seals); Columbus, Mississippi

Biographies of Our Ancestors
SAMUEL LANE

1628-1682

Major Samuel Lane, born in London in 1628, was the son of Richard Lane and Allyce Carter. The Lane family is traced to Robert Lane, apothecary, buried April 30, 1603, at St. Peter's Church in Hereford, leaving his wife Beatrix and eight children. Robert was the father of Richard, who embarked for Providence Island in the West Indies in 1632 to establish the commercial production of the madder plant, the roots of which were used to manufacture a versatile red dye.

Samuel Lane moved as a child with his parents to the West Indies. His father's good friend was Nathaniel Butler, the governor of Providence Island, who had once visited the Maryland area of America and found it very inviting. Samuel listened raptly as his father and Captain Butler discussed the possibility of making a life in Maryland one day.

In 1657, Samuel was dispatched back to England to be educated; indications point toward a religious curriculum. That same year, his father, Richard, died in a storm near Providence Island, along with one of Samuel's brothers. Samuel's mother, Allyce, petitioned the Crown for her husband's back salary, plus a pension, so that she might return to live England with her remaining children. Her petition was granted.

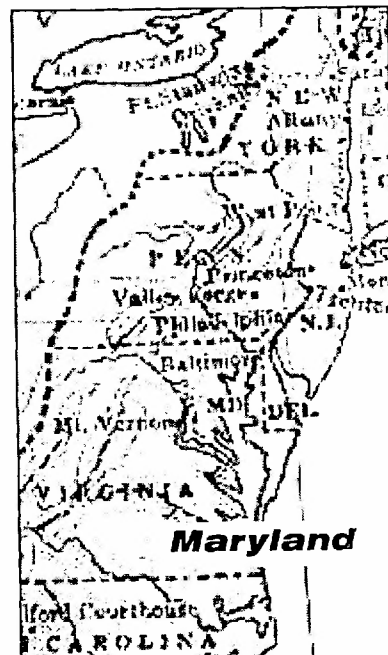
The life of a clergyman did not seem to sit well on Samuel. In 1662, he was discharged from a church in Northumberland over differences in opinion, and he appears to have then abandoned that career. To add to his troubles, his wife, Barbara Roddam, died sometime within the next two years.

So it was, in 1664, when he was thirty-five years old, that Samuel Lane emigrated to Anne Arundel County, Maryland, perhaps fueled by the memories of those long-ago conversations in the West Indies. He found a new wife within five years: she was Margaret, widow of John Burrage, daughter of Francis and Grace Maulden. They had three children: Samuel Jr. (born 1670); Dutton (born 1671); and Sarah (born 1675).

His wife brought a considerable amount of wealth into the marriage, perhaps as many as five different plantations, which Samuel managed well, and the family prospered. There is evidence that Samuel Lane practiced medicine, probably learned from local doctors, since various references cite him as a "chirurgion" (an archaic term for surgeon), a doctor, and a "doctor of physick."

Even though his business interests were enough to keep him fully occupied, much of Samuel Lane's energy went into military and public service. As early as 1675, he had been named a major in the army of the King of England. He was also serving as a commissioner of the peace, and was one of the gentlemen of the quorum in Anne Arundel County (See Glossary: Quorum).

In midsummer of 1676, Lane attended the council of war at St. Mary's in order to determine what to do about the Seneca Nation Indians, who had killed several English settlers in the Ann Arundel area. As a major, Lane was responsible for recruiting the volunteers for his army. He apparently succeeded, for the Senecas were temporarily subdued, but as time went by, the Indians continued to be a threat. In 1681, Major Lane wrote the following plea to a senior officer:



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

*Adventurers, Cavaliers, Patriots:
Ancestors Remembered*, by the National
Society of Colonial Dames in the
State of Maryland, published in
Baltimore by the National Society of
Colonial Dames in the State of
Maryland in 1994.

Archives of Maryland

A History of English Law, by W.S.
Holdsworth, published in London by
Methuen & Company in 1903.

Library of Congress: Lane Family
Monograph
<http://ladytuffie.tripod.com/LaneFamilyTree/id4.html>

The County of Anne Arundell is at this time in Greate danger. Our men marched all Monday night, the greatest part of South river had been most cutt off. Wee want Ammunition exceedingly, and have not where-with-all to furnish half our men. I hope your Lpp. (lordship) will dispatch away Coll. Burges with what ammunition may be thought covient. I shall give all the care that lieth in me, but there comes daily and hourelly Complaints to me that I am wholly Employed in the Country's Service.

Sept. 13, 1681 In haste with my humble service, Samuel Lane

Despite these hardships and others, Major Lane, along with other armies like his own, were able to "fight, kill, take, vanquish, overcome, follow, and destroy" the Senecas and establish order to the area.

Life was not limited to skirmishes with the Indians, however. On December 13, 1680, Samuel Lane was named to administer oath of office to all others as Commissioner to Justices, in a proclamation that began, "To our trusty and well beloved Colonel William Burgess and Major Samuel Lane." His will is dated January 18, 1682, and, in addition to a legacy of high regard, he left substantial wealth. Although his widow, Margaret, married a third time, the properties she had brought to their union stayed with the Lane estate, and their eldest son, Samuel, inherited *Browseley Hall* and the other son, Dutton, received another dwelling plantation and three hundred acres.

Submitted by Mrs. Aloysius Edward Stuardi, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Aloysius Edward Stuardi, Jr. (Ann Louise Roberts); Theodore

RICHARD HENRY LEE

1590-1664

Richard Lee I, also known as "The Immigrant," was the founder of the Lee family in Virginia. He was born a member of the Coton branch of the Lees of County Shropshire, England, a well-established family, originally de la Lee, and probably of Norman descent. They lived in the Alveley Parish at their estate, *Coton Hall*, from the 1300s onwards.

Lee immigrated to Virginia c. 1640, settling first in York County and later at Dividing Creek in Northumberland. In 1642, he patented a one-thousand acre tract on Poropotank Creek, obtained by paying for the transportation of seventeen indentured servants to the colony as laborers on the tract. On this land, Lee planted tobacco and began fur trading with the Indians. This later became the plantation he named *Paradise*. He accumulated vast amounts of acreage in Gloucester and Fairfax Counties.

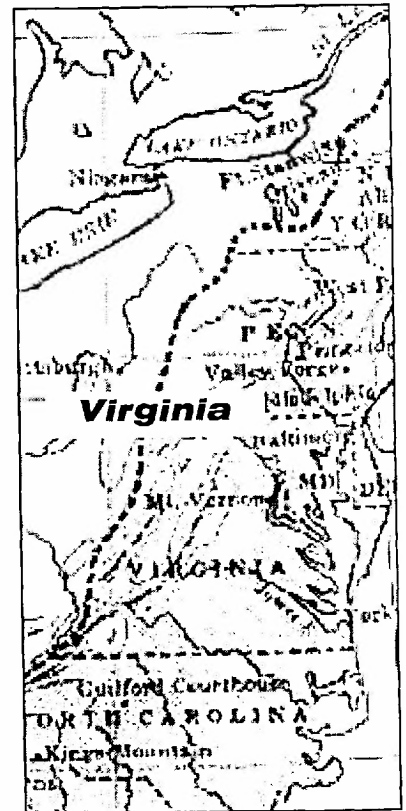
Lee married Ann Constable (1600-1649) in Jamestown, Virginia. She was the daughter of the late Thomas Constable and a ward of Sir John Thoroughgood, a personal attendant of Charles I, King of England. She had accompanied the family of the Virginia governor, Sir Francis Wyatt (1595-1644) to Virginia, and, at the time of her marriage, she was residing at their home. This affiliation soon helped Richard move socially upward within the colony. In 1643, the new governor, Sir William Berkeley (1607-1677), appointed Richard Lee the attorney general.

Because of his interest in fur trading, Richard went to live among the Indians beyond the frontier settlement, making him likely the first white man to settle in the northern neck of Virginia. In 1644, hordes of Powhatan Indians massacred three hundred newcomers to the area where Lee and his family were living. The Lees escaped and settled at New Pogeson, where it was safer. Five years later, after peace with the Indians had been accomplished, the Lees moved back to Poropotank Creek, where he set up a trading post and a tobacco warehouse.

During his lifetime, Lee was appointed to a number of offices in the Jamestown colony, which included sheriff and burgess of York County in 1646-1647, colonial secretary of state in 1649, and the governor's council in 1651. He kept the official records of Jamestown, issuing marriage, travel, and hunting licenses and recorded wills and land titles. He held the office of colonel of the Northumberland Militia, with the militia being the only military force in the Virginia colony in the seventeenth century.

Richard and Anne Lee had ten children, including two sets of twins. Eight children survived: John, Richard II, Francis, William, Hancock, Elizabeth, Anne, and Charles. The family resided at *Paradise* from 1653 through 1656. During this time, Richard invested in two trading ships and brought more indentured servants into the country, which gave him the legal standing to acquire more property; he was extremely successful in acquiring land. He used his ships to ferry goods and people between England and the New World, and established a vibrant fur trade. He traveled to England himself in 1654-55, 1659, 1661, and 1663.

In 1656, Richard left the *Paradise* tract to overseers and resettled on one thousand nine hundred acres on Virginia's northern neck, on the peninsula formed by the Rappahannock and Potomac Rivers. He named the new plantation *Dividing Creek*, but it later became known as *Cobb's Hall*. His youngest son, Charles, would inherit this land at Richard's death, and it would eventually pass to Charles' great-grandson, Robert E. Lee.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

Adventurers, Cavaliers, Patriots, "Richard Lee," by Mrs. Joseph Marion Gough, Jr., published by the NSCDA-Maryland in 1994.

Lee of Virginia, by Edward Jennings Lee, self-published in Philadelphia in 1895.

Maryland's Book of Ancestors, by Mrs. Joseph Marion Gough, Jr.

Virginia Homes of the Lees, by Eleanor Lee Templeman published in Arlington, VA, by George Mason University in 1985. Source:

Between 1657-1658, Lee purchased acreage along the Potomac River, where the city of Washington, D. C. would rise and where *Mount Vernon*, George Washington's home, would stand.

In 1661, Richard Lee moved his family to England. His two sons were being educated at Oxford, and he wanted his younger children to also receive a proper education. Nevertheless, he wanted his children to reside in Virginia, and his will specified that they would return to America upon his death. In the meantime, he continued his role as a Virginia planter and merchant while living at his estate, *Stratford-Langton*, three miles from London, in Essex County.

Colonel Richard Henry Lee I died in 1664 at *Dividing Creek*, where he, his wife, and several of their descendants are buried. At the time of his death, Lee owned fifteen thousand acres of land, more than any other person in Virginia, and was also the wealthiest person in the colony. His will leaves his plantations, *Mount Pleasant*, *Ditchly*, *Lee Hall*, *Blenheim*, *Paradise*, *Leesylvania*, *Dividing Creek*, and *Stratford*, to his children.

Submitted by Mrs. Nimrod Thompson Frazer and Mrs. Thomas Mendenhall Boulware III

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Thomas Mendenhall Boulware III (Mary Eugenia Camp); Birmingham

Mrs. Mark Livingston Drew (Patricia Anne Faulkner); Birmingham

Mrs. David Moore Driscoll (Patricia Irene Boulware); Birmingham

Mrs. David Lawrence Faulkner (Patricia Alice Camp); Birmingham

Mrs. Nimrod Thompson Frazer (Patricia Lee Martin); Montgomery

Mrs. William Schley Hereford (Laurie Camp Faulkner); Birmingham

Mrs. David Whitehead Hobbs (Mary Eugenia Boulware); Birmingham

Mrs. Robinson Clarendon McClure (Louise Vass McClelland); Mobile

Mrs. Phillip Gillis Stutts (Mildred Eugenia Faulkner); Birmingham

Mrs. Thomas Frank Tucker (Virginia Stockham Ladd); Birmingham

Biographies of Our Ancestors

FIELDING LEWIS

1725-1781

Fielding Lewis was born in Gloucester County, Virginia. He married Catharine Washington on October 18, 1746. She was his second cousin, daughter of John Washington and Catharine Whiting, and first cousin to George Washington. The marriage produced three children, only one of which (John) survived infancy. Catharine died on February 19, 1750.

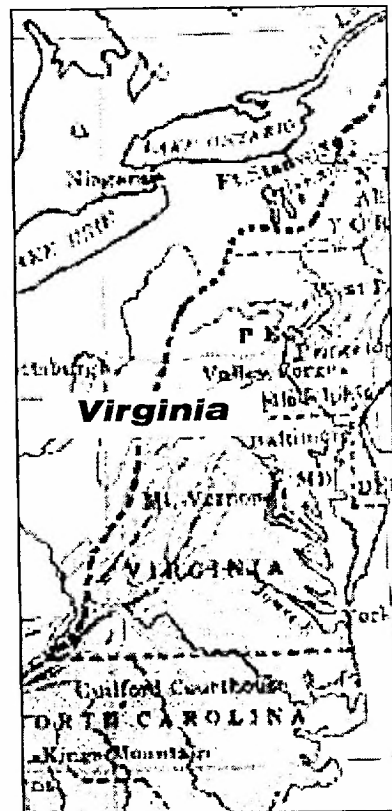
Less than three months later, on May 7, 1750, Fielding married Elizabeth ("Betty") Washington, sister to George Washington, with whom Lewis had a close personal friendship. The marriage produced eleven children: Fielding Jr. (born 1751); Augustine (born 1752); Warner (born 1755); George (born 1757); Mary (born 1759); Charles (born 1760); Samuel (born 1763); Betty (born 1765); Lawrence (born 1767); Robert (born 1769); and Howell (born 1771). Augustine, Warner, and Mary died in early childhood or infancy; Charles died at fifteen years of age and Samuel at eleven, leaving six children to reach maturity.

Betty Washington Lewis was said to look very much like her brother, George. In fact, to quote the American portrait painter, John Wollaston, "She was a most majestic looking woman, and so strikingly like her brother, that it was a matter of frolic to throw a cloak around her, place a military hat on her head, and on her appearance battalions would have presented arms and senates risen to do honor to the chief." Betty and her brother remained close, and she often sent him "honey from the comb," which he professed to be a favorite.

A member of the House of Burgesses from 1760-1769, Fielding Lewis traveled twice a year to Williamsburg to attend the sessions. He had also been appointed colonel in the Spotsylvania militia in 1757. The Lewis family lived near Fredericksburg, Virginia. In 1769 they started building a large Georgian mansion, named *Kenmore House*, at their estate; it was finished in 1775. (Today it is open to the public for viewing.) A large part of the town of Fredericksburg was built on what was originally Lewis land. Fielding Lewis was the first mayor of Fredericksburg.

As an ardent supporter of American independence, Lewis served as commissary general of munitions, operating and financing a gunnery in Fredericksburg to arm the American troops. He expended a great deal of his own money that, although appreciated by the Cause, was never reimbursed to him.

Distressed over his financial situation, Lewis's health declined, and he developed lung trouble, known in his day as consumption. Lewis Fielding, a loyal patriot to the end, died in 1781, a few weeks after the American victory at Yorktown. He was buried in the churchyard of St. George's Church in Fredericksburg. The settling of his business was troublesome, because the bulk of his estate consisted mainly of the considerable land holdings he had amassed during his lifetime. Currency was deflated at the time of his death, resulting in low values being awarded to real estate and, thus, leaving his widow in dire financial straits. Nevertheless, land was sold and bills were paid.



In Grateful Remembrance

Betty Washington Lewis was able to educate her sons by running a small boarding school on the grounds of *Kenmore House*. Although acres were sold, she was able to keep her beautiful home and gardens. Mrs. Lewis is recorded as having maintained her usual cheerfulness that "animated all around her" as she managed her household with strict economy, while remaining a loving and sympathetic friend to all.

Submitted by Mrs. Thomas Michael Goodrich

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Thomas Michael Goodrich (Gillian Comer White); Birmingham

Mrs. Mary Lee White (Mary Lee White); Birmingham

SOURCES:

Kenmore and the Lewises by Jane Taylor
Duke, published in Garden
City, NY, by Doubleday and Company
in 1949.

Specialties of the House by the Kenmore
Association, published in
Fredericksburg, VA, by the Kenmore
Association in 1992.

ROBERT LIVINGSTON

1654-1728

The Livingston name in colonial New York was of significant prominence. The immigrant, Robert Livingston, rose from a humble beginning as an Albany fur trader and clerk to become the first Lord of Livingston Manor and the wealthiest person in the upper Hudson area. He founded one of New York's premier political dynasties, which his sons and grandsons carried on after his death.

Robert Livingston, the fourteenth child and the eighth son of the Reverend John Livingston and his wife, Janet Fleming, was born at Ancrum, Roxburghshire, Scotland, on December 13, 1654. His father, a minister of the Church of Scotland, was forced into exile in 1663, due to his resistance to attempts at reformation in the Presbyterian Church.

The family sought refuge in Rotterdam, Holland, when Robert was about nine years old and remained there several years. Robert became fluent in the Dutch language, an accomplishment that would serve him well in his lifetime. The Reverend Livingston died when Robert was eighteen and, since Robert had no inclination to become a minister, his personal exile officially ended. Returning to his native Scotland for a brief time, the young adventurer set his eyes on the new world and the endless possibilities for an astute, shrewd and industrious man to make his fortune. Robert Livingston set sail from Greenoch on April 28, 1673, on "the good ship called the *Catharine* of Charlestown, Captain John Phillips, commander thereof, bound for Charlestown in New England in America" as he records in his journal kept during the first two weeks of this voyage.

Livingston arrived at Charlestown, near Boston, and immediately set out for the neighboring province of New York, possibly motivated by his knowledge of the Dutch language and the fact that the once Dutch colony of New Netherland had been transferred to British control. Not finding employment in the city, he proceeded up the Hudson River to Albany, where trade with the Indians was a lucrative business. He formed relationships locally and with the colonial authorities at New York and was soon appointed to the post of secretary of the commissaries. As such, he supervised the affairs of Albany and surrounding districts. Within a few years he received other appointments and served as town clerk, collector and receiver of customs, and secretary for Indian affairs.

He strengthened his ties with the leading Dutch families by marrying Alida Schuyler, the young widow of Diminie Nicholas Van Rensselaer. The union connected him with two of the oldest and wealthiest families in the province: their estates were measured in square miles rather than by acres. He recorded in his family Bible: "1679. On the 9th day of July, I Robert Livingston, was wedded to my worthy helpmeet Alida Schuyler, (widow of Dominie Nicholas Van Rensselaer), in the Presbyterian Church at Albany (America) by Dominie Gideon Schaats. May God be with us and bless us." They were to be married for forty-nine years and would produce nine children: Johannes, Margaret, Johanna, Phillippina, Philip, Gilbert, William, Johanna and Catherine.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

The Livingston Family in America and Its Scottish Origins, by Florence Van Rensselaer, published in New York in 1949.

The Livingston Manor: An Address Written for the New York Branch of the Order of Colonial Records of Manors in America, by John Henry Livingston.

The Livingstons of Livingston Manor, by Edwin Brockholst Livingston, published in New York by The Knickerbocker Press in 1910.

By the early 1680s, realizing that the power of the colony lay with the great land owners, Livingston turned his attention to acquiring land. Over the years, he had proved himself of great value to the royal government as an advisor, emissary and financier. In return he received land patents, including a manor patent from Governor Dongan of the lands lying for ten miles on the east bank of the Hudson River about thirty miles south of Albany and extending to the northeast boundary line, a total of about 160,000 acres. This tract embraced large portions of what are now Dutchess and Columbia Counties in the state of New York and created Livingston Manor. Robert was decreed the first Lord of Livingston Manor, a title granted in 1686 and confirmed by King George I in 1691.

Robert Livingston was elected to the New York General Assembly in 1709. In 1715, the Manor of Livingston was given representation in the general assembly, a position that Robert assumed; for seven years he was the Assembly's speaker. On October 1, 1728, not long after his retirement, Robert, the first Lord of Livingston Manor died, bequeathing the bulk of his estate, including the manor house, to his son Philip.

Submitted by Mrs. Jonathan Bullock Flynn

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Jonathan Bullock Flynn (Jean Ross); Mobile
Mrs. Henry Maclin Smith (Jean Ross Flynn); Fairhope

Biographies of Our Ancestors

EDWARD LOUGHTON

unknown-1707

Edward Loughton was born in England. He arrived in Charleston, South Carolina, with wife Sarah, in the late 1600s, as an adventurer seeking gold and silver. Nothing is known of his life before he and Sarah left London to sail to the colonies. Edward and his friend, Solomon Legare, also of Charles Towne, and his brother-in-law, David Maybank of *Hobclaw Point* plantation, explored and prospected, seeking to open mines in Carolina—"especially those beyond the Appallate Mountains." They were also trading with the Indians; it was rumored during that time that Charles Towne traded nearly one thousand miles into the Continent.

Luck must have followed Edward, for he bought properties and lived quite well in Charles Towne. Then, in 1700/01, for some unknown reason, he and Sarah sailed to Barbados. While there, Sarah died. There were two sons by this marriage, Nathaniel and David.

After Sarah's death, Edward returned to Charles Towne, and later married Mary Fairchild. Little is known of her background, except that she had a brother named Thomas Fairchild. Edward and Mary had one son, William.

Edward was elected to the common assembly of South Carolina as a representative from Berkeley County. He was elected two more times, on February 13, 1705/06 and May 21, 1707. He died in December of 1707, and was buried at Christ Church.

Edward and Mary's son, William, became a planter; he died in 1727. He had married Mary Griffith, and they had two children, Mary and Anne. Upon William's death, Mary Griffith Loughton married Robert Brewton.

Edward's widow, Mary Fairchild Loughton, made a second marriage to John Bee, brother of South Carolina's lieutenant governor, Thomas Bee. They lived in Charles Towne. Mary Fairchild Loughton Bee died in 1730, leaving all to her granddaughters, Mary and Anne, with two exceptions: a gift of money to her goddaughter, Susannah Brewton, who was Mary Griffith Loughton Brewton's first child with her second husband, Robert Brewton; and to her favorite slave, Tony, his freedom.

Submitted by Mrs. Harry Joshua Coons

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Harry Joshua Coons (Alleda Ann Whatley); Huntsville

Mrs. Joseph Harris Oswalt (Drucilla Springer); Mobile

Mrs. Curtis Howe Springer (Mary Haden Whatley); Montgomery



SOURCES:

Alabama Historical Quarterly, Vol. 15, 1953.

Barnsdale Family History and Gen., published in Richmond, VA, by W.M. Byrd Press in 1940.

The Charleston Courier, December 1843 and July 1848.

A History of Independent or Congregational Church of Charleston, S.C., by George Edwards, published in Boston by The Pilgrim Press in 1947.

History of South Carolina Under the Proprietary Government, 1670-1719, by Edward McGrady, published in New York by The McMillan Company in 1901.

South Carolina Commons House of Assembly, 1702-1711, Vol. 27.

South Carolina Historical and Genealogical Magazine, Vol. 35, XIX, VI, and XXII.

South Carolina State Grants, Vol. 62 and Vol. 58

In Grateful Remembrance
ALEXANDER LOVE

1718-1784



Alexander Love was born in Pennsylvania in 1718. At the age of thirty, he, a Presbyterian, married Margaret Moore, a Quaker. The Society of Friends disowned her for "outgoing in marriage" that is, choosing a husband outside the faith. Alexander and Margaret settled in York County, Pennsylvania, lived there for about twenty years, and had eleven children: Rachel, Andrew, James, Mary, Jane, Elizabeth, Margaret, Sarah, Robert, Alexander, and William.

Sometime between 1760 and 1771, the Loves migrated to the Fishing Creek area of Craven County, North Carolina, which became Craven County, South Carolina, in the New Acquisition of 1772. In 1763 the king had given an order for this area to be re-surveyed, and the result gave South Carolina several additional counties—the New Acquisition.

Alexander became a prominent and influential citizen in South Carolina. As a representative of the New Acquisition, he was a member of the Provincial Congress that met in Charleston on November 1, 1775 and March 1776. When the district in which he lived was laid out, he was sent as a member of the legislature and succeeded in having the new district named York, after his old home in Pennsylvania.

Two of Alexander Love's sons and two sons-in-law took up arms in the cause of their country in the American Revolution, and his daughter Sarah was mistakenly killed by a soldier commanded by her brother Andrew. Alexander Love is buried in Bethesda Cemetery, adjoining Bethesda Presbyterian Church, in Yorkville, South Carolina, where he was a ruling spirit from the time of his moving to the Carolina. His tombstone bears the inscription: "Alexander Love died March, 1784. Aged 66 years. A lover of Mankind, a friend to his country."

SOURCES:

Ancestors and Descendants of Andrew Moore, 1612-1897, Vol. I, by John Andrew Moore Passmore, published in Lancaster, PA, by Wickersham Print Company in 1897.

The Family of John Murphy, Sr. (York County, South Carolina and Lowndes County, Mississippi), Book I, by James L. Murphy, published in Henderson, TN, by Hester Publications in 1996.

Submitted by Mrs. Thomas Wing Sparrow, IV

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Thomas Wing Sparrow, IV (Emily Starr Amason); Auburn

SAMUEL MAGRUDER

1654-1711

Originally *MacGregor*, a name known in Scotland as early as 787, the name Magruder came about through an Act of Privy Council under King James IV. The MacGregor and Culquhoun clans clashed in some manner, and the name change was intended as punishment for the MacGregor clan's unruly behavior.

Samuel Magruder was born in 1654 in Calvert County, Maryland, the second son of Alexander Magruder and Margaret Braithwaite. Alexander Magruder had emigrated to Maryland about 1652, having been born in Scotland in 1610. Although his sons and descendants fought in America's colonial wars, the immigrant took no part in the affairs of his new country. His son, Samuel, married Sarah Beall (1669-1734) in 1685. They had twelve children: Samuel Jr., Ninian, John, James, William, Alexander, Elizabeth, Sarah, Nathaniel, Verlinda, Mary, and Elinor.

Magruder was a civil officer and a captain of militia in Prince George's County in 1696 and signed the address of congratulations to King William on his escape from assassination. He was a vestryman of St. Paul's Parish.

Colonel Magruder was a gentleman justice of Prince George's County from 1696 to 1705. The position of justice in colonial days was one of importance and responsibility, and only those of the highest citizenship dared to aspire to its dignity. Magruder was also a member of the Calvert Hundred in 1692, a commissioner in 1697, and a member of the House of Burgesses from Prince George's County from 1704 through 1707. Records show that he was annually assessed for forty-eight thousand pounds of tobacco, the largest income tax in Maryland.

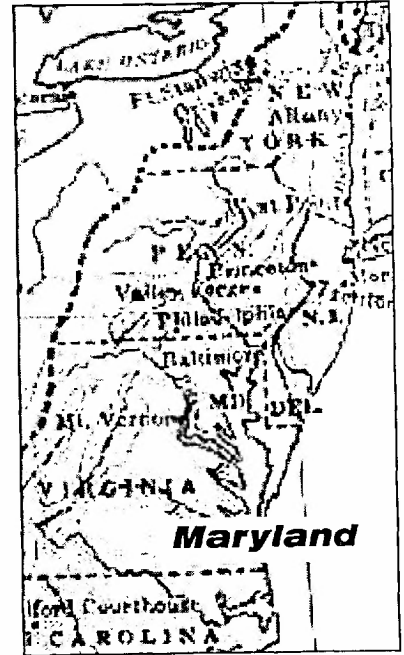
Upon his death in 1711, his will decreed that his wife, Sarah, would have a plantation with dwelling and land. Other plantations, along with acreage, went to his sons. The names of these plantations were *Good Luck*, *Magruder's Delight*, *Alexandria*, *Dumblane*, *Turkey Cock*, *Seven Branch*, and *Marlborough Torn*. To his daughters, he left "ten (one source states one hundred) pounds for to bye them a gowne and petty cote." This was a large sum in 1711. Picturing the girls in their "gownes" and "petty coats" makes them real to readers today.

Samuel's wife, Sarah, died in 1734, and they were probably both buried in the Presbyterian graveyard connected to the Meeting House, which had been founded by Sarah's father, Ninian Beale. Regrettably, all traces of the graveyard have been obliterated by time.

Submitted by Mrs. Alfred Ray Cavender

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Alfred Ray Cavender (Dorothy Carol Haggard); Auburn
Mrs. John Michael Jenkins (Margaret Kent Callaway); Montgomery
Mrs. Lawson Sykes Martin (Donie DeBardeleben Neal); Courtland



SOURCES:

Archives of Maryland, Volume 20.

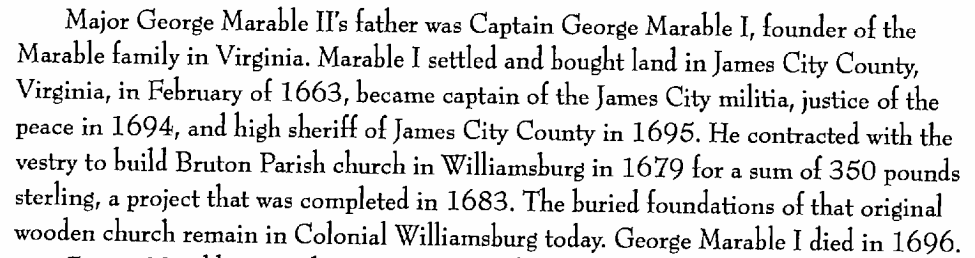
Genealogy of the Beall Family,
Colonial Families of the United
States Descended from Immigrants, by
F.M.M. Beall.

Joseph O. Thompson and Annic
Magruder Thompson, "a genealogy edit-
ed, compiled, and privately published
by James Spurlock Farrior in 1985."

Unpublished family records, 1625-
1890, by Miss Ruth Beall.

Zimmerman, Waters, and Allied Families,
by Dorothy Edmonstone Zimmerman
Allen, self-published in 1900.

1675-1735*



George Marable II was born c. 1675 and died in 1735. He married Mary Hartwell, daughter of Captain William Hartwell, in 1699. George sold his father's property in Jamestown and in 1699 patented 135 acres in James City County, Virginia. Major Marable was a gentleman justice in 1700 and captain, then major, in the James City militia from 1703-1709. He also served as high sheriff of James City County and in the House of Burgesses for the sessions of 1700-1702, 1714, 1718 and 1720. George and Mary Marable had four sons: George III, Henry Hartwell, William and Benjamin.

*NSCDA *Register of Ancestors* lists 1720.

Submitted by Mrs. Jesse Bounds Horst

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Jesse Bounds Horst (Diane Tappan); Orange Beach

*Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia
(1607-1624/5)*, edited by John
Frederick Dorman, published in
Richmond, VA, by The Order of the
First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press,
in 2007.

Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography,
Volume I, published in Virginia in
1915.

*Historical Sketch of Bruton Parish
Church*, by the Reverend W.A.R.
Godwin, Rector of the Church, printed
in Petersburg, VA, by The Franklin
Press Company in 1903.

*Journals of the House of Burgesses of
Virginia, 1695-1702, 1702/3- 1705,
1705-1706, 1712-1726, edited by
H.R. McIlwaine.*Source:

Biographies of Our Ancestors
GEORGE MASON IV

1725-1792

The words of the Virginia Declaration of Rights, drafted by George Mason in May of 1776,

...that all men, by nature are equally free and independent, and have certain inherent rights of which they cannot by any compact be deprived or divest their posterity: namely, the enjoyment of life and liberty, with the means of acquiring and possessing property; that all power is vested in and consequently derived from the people; that freedom of the press is one of the greatest bulwarks of liberty...

have inspired generations of Americans and others throughout the world. Mason was among the first to call for such basic American liberties as freedom of the press, religious tolerance and the right to a trial by jury. These sentiments in 1776 were incorporated into the Declaration of Independence and a revolution was underway.

Born the son of George and Ann Thomson Mason in 1725, a fourth generation Virginian, George lost his father when he was ten years old. He was brought up and profoundly influenced by his uncle, John Mercer, and although he had very little formal education, managed to educate himself from his uncle's extensive library and grew into a quiet, thoughtful gentleman. He married Anne Eilbeck, and they had five sons and four daughters.

George Mason became one of the richest plantation owners in Virginia, and in the 1750s built his home, *Gunston Hall*, on Mason Neck in Virginia, overlooking his fifty-five hundred acres. Today owned the Commonwealth of Virginia and administered by the Board of Regents of The National Society of The Colonial Dames in America, and operated as a museum property, *Gunston Hall* is an architectural gem, featuring elaborate interior design and carvings.

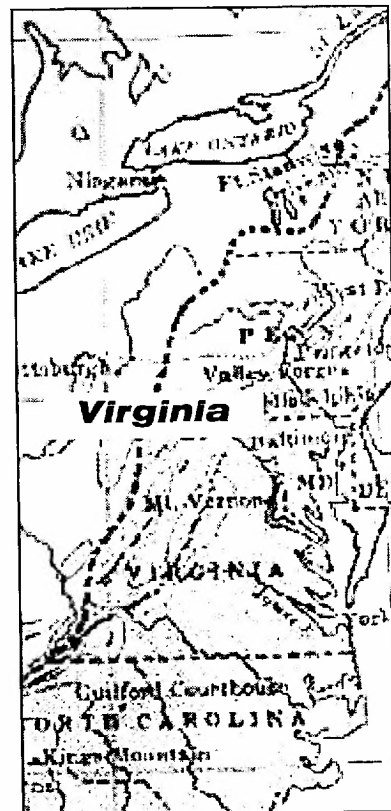
Although a rather reluctant statesman, Mason became active in the opposition to Parliamentary oppression and made many contributions to the formation of government that we enjoy today. In 1769, he drafted the Fairfax Resolves as a protest against British policy and called for a Continental Congress. In 1776 he drafted the above quoted Virginia Declaration of Rights and the first state constitution in America.

After the war, the Philadelphia Convention finally convened in 1787. The proposed constitution for the new country had the same concepts and structures of the Virginia Constitution Mason had written eleven years earlier. However, the final draft was presented and signed without a Bill of Rights or the anti-slavery clause for which George Mason had fervently fought. Consequently, he did not sign the Constitution and returned home to his beloved *Gunston Hall*. Two years passed, and in 1789 a new Congress met; finally, in 1791 the first ten amendments as the Bill of Rights were incorporated into the Constitution as law. Mason died in 1792, at peace with the addition of the ten amendments, but concerned by the Convention's refusal to deal with the slave trade and anti-slavery issue. He is buried on the grounds of *Gunston Hall*.

Submitted by Mrs. Robert Houston Young Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

No living descendants in Alabama at the time of publication of this book.



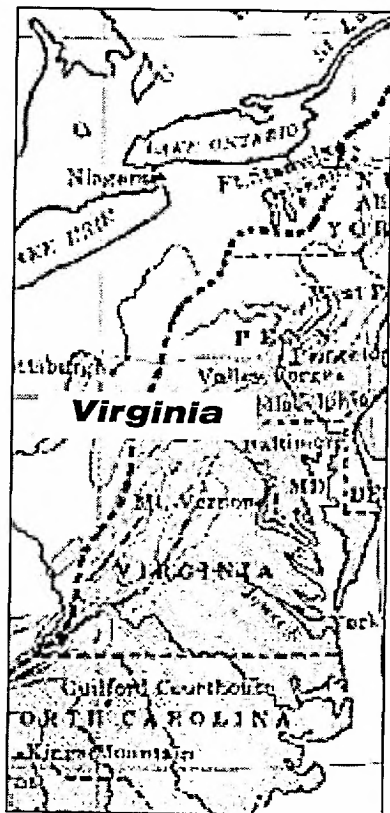
SOURCES:

Report of the First Regent of Gunston Hall, by Priscilla Brewster, presented at NSCDA Region III Conference in Charleston South Carolina in March 2007.

www.gunstonhall.org

In Grateful Remembrance **DADE MASSEY**

1679-1735



SOURCES:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-1624/25), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.

"Public Officers in Virginia, 1702, 1714" in *The Virginia Magazine of Biography and History*, Vol. II, 1895.

Register of Overwharton Parish.

Some Descendants of Colonel John Washington and of his brother, Captain Lawrence Washington, by Charles Arthur Hoppin, privately published in New York in 1932.

St. Paul's Register (Stafford, King George counties).

Dade Massey was born in Stafford County, Virginia, in 1679. A commissioned officer (captain) in Virginia forces under the Crown, he served as a gentleman justice between 1702 and 1714, and again in 1726. (See Glossary: Gentleman justice.)

Captain Dade Massey was a lineal descendant of Robert Beheathland, Gentleman, who came to Virginia in 1607 with Captain John Smith aboard one of three ships, the *Susan Constant*, the *Godspeed*, or the *Discovery*. Son of Richard Beheathland of Cornwall, England, Robert Beheathland is mentioned often in early writings of the Jamestown settlement left by his contemporaries. Robert Beheathland married Mary Nickolson; one of their daughters, Mary, married Captain Thomas Bernard of Warick County, Virginia. (Thomas Bernard served as a member of the House of Burgesses from Warwick, 1644 - 1645.) Their daughter, Beheathland Bernard (1635-1720), married Major Francis Dade (died 1662) in 1652; their daughter, Mary Dade (1661-1699), married Robert Massey, the father of Captain Dade Massey.

Dade Massey married Elizabeth Hooe before March 19, 1719 in the Julian calendar (1720 in the Gregorian calendar). He died on April 16, 1735. According to his will, proved on May 13, 1735, he and Elizabeth had three sons—Thomas, Robert, and Sigismund—and four daughters, Mary, Ann, Frances, and Beheathland. Mary was married to John Washington, who, along with Massey's three sons, was an executor of Massey's will. Some of the particulars of the will are quite interesting.

Dade Massey directed that each of his three sons be given a portion of land, with Thomas, presumably the eldest, getting 350 acres, Robert 200 acres, and Sigismund the houseplace. The houseplace was to revert to Thomas in the event that Sigismund died without issue. Of especial interest to Mr. Massey was the placement of his twenty-four slaves; he named ten of them to go with his four eldest children; the other fourteen were to remain with the three children who were not yet of age, apparently under the direction of Sigismund, in order to work and produce income for the upkeep and education of the three minors. He even expressed the wish that the number of slaves would increase (through births) so that Sigismund and the three minors would each come to own four slaves—that would have required only two additions. Despite this brisk, businesslike attitude toward the people who were his property, which was absolutely typical of the time, Dade Massey decreed that one "Negro woman named Judith" was to remain on his "dwelling plantation so long as she liveth and never be removed."

Submitted by Mrs. Guy Leslie Rutledge Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Guy Leslie Rutledge Jr. (Beth Cole); Mobile

Biographies of Our Ancestors

GEORGE MATHEWS

1739-1812

George Mathews was born to John and Ann (Archer) Mathews on August 30, 1739, in Augusta County, Virginia, and lived his early years there. He and his brother, Sampson (named after his grandfather, Sampson Archer), created a business partnership that included land speculation and leasing of property, as well as agricultural and mercantile operations. Their business extended from Staunton, Virginia, to the Greenbrier district of western Virginia and later included an extensive Atlantic trade network. A daybook from 1771 to 1775 for their Greenbrier General Store is in the holdings of the Colonial Williamsburg Foundation Research Library and contains records of purchase accounts and payments for sales of liquor, tobacco, hides, dry goods, hardware, and weapons and ammunition. Notes in the daybook indicate that the Mathews brothers also operated stores at Staunton and Calf Pasture.

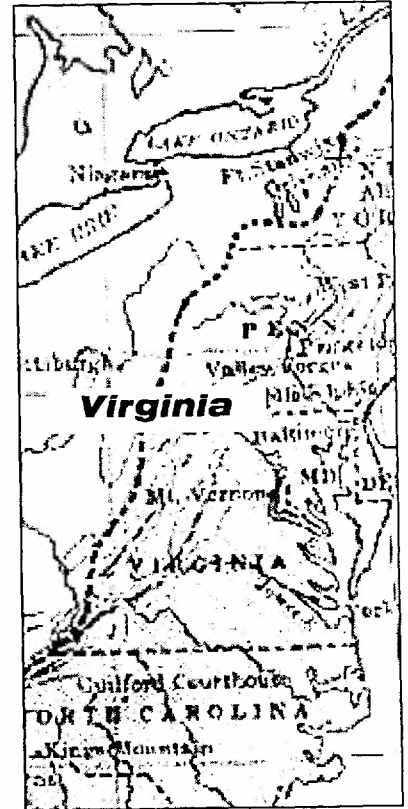
Not only was he a successful businessman, George Mathews performed a number of civic responsibilities as well: as vestryman (1763-1768); warden (1765-1767); road surveyor (1768); sheriff (1770-1771); tax collector (1770-1772); and justice of the peace (1769-1770, 1773-1775). He was elected to serve in the House of Burgesses from Augusta County in 1775 to fill the remainder of the term of Charles Lewis, who had been killed in battle.

With the growing rebellion against Great Britain, Mathews eagerly sought a military command. Described as "a short, thick man, standing very erect, and carrying his head thrown back. His features were bluff, his hair light red, and his complexion florid," he appears to have had the physical qualifications for military authority. Revolutionary principals of Virginia supported his leadership as a militia captain during the Battle of Point Pleasant (1774) and, by 1777, he was appointed colonel of the Ninth Virginia Regiment. His troops were assigned under General George Washington. However, during the Battle of Germantown in Pennsylvania, the entire regiment was either captured or killed, and Mathews was held on a prison ship until he was exchanged in December 1781.

Soon after his release, George Mathews rejoined the Continental Army in Georgia and South Carolina. While in Georgia, he purchased land called *Goosepond* in the region of Wilkes (later Oglethorpe) County, near the Broad River. He obtained additional lands for his revolutionary service and encouraged family and friends from Virginia to join him in settling in Wilkes County. He lived in a log cabin there with his wife, Anne Polly Paul, and their nine children: John, Anne, William, Rebecca, George, Jane, Charles Lewis, and Margaret.

While living in Georgia, George became a judge in Wilkes County, a commissioner for the town of Washington, was a successful candidate for the Georgia assembly, and was named governor in 1787. His wife, Anne Polly, died on September 12, 1788, in Oglethorpe County, and was interred at Governor George G. Mathews *Goosepond Plantation* cemetery. That same year or the next, Mathews attended the state convention that ratified the United States Constitution and was elected to the United States House of Representatives in 1789. On September 28 or 29 of 1790, he married Margaret Reid in Augusta County, Virginia, but the marriage ended in divorce.

Mathews was elected governor of Georgia for the second time for the 1793-1796 term. However, during this term of office a land scheme, later known as the "Yazoo land fraud," was exposed. The plot involved deceptive sale of Georgia's public lands that lay within the boundaries of Alabama and Mississippi. The accusations of deceit and corruption forced Mathews to take refuge outside of Georgia.



SOURCES:

Annals of Augusta County, Virginia, from 1726 to 1871, by Joseph A. Waddell, published in Bridgewater, VA, by C.J. Carrier Company in 1958.

Augusta County Marriages, 1748-1850, by John Vogt and T. William Kethley Jr., published in Athens, GA, by the Iberian Publishing Company in 1962.

Cemeteries of Oglethorpe County, Georgia, by Historic Oglethorpe County, Inc., published in Lexington, GA, by Historic Oglethorpe County, Inc. in 1995.

In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES CONTINUED:

A Genealogy of the Mat(t)hews Family with Chapters on the Related Families of Archer, Boots, Brewer, Busher, Daniel, Funkhouser, Hybart, Morris, Paul, Robert, by John R. Boots Jr., privately published in Ocala, FL, in 1968.

"George Mathews, Frontier Patriot," by G. Melvin Herndon, published in *The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography* 77 (1969).

Georgians: Sketches of Some of the First Settlers of Upper Georgia, of the Cherokees, by George Gilmer, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1926; reprinted in the original in 1965.

Historical Southern Families, Volume 10, edited by Mrs. John Bennett Boddie, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1967.

Lineage Book, Volume XL, by the National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, published in Washington, D.C. by the Society in 1995.

Online Guide to Research Collections for George Mathews, 1739-1812, located in the Biographical Directory of the United States Congress, <http://www.bioguide.congress.gov>.

The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography 10, by the Virginia Historical Society, January 1903.

He married a widowed land owner, Mary Flowers, from Mississippi, and relocated to the Mississippi Territory, where he again became involved in politics. President James Madison had a plan to annex East Florida, which was owned by Spain, and Mathews served as him a brigadier general in the campaign to capture the area and stir up a rebellion in St. Augustine, which would enable the overthrow of the Spanish government. His work was so successful that the United States government grew cautious of being drawn into a war with Spain, and President Madison recalled Mathews. Mathews fell ill while attempting to return to Washington to plead the case for continuing the annexation attempt, and died in Augusta, Georgia on August 30, 1812, and was buried in the cemetery of St. Paul's Episcopal Church in Augusta.

Submitted by Mrs. Egerton Swann Harris III, and Mrs. James Edwin Beck Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Edwin Beck Jr. (Clara Lee Hill); Montgomery

Mrs. Lee Carson Carter (Carolyn Jackson Harris); Birmingham

Mrs. Egerton Swann Harris III (Frances Jackson Mathews); Tuscaloosa

Mrs. Thomas Bragg Van Antwerp (Gypsie Boykin Bear); Bay Minette

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JOHN MATHEWS

b. unknown-1757

John Mathews (father of the preceding George Mathews) was born in Ireland and immigrated to Virginia in 1737, with his associate and father-in-law, Sampson Archer, and others within the one hundred men brought to the colony of Virginia by someone named Borden. John, who had probably married his wife, Betsy Ann Archer, in Ulster, Ireland, settled on a fork of the James River that ran near the Natural Bridge in the area of Virginia that became Augusta, then Rockbridge, County.

In 1742, John Mathews was in command of a company of Augusta militia, and a captain of militia during the French and Indian Wars and in Braddock's Campaign. In 1754, he was the captain of George Mercer's company of the Virginia militia.

John Mathews died in Augusta County between April 20, 1757, the date of his will, and November 16, 1757, the date of probate. In his will, he refers to his wife Anne, his sons John, Joshua, Richard, George, William, Archer, and Sampson, and to his daughters, Jane, Anne, Rachel, and Elizabeth.

Submitted by Mrs. Egerton Swann Harris III

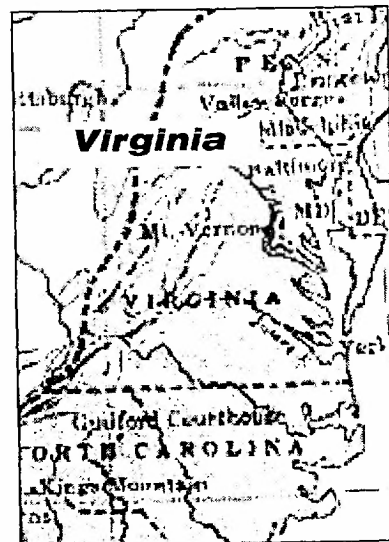
DESCENDANTS

Mrs. James Edwin Beck Jr. (Clara Lee Hill); Montgomery

Mrs. Lee Carson Carter (Carolyn Jackson Harris); Birmingham

Mrs. Egerton Swann Harris III (Frances Jackson Mathews); Tuscaloosa

Mrs. Thomas Bragg Van Antwerp (Gypsie Boykin Bear); Bay Minette



SOURCES:

Annals of Augusta County, Virginia, from 1726 to 1871, by Joseph A. Waddell, published in Bridgewater, VA, by C.J. Carrier Company in 1958.

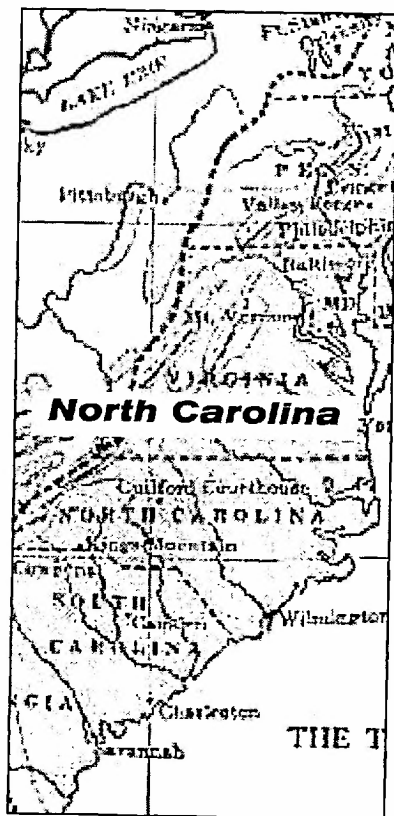
A Genealogy of the Mat(t)hews Family with Chapters on the Related Families of Archer, Boots, Brewer, Busher, Daniel, Funkhouser, Hybart, Morris, Paul, Robert, by John R. Boots Jr., privately published in Ocala, FL, in 1968.

"George Mathews, Frontier Patriot," by G. Melvin Herndon, published in *The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography* 77 (1969).

Historical Southern Families, 10 Volumes, edited by Mrs. John Bennett Boddie, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1967.

In Grateful Remembrance **ALEXANDER MCALLISTER**

1715-1798



Immigrants from the Highlands of Scotland poured into America in the mid-eighteenth century, mainly settling in the Carolinas. Alexander McAllister (born in 1715 in Argyllshire, Scotland), the son of Coll McAllister and Janet McNeill, was the first of his clan to make the venture. He came in 1736, at the age of twenty-one, and settled in Wilmington, North Carolina, where he is believed to have become a tavern keeper. He returned to Scotland in 1739 and married Mary McNeill (of the same clan as his mother), who died at sea on the voyage to America in 1740.

On this same voyage, a baby girl named Jean Colvin was born to parents coming to America for the first time from Scotland. Family legend relates (although the story is disputed by some genealogists) that Alexander, in his grief over the loss of his wife, was annoyed by the baby's crying and said to the mother, "Spank the little b____!", to which the mother replied, "Never ye mind, sir, she'll be the wife of ye yet." And so she would become, although not immediately!

Upon his return to North Carolina, Alexander relocated to Cumberland County on the Cape Fear River, near present-day Fayetteville. His plantation was called *Barmore*, near the present-day town of Wade. He married a second time, before 1744, to Flora McNeill. This marriage produced four children: Coll, Griselda, Janet, and Neill. Flora died before 1763.

On July 14, 1763, at Colvin's Creek, North Carolina, Alexander took wife number three. At twenty-three years of age, Jean Colvin, as her mother had predicted, married Alexander McAllister, who, at forty-eight, was more than twice her age. They had eleven children: Margaret, Alexander, Hector, Flora, Mary, Ronald, Charles, John, Catherine, Angus, and Isabella, who was born when Alexander was sixty-seven years old. It is noteworthy that Alexander bequeathed the home plantation to Isabella, especially in view of the fact that most Highlanders followed the policy of primogeniture, in which the eldest son received the lion's share, if not all, of his father's estate.

Alexander McAllister was certainly a man of some means, as the census of 1790 reports his possession of forty slaves, which underscores a fact cited by *Scots Magazine XXXIII—June 1771*, that the Scottish migration to America was led by men of "wealth and merit," and that it was not merely an exodus of the exploited poor. Many Highlanders took public positions in Cumberland County, and representatives to the House of Assembly were usually Highlanders; Alexander became a member in 1762.

The provincial congress of North Carolina was the chief policy-making body for the American patriots of the colony, drafting and directing the plan of opposition to the Crown. Much of the success of the Revolution in North Carolina should be assigned to the Congress, as it not only carried on a constant propaganda barrage, but directed the Committee of Safety, which was formed to enforce the boycott on English goods, and raised a revolutionary army. Alexander McAllister was both a delegate to the provincial congress and a member of the committee of safety.

During the last half of 1775, both the Loyalist governor Martin and the Patriots worked to secure adherents, and tried particularly to influence the Highlanders. Having experienced major defeats and repercussions by the English in the Jacobite Rebellion of 1745, and historically in other uprisings, many immigrants from Scotland were dubious about another revolution and many remained either neutral or were Loyalists. The provincial congress, which met at Hillsboro in August of 1775, was "uneasy about the Gentlemen who have lately arrived from the highlands of Scotland," and appointed a committee to

Biographies of Our Ancestors

explain to them "the nature of the unhappy controversy with Great Britain." A twelve-man committee, of which Alexander was a member, was formed to unite fellow Highlanders in support of the American cause.

After the war, Alexander McAllister served in the North Carolina senate in 1787, 1788, and 1789. In a census of 1789, he was recorded as one of the largest landowners in Cumberland County and the third largest slave owner.

Alexander McAllister, who had become Colonel McAllister of the Cumberland County militia, died in 1798. Years later, a marker was erected in his honor near the spot where he was buried (the precise location of which is unknown), in the Old Bluff Presbyterian Cemetery of Fayetteville, North Carolina. The marker reads as follows:

Near this spot at Old Bluff Church is buried Colonel Alexander McAllister; Patriot and Revolutionary hero; Colonel of Cumberland County Militia; Representative of the First Assembly in Newbern, December 1773; Representative Second Assembly in Newbern, March 1774; Member of Provincial Congress held at Hillsboro, August 1775; Member of Provincial Congress held at Halifax, April 1776; Member of Committee of Safety for Wilmington District; Member of Committee appointed by Provincial Congress, August 23, 1775, to interview Highlanders and explain to them the nature of the controversy with Great Britain; Member of the North Carolina Senate 1787, 1788, and 1789. This memorial was erected by his descendants under the auspices of the Daughters of the American Revolution.

The name, "McAllister," has many alternative spellings in colonial records and genealogical data, often being spelled, "McAlister," or "McAlester," or "MacAllesdare," or "McCallister." A website for The Clan McAlister of America is available at www.clanmcalist-ter.org, and membership is offered to all descendants.

Submitted by Mrs. Robert Houston Young Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Lewis Daniel Anderson (Stella Stickney Cobbs); Dauphin Island
Mrs. Webster Lyter Cowden Jr. (Florence Ellen Young); Wilmington, North Carolina
Mrs. Charles Stephen Davis (Rosa Gunter Hamlett); Montgomery
Mrs. Arthur Lawrence Fitzpatrick (Elizabeth Montague Young); Cecil
Mrs. John Louis Harris (Ellen Semple Hamlett); Naples, Florida
Mrs. Frank Charles Jones (Laura Anne Benedict); Birmingham
Mrs. Stephen Michael Logan (Mary Frances Young); Nashville, Tennessee
Ms. Evelyn Cobbs Anderson McGehee (Evelyn Cobbs Anderson); Talladega
Mrs. Robert Houston Young Jr. (Florence Cowles Hamlett); Montgomery

SOURCES:

"Colonel McAllister of Tarbert," by Ian McDonald, from the Journal of the Clan McAlister of America, 1984-1985.

Genealogical Record of the Descendants of Alexander McAllister, by D.S. McAllister, published in Richmond, VA, by Whittet & Shepperson in 1890.

The Highland Call, a play by Paul Green with an appendix of selected papers of Alexander McAllister and Flora and Allan McDonald, edited by David Sanders Clark, published by the Cumberland County Bicentennial Commission in Fayetteville, NC in 1941, revised in 1975.

The Highland Scots of North Carolina, 1732-1776, by Duane Meyer, published in Chapel Hill by the University of North Carolina Press in 1957 and 1961.

In Grateful Remembrance
NICHOLAS MERIWETHER I

1631-1678

The first of the Meriwether family lived in South England in Devonshire, where the name was spelled Merryweather, said to be because they were happy in all kinds of weather. These Merryweathers claimed their lineage back to the Norman invasion of 1066. There is no record of who or when the name was shortened, but as one source remarked, "economy is one of the family traits."

Nicholas I was born in 1631 in Kent County, England. He arrived in the colony of Virginia sometime around 1650. Family tradition says that he had been given a large land grant in the colony of Virginia by Charles II, in payment of a loan of money. The first confirmation of his existence there was when he patented three hundred acres of land in Lancaster County on July 4, 1653. By 1654, he had obtained patents of 5,250 acres in Westmoreland County.

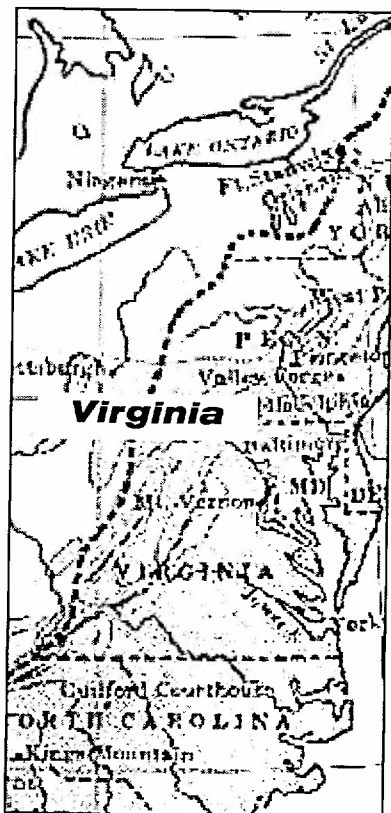
Records differ on whether or not he served as clerk of the Surry County court in 1652, at twenty-one years of age, but it is clear that from at least October 13, 1653, until December 13, 1656, Nicholas earned his living as a clerk of the Quarter Court and Governor's Council for the colony in Jamestown.

About 1661, he bought *The Island House* from Elizabeth Kingsmill and her husband Nathaniel Bacon, a relative of the Bacon who started "Bacon's Rebellion" (See Glossary), along with eighty acres. A plaque placed by the state of Virginia on the original site of the plantation details the building of the first tobacco barn on Jamestown Island. In colonial Virginia, tobacco was the medium of exchange, and many of the transactions were settled by the number of pounds of "sweet-scented" tobacco used as currency in exchange for sawyering, firing bricks, and erecting churches, as well as payment of all commercial accounts.

Nicholas Meriwether I married Elizabeth Woodhouse in 1656. She was the daughter of Thomas Woodhouse, a prominent citizen of James City. She and Nicholas had six children: Elizabeth (born c. 1662); Nicholas II (October 26, 1667); Francis II (born c. 1670); Jane (born c. 1675); Thomas (born c. 1677); and William (born after June 17, 1678).

Nicholas eventually came to own thousands of acres of land along the Rappahannock and Potomac Rivers. Sometime in the 1660's, after the English monarchy was reestablished, Nicholas bought *Indian Springs* in Surry County and seems to have retired from public office to pursue land speculation and tobacco production and shipping. Since his entire government career was during the reign of Cromwell and he ceased upon restoration of the throne, this seems to contradict those who claim Nicholas was one of the "Cavaliers," supporters of the Crown who came to the Colony to escape persecution.

Submitted by Mrs. John Freeman Smith and Mrs. Robert Bruce Rinchart



Biographies of Our Ancestors

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Lewis Peyton Chapman Jr. (Rachel Meriwether Hamilton); Montgomery
Mrs. David McGiffert Hall Jr. (Lida Rogers Meriwether); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Bain Hamilton (Rachel Meriwether Broadnax); Montgomery
Mrs. George Edmund Jordan (Florence Phillips Evans); Montgomery
Mrs. Dempsey Wiley Moody III (Barnett Meriwether Wood); Montgomery
Mrs. Calvin Poole (Mary Rogers Weiss); Greenville
Mrs. Robert Bruce Rinehart (Fairlie Gunter Haynes); Montgomery
Mrs. John Freeman Smith (May Mathews Handy); Montgomery
Mrs. Donald Bernard Sweeney Jr. (Ann Ross Ashley); Birmingham
Miss Caroline Pinkston Weiss (Caroline Pinkston Weiss); Montgomery
Mrs. Robert Paul Weiss Jr. (Mamie Rogers Ward); Montgomery

SOURCES:

Bishop Mead's Old Families and Churches of Virginia: Meriwether Addenda, by Bishop William Mead, published in Philadelphia by J. B. Lippincott in 1857, 1872, and 1891. It could not be ascertained which of these editions contains the *Meriwether Addenda*.
Genealogical Gleanings in England, by Henry Fitz Gilbert Waters, published in Boston by the New England Historical and Genealogical Society in 1888.
Journal of the House of Burgesses, 1702-1712, Volume IX, edited by H.R. McIlwaine, published in Richmond, VA, by Colonial Press in 1912.
The Meriwethers and Their Connections, by Louisa H.A. Minor, published in Albany, NY, by Joel Munsell's Sons in 1892.

In Grateful Remembrance

NICHOLAS MERIWETHER II

1667-1744

Nicholas Meriwether II, the son of Elizabeth Woodhouse and Nicholas Meriwether I, was born on October 26, 1667, probably in Surry County, Virginia. In 1688 or 1689, he married Elizabeth Crawford, from a distinguished New Kent County family. The Meriwethers lived at The Farm, a 1,000 acre plantation on the Rivanna River where Charlottesville, Virginia now stands. Between 1688 and 1707 they had nine children: William, David, Thomas, Anne, Sarah, Nicholas, Elizabeth, Jane, and Mary.

The marriage to a member of the prominent Crawford family, with their long record of service to the governing bodies of the Crown, and their large landholdings, eventually placed Nicholas and his descendants in the forefront of the planter class in Virginia. This is not to say that Nicholas was lacking in natural ability, but that his marriage gave him a close association with his knowledgeable father-in-law, David Crawford, through whom he got to know the governing powers of the Colony. Evidence of his favorable political positioning is shown by the land grant he obtained in 1730 of 17,952 acres from King George II of Great Britain. This land grant was not, however, a favor or gift by King George II; rather, it was the culmination of Nicholas' efforts to bring it about by his own endeavor, but having good connections was a help. Nicholas would eventually become one of the largest landowners in Virginia, accumulating almost thirty-three thousand acres in eastern Albemarle County, along the Southwest Mountains. On the property were three plantation homes that are still standing: *Belvoir* (near Grace Church in Charlottesville); *Castle Hill*, and *Cloverfields*, which is still owned by members of the Meriwether family.

Nicholas Meriwether II represented New Kent County in the House of Burgesses in Williamsburg for thirty years, from 1704 through 1734, becoming an influential member of that body. He was a vestryman at St. Peter's Church from 1699 through 1722, and was a colonel in the Virginia militia.

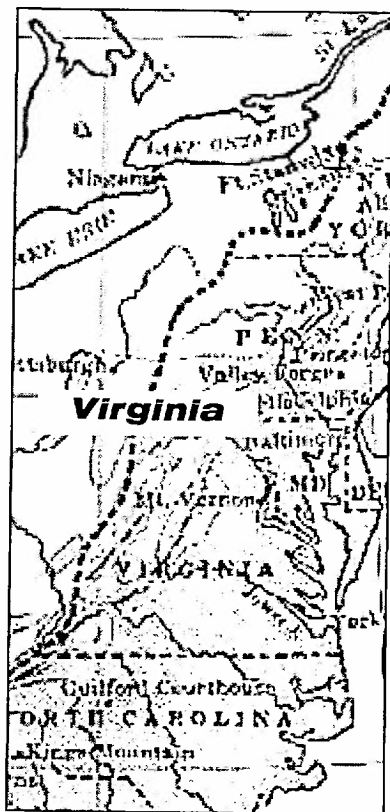
Nicholas Meriwether died on December 12, 1744, and his will, one of the longest to be filed in Virginia prior to the Revolution, was witnessed by Thomas Jefferson's father, Peter Jefferson. The will is testament to the wealth and property he had acquired during his lifetime; probated January 22, 1745 in Louisa County, Virginia, it distributes fifteen thousand acres, complete with homes and place-names, to his children and grandchildren.

A descendant, Nicholas Heath Meriwether, writes:

it is quite evident that all of his sons were living on plantations that he had lent them, and his will establishes this fact by its careful delineation of finally giving to "my son, _____ Meriwether, the home place where he now lives."

...applicable to all the sons of Nicholas II then living... (and) Col. Robert Lewis, who married Jane Meriwether, was also given his home place *Belvoir*...

It is admitted that this gift of so much land to the Meriwether and Lewis family did much to insure a way of life that continued for them for four generations following his death. His sons and grandchildren continued to add to their holdings until after the American Revolution, when the first great migrations started to South Carolina and Georgia.



Submitted by Mrs. John Freeman Smith and Mrs. Robert Bruce Rinehart

Biographies of Our Ancestors

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Lewis Peyton Chapman Jr. (Rachel Meriwether Hamilton); Montgomery
Mrs. David Giffert Hall Jr. (Lida Rogers Meriwether); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Bain Hamilton (Rachel Meriwether Broadnax); Montgomery
Mrs. George Edmund Jordan (Florence Phillips Evans); Montgomery
Mrs. Dempsey Wiley Moody III (Barnett Meriwether Wood); Montgomery
Mrs. Calvin Poole (Mary Rogers Weiss); Greenville
Mrs. Robert Bruce Rinehart (Fairlie Gunter Haynes); Montgomery
Mrs. John Freeman Smith (May Mathews Handy); Montgomery
Mrs. Donald Bernard Sweeney Jr. (Ann Ross Ashley); Birmingham
Miss Caroline Pinkston Weiss (Caroline Pinkston Weiss); Montgomery
Mrs. Robert Paul Weiss Jr. (Mamie Rogers Ward); Montgomery

SOURCES:

Bishop Mead's Old Families and Churches of Virginia: Meriwether Addenda, by Bishop William Mead, published in Philadelphia by J. B. Lippincott in 1857, 1872, and 1891.

It could not be ascertained which of these editions contains the Meriwether Addenda.

Genealogical Gleanings in England, by Henry Fitz Gilbert Waters, published in Boston by the New England Historical and Genealogical Society in 1888.

Journal of the House of Burgesses, 1702-1712, Volume IX, edited by H.R. McIlwaine, published in Richmond, VA, by Colonial Press in 1912.

The Meriwethers and Their Connections, by Louisa H.A. Minor, published in Albany, NY, by Joel Munsell's Sons in 1892.

In Grateful Remembrance **HENRY MIDDLETON**

1717-1784



SOURCES:

Greatness to Spare, by T.F. Fehrenback, published in Princeton, NJ, by D. Van Nostrand and Company in 1968.

Historic Charleston, published by the Charleston, South Carolina Chamber of Commerce; continually reprinted.

South Carolina Genalogies, Volume III, from *South Carolina Historical Magazine* and the South Carolina Historical Society, published by The Reprint Company in 1983.

The World Book Encyclopedia, Volume 7, by various editors, published in Chicago, IL, by World Book, Incorporated, in 2006.

Henry Middleton was born in 1717 in South Carolina and was probably educated in England. His accomplishments include being speaker of the House of Commons in 1745, 1747, 1754, and 1755 and member and president of His Majesty's council for South Carolina. Henry Middleton was also commissioner of Indian Affairs; proponent of free schools; churchman; conservative; a worker to improve the agriculture and commerce of the province; and perhaps one of the greatest landholders and planters in South Carolina, with fifty thousand acres. He was a strong supporter of local legislature and a believer in inherent American rights.

Henry married Mary Williams in 1741. They had five sons, three of whom died by the age of six, leaving two to survive. In addition, there were seven daughters, five of whom lived. Mary Williams Middleton died on January 9, 1761, at age forty-six. The following year, Henry married Maria Henrietta, the youngest daughter of the Honorable William Bull, lieutenant governor of South Carolina. She lived for ten years after their marriage, dying in 1772. Henry married for the third time in 1776 to Lady Mary Mackenzie, daughter of George, Earl of Cromartie, and widow of John Ainslie. There were no children with Maria Henrietta nor Lady Mary.

Both Henry and his son, Arthur (1742-1787), were proponents of the American cause and were leaders among their peers. While feeling a close connection to England, father and son felt a provincial patriotism that was a Carolina characteristic. This led to Henry Middleton's selection as president of the Provincial Congress, then, in 1774, as president of the Continental Congress. In 1775, he, who had done much to prepare for a new government and lead it to acceptance, for reasons of "old age and infirmities," stepped aside. Arthur was nominated to take Henry Middleton's place, and cast his vote for independence at the Continental Congress of 1776.

Henry's daughter, Henrietta (born in 1750), was married in 1774 to Edward Rutledge, who had been educated in England and returned to practice law in South Carolina. He, with Arthur, signed the Declaration of Independence with the South Carolina delegation.

Henry's grandson, also named Henry Middleton, was governor of South Carolina, and the American minister to Russia. A great-grandson, Williams Middleton, was a signer of the Ordinance of Secession.

Recognized as a patriot and a leader, Henry Middleton left a great physical legacy as well—beautiful Middleton Place Gardens outside of Charleston, the oldest landscaped gardens in America. Now a National Historic Landmark, the gardens were begun in 1741 and took ten years to complete. Although the house and garden was plundered during the American Revolution, partially burned in 1865 by Union troops, later allowed to fall into neglect, the site has been restored to its original beautiful blend of coastal waters and marshlands, river vistas, and formal European garden design elements.

Henry Middleton died in Charleston on June 13, 1784.

Submitted by Mrs. James Henry Emack

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. J. Lloyd Abbot Jr. (Margaret Middleton Pratt); Mobile
Mrs. Robert Murphy Couch (Anne Parker Emack); Birmingham
Mrs. James Henry Emack (Henrietta Parker Swain); Birmingham

PETER MONTAGUE

1603-1659

"In 1621 Sir Francis Wyatt came over as Governor of the Colony, in company with thirteen hundred men, women, and children, and now they founded schools and courts of justice; and the plantation started the year before was extended one hundred forty miles up, on both sides of the James River. With this company was Peter Montague."

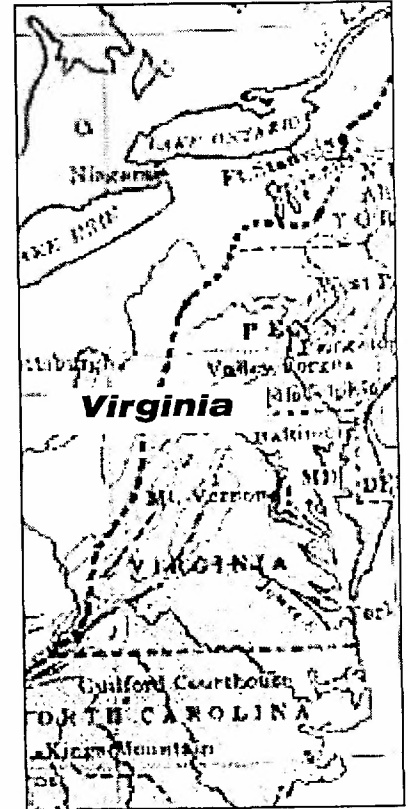
The quote above, from George William Montague's history of the family (see Sources, below), explains how Peter Montague arrived in Jamestown in November 1621 aboard the *Charles*. Peter had been born in 1603 at Boveny, a hamlet across the Thames from Windsor Castle, where his family had resided for hundreds of years, probably since the first Montague arrived from France in 1066 with William the Conqueror and was subsequently rewarded with land for his service. The laws of inheritance decreed that lands and titles always passed to the first son, and Peter was a second son.

Where Peter went and what he did for the first two years in America is not known, but in the muster roll of the inhabitants of Virginia taken in January of 1624, he is listed as residing on the plantation of Captain Samuel Mathews at James City. Family tradition explains the first two years thusly: "Peter's first half-day's work (manual labor, apparently) ruined his hands, so he had to rest. To pass the time, he began to read his master's books, who caught him reading Latin and soon obtained for him the position of school teacher. It is true that he was under age, being only eighteen, and it is also true that no schools were founded until the arrival of the company with whom he came. It is quite possible that he may have been one of the founders of the first school established in Virginia."

After 1624, Peter disappeared for another thirteen years. A deed dated August 22, 1637 was recorded for Peter Montague in the state land registry office of Virginia for 150 acres of land in the upper county of New Norfolk. Eight years later, in December of 1645, he acquired another 150 acres in the same county; undoubtedly he was then living there; it is now known as Nansemond County. Although all county records have been destroyed by fire, it is known that he was living in Nansemond in 1652 and 1653, because he represented the county in the House of Burgesses.

He married for the first time in 1633, probably. His first and second wives, whose names are unknown, both died, and his third wife, Cicely, is thought to have been the daughter of Captain Samuel Mathews, with whom he had lived in his youth. It is not clear which of his wives was the mother of his six children, named after the brothers and sisters he had left behind in England: William, Peter, Ann, Margaret, Elizabeth, and, finally, Ellen (or Eleanor), in memory of his mother.

It appears that sometime before 1654 he moved his family to Lancaster County, on a large tract of land on the north bank of the Rappahannock River, near the present-day county seat, the town of Lancaster. He was by now a large land owner and planter, concentrating on wheat, barley, and tobacco, much of which was exported to England. He was a leading citizen of the colony, "a man of intelligence, of moral worth, and a man of influence. He was a member of the Established Church, a leading member, prominent in all good works, one of the founders of the church in Virginia," according to writer R.R. Howson, who is referring to the Episcopal church.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-1624/5), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.

History and Genealogy of Peter Montague of Nansemond and Lancaster Counties, Virginia, and His Descendants—1621-1894, by George William Montague, compiler, published in Amherst, MA, by Carpenter & Morehouse in 1894.

Peter Montague died on the last day of April or the first day of May in 1659, surrounded by his wife, children and neighbors. His will left all his land lying along the Rappahannock River to his two sons, Peter and William, with William, as the elder, having first choice. He also mentioned his loving wife Cicely and his daughters, Margaret, Elizabeth, and Ellen, and his granddaughter by his deceased daughter, Ann. Peter's holdings included what became known, probably as early as 1660, as Montague Island, near what is now known as Bay Port Wharf in Middlesex County. Many Montagues are buried there, although Peter is not. His grave is on the north bank of the Rappahannock, near his home. His tombstone, much defaced by time, was recorded as standing in 1849, nearly two hundred years after his death.

Submitted by Mrs. Roland Arthur Hester, III

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Hugh Park Bostick (Elizabeth Long Cobb); Selma
Mrs. Roland Arthur Hester, III (Mary Coleman Cobb); Montgomery
Mrs. Thomas Bowen Hill (Maria Cochran Pachall); Montgomery
Mrs. Douglas Carl Peifer (Elizabeth Long Bostick); Montgomery

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JAMES MOORE

1640-1706

James Moore was born in 1640, a resident of James Parish, Goose Creek, South Carolina. In 1676, he married Margaret Berringer, who had been born in Barbados in 1660. They had at least one son, Roger, who was born on August 24, 1694.

James Moore was a member of His Majesty's Council of South Carolina in 1677, 1695, 1700, and 1703-1706. He worked as a deputy for Thomas Archdale and then for Sir John Colleton. He was secretary of the Province of South Carolina in 1698 and was appointed chief justice on December 1, 1699 by Governor Blake.

He was elected colonial governor of South Carolina on September 11, 1700, and served until March 5, 1703. During this time, he led a number of attacks from the Carolinas into Spanish Florida. He relied on allied Indian tribes, especially the Yamasee, for most of his military force. In 1702, he led an invasion of Spanish Florida along the coast, destroying the remaining Spanish missionary Indians and devastating the lands around St. Augustine. While the town was razed, its central fortress, Castillo de San Marcos, where the Spanish and numerous allied Indians had taken refuge, resisted Moore's siege. Consequently, the campaign was viewed as a disaster.

Two years later, Moore led an expedition of fifty Englishmen and one thousand Creek, Yamasee, and other allied Indians into western Florida and defeated the Apalachee, the last remaining Indian allies of the Spanish. The 1704 victory was regarded as a major coup for the British, as it signaled the end of Spanish dominance of Florida and strengthened the bonds between the Carolinas and various southeastern Indian tribes, such as the Creeks and Cherokees. The Indian tribes of Florida were decimated, with many being sold into slavery in the West Indies and other places. James Moore himself imported over four thousand slaves into the Carolinas to work his extensive plantations and farms in and about the Cape Fear area of what became North Carolina.

James Moore was commissioned receiver general by the proprietors in 1703 and held that position until his death in Charles Towne in 1706. Margaret Berringer Moore survived her husband's death by seventeen years.

Submitted by Mrs. John Butler Blalock

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. John Butler Blalock (Margaret Ashe Tutwiler); Birmingham
 Mrs. Manly Park Lee (Anne Lewis Blalock); Birmingham
 Mrs. Gene Ruffner Page (Virginia Anne White); Birmingham
 Mrs. Jack Raymond Reed, Jr. (Elizabeth O'Neal White); Tupelo, Mississippi
 Mrs. Jack H. Shannon (Elizabeth O'Neal); Birmingham
 Mrs. Thomas Bestor Ward, Jr. (Mabel Moore Bedsole); Mobile

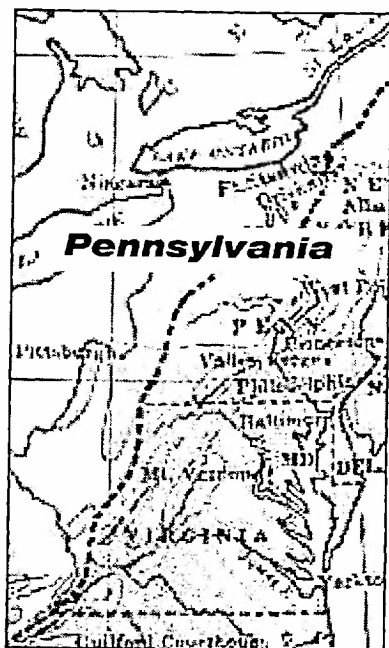


SOURCES:

Journal Grand Council, Commissions and Instructions, 1685-1715.
 Register of St. Philips Parish, Charles Town, South Carolina, 1720-1758.
The South Carolina Historical and Genealogical Magazine XXXVII, 3

In Grateful Remembrance **JOHN MOORE**

1658-1732



The honorable John Moore, Esquire, Barrister-at-Law, was born in London in 1658. His grandfather was Sir John Moore, who was knighted by Charles the Second in 1627. By 1680, John Moore had been sent to Charles Towne in the Carolinas, where his brother lived at Moore Hall. While in Charles Towne, he was secretary of the province of Carolina, south and west of Cape Fear, appointed June 21, 1682; receiver general and escheator general of same, appointed September 29, 1683 (see Glossary: escheator); deputy to Lord Proprietor and Count Palatine, Sir Peter Colleton, 2nd Baronet, (son of Sir John Colleton, 1st Baronet, of His Majesty's Foot, one of the original grantees under the charter from King Charles II upon his restoration), appointed June 3 1684, simultaneously making him a member of the governor's grand council in Governor Joseph Moreton's first term. (See Glossary: Grand Model, Palatine.)

In 1685, John Moore married Lady Rebecca Axtell, daughter of the Landgrave Daniel Axtell, hereditary Peer of the Dominion of Carolina under the Government of Lords, and his wife, Lady Rebecca of Holland. John Moore's wife was also the granddaughter of Lieutenant Colonel Daniel Axtell of the parliamentary army, Governor of Kilkenny in Ireland, and commander of the guard of the High Court of Justice in Westminster Hall during the trial of Charles I. John and Rebecca Moore had eight children, with four dying as infants.

Sometime between 1687 and 1690, John Moore moved his family from Charles Towne to Philadelphia, and held the following offices: crown advocate and deputy judge of the Pennsylvania Court of Vice Admiralty, appointed in 1695; attorney general for the providence and territories of Pennsylvania, from 1698 through 1700; registrar general of Pennsylvania, from 1693 through 1703; registrar of wills, from 1701 through 1704; and collector of His Majesty's customs for the Port of Philadelphia, appointed in either 1703 or 1704. He held the last office until his death.

He was a founding member and vestryman of the first Episcopal Church in the United States, Christ Church in Philadelphia. He was buried opposite his pew in the main aisle in front of the pulpit on December 7, 1732. (This is the same church in which Benjamin Franklin was buried in 1790.)

SOURCES:

The Axtell Record, being a family record of the descendants of Samuel Loree Axtell of Mendham, Morris County, New Jersey and Mt. Clemens, Macomb County, Michigan, who lived from November 11, 1791 to June 20, 1855, prepared by his descendants, privately published in 1942.

Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography, Volume II, edited by Lyon Gardner Tyler, published in New York by Lewis Publishing Company in 1915.

Submitted by Mrs. Abner Frank Patton

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Abner Frank Patton (Emily Blair Albers); Tuscaloosa

Biographies of Our Ancestors
WILLIAM MORRIS

b. unknown-1746

"It is evident from the large amount of property, real and personal, disposed of by his will, that William Morris, the elder, was a thriving judicious man in the management of his affairs, and in this respect has transmitted his character, as well as his blood, to many of his descendants."

With the above words, Morris descendant John Blair Dabney established the basic character of his ancestor. What we also know is that he was given a land grant of ten thousand acres in 1724 in that part of New Kent County, Virginia, that later became Hanover County. He built his home, *Taylor's Creek*, in 1732, which, at the height of its affluence, was the second largest plantation home in Hanover County, surpassed in size only by *Scotchtown*, the home of Patrick Henry. *Taylor's Creek* is still occupied by Morris descendants, the Nelsons. He also had a plantation at *Ducking-hole* and another at *Roundabout*.

William Morris had one son, Sylvanus, with his first wife, whose first and maiden names are not known, but who is written about extensively in John Blair Dabney's reminiscences of the family. Dabney describes her as a wonderful homemaker with a gentle and patient disposition, but with a fiery sense of justice.

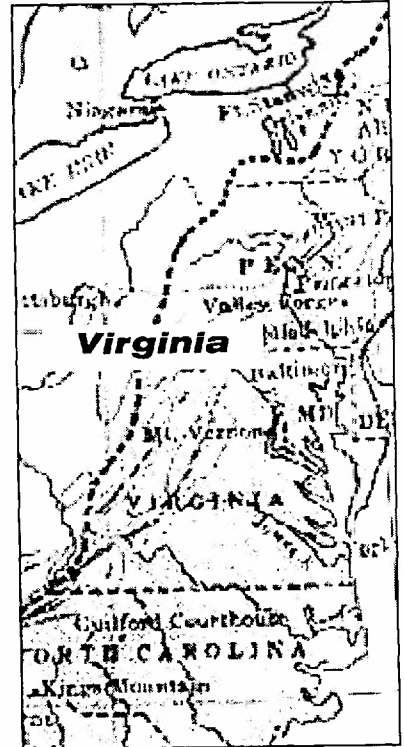
After her death, William Morris married a second time and had four daughters. In his will, he carefully details the gifts he wants to give to his children and to numerous grandchildren, naming plantations, numerous slaves, unspun cotton, cattle and hogs, a featherbed and furniture, one thousand pounds of fattened pork, linens, and his personal clothing.

William Morris was a major in the Virginia colonial militia.

Submitted by Mrs. Charles Lawrence Whatley

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Charles Lawrence Whatley (Grace Bushnell); Birmingham



SOURCES:

Hanover County, Its History and Its Legends, by Rosewell Page, privately published in 1926.

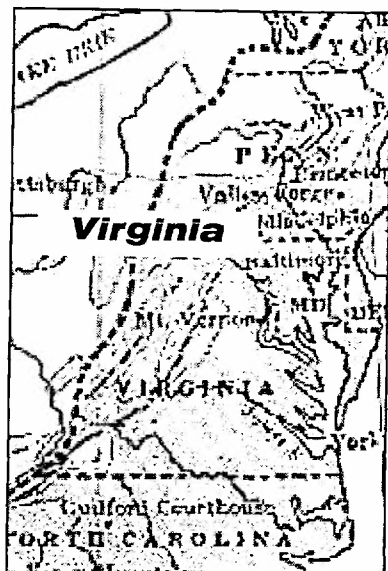
The John Blair Dabney Manuscript, 1795-1868, "Written with his own hand for his children," by John Blair Dabney, privately printed, probably in Richmond, VA, in 1850. There were several reprints of the material by a number of different publishers at different times during the twentieth century.

Sketches and Reminiscences of the Dabney-Morris Families, by John Blair Dabney. Manuscript in the Virginia State Library, Accession Number 199880.

In Grateful Remembrance

LITTLEBERRY MOSBY

1729-1809



SOURCES:

Cumberland County Order Books, on file at the clerk's office, Cumberland County Courthouse, Cumberland County, Virginia, various years.

Goochland County Order Books, on file at the clerk's office, Goochland County, Virginia, various years.

National Register of Historic Places, *Mosby Tavern*, Powhatan County, Virginia; National Park Service form 10-900-a(886) OMB No. 1024-0018

Powhatan County Order Books, on file at the clerk's office, Powhatan County, Virginia, various years.

Proceedings of the Committees of Safety of Cumberland and Isle of Wight Counties, Virginia, 1775-1776, edited by H.R. McIlwain, published in Richmond, VA, by D. Bottom, Superintendent of Public Printing, in 1919.

Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Volume 4. Edited by P.A. Bruce, published in Richmond, VA, by William Ellis Jones in 1896.

Littleberry C. Mosby was born into a socially, politically, and religiously active family in Goochland County, Virginia to Benjamin Mosby and Mary Poindexter. Littleberry's father, Benjamin, built a home beside one of the major thoroughfares in what is now western Powhatan County, Virginia. Benjamin's home, used as an inn and tavern, was built before 1741 and still stands today. At the time of its building, Benjamin's home, known as *Mosby Tavern* or *Old Cumberland Courthouse*, was located in Goochland County. Benjamin was very participatory in helping form Cumberland County from Goochland County in 1749, when Littleberry was twenty years old. *Mosby Tavern* hosted nearly thirty years of court meetings for Cumberland County, until 1777.

Littleberry had three wives. His first wife was Martha Scott. His second wife, Elizabeth Netherland, was born October 4, 1726, in New Kent County, Virginia, and married to him on August 13, 1748. She gave him six children: John, who died as an infant; Susan (Sally) was born in 1750; Mary, born 1755, married Robert Hughes; Elizabeth, who died at age eighteen; Littleberry Jr., born in 1757; and Wade. With his third wife, Judith Michaux, he had a son, Benjamin.

Littleberry's political activities began in 1759 at age thirty-one, when he was named commissioner of the peace for Cumberland County. He was justice of the peace and justice of the county court in chancery for nearly thirty years. During this time, he also served as sheriff, undersheriff, and deputy sheriff for Cumberland County. He later served as sheriff for the newly-formed Powhatan County. After his last service as sheriff, he began a twenty-year term as gentleman vestryman of Southam Parish. He also served as senior warden in the Peterville church from 1772 through 1773 and again in 1785.

Littleberry found opportunities to serve his new country as well. In 1775 and 1776, when the committee of safety convened at his former home, *Old Cumberland Courthouse*, Littleberry Mosby, Sr. was listed in attendance and among the men chosen to draft the Cumberland County resolutions calling for independence for the colonies.

In 1777, Littleberry began his involvement in the Revolutionary War. His service included military supply officer (1777), colonel (1777), and county lieutenant (1780-1781). During the times he held these positions, he was in close contact with the then governor of Virginia, Thomas Jefferson, regarding the state of the county militia. Littleberry was appointed a general in 1803 by the state legislature, when a very complimentary letter from Jefferson was read regarding his command of the county militia. He served two terms in the General Assembly, House of Delegates for Powhatan County from 1779-1782, under Speakers Benjamin Harris, Richard Henry Lee, and John Tyler.

General Littleberry Mosley died at the ripe age of eighty, just two weeks shy of his eighty-first birthday. *Mosby Tavern*, (*Old Cumberland Courthouse*), still stands, and is listed on The National Register of Historic Places. It is privately owned. A marker placed at the site by the Powhatan County Historical Association in August of 2008 reads:

"After Yorktown, troops of the Virginia Continental Line, ill-equipped, ill-fed, unpaid and nearly mutinous, marched from here to the Southern Campaign of 1782. While there they participated with valor and success in the final engagements of our war for independence."

Submitted by Mrs. Edward Fennel Mauldin, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Edward Fennel Mauldin, Jr. (Evelyn Brown Van Sant); Leighton

Miss Mary Marshall Van Sant; Tuscumbia

Mrs. Timothy James Zuelke (Martha Elizabeth Van Sant); Tuscumbia

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JAMES MOSS

c.1680-1752

James Moss was born in the colony of Virginia, about 1680, and was a resident of St. Peter's parish in New Kent County. He was married first to Anne (last name unknown), who died on March 9, 1712, then to Rebecca Henderson, sometime before 1720. James and Rebecca had at least two daughters: Mary, born in August of 1721, and Elizabeth, baptized on June 13, 1730.

Moss was a captain in the Virginia militia and a member of the House of Burgesses in New Kent, 1703-1705. He was serving on Tuesday, April 25, 1704, when a petition to divide New Kent County into two counties was presented. He served also at that time as a churchwarden of St. Peter's parish, who brought the petition about. The reason for dividing the county was that those inhabitants of the upper end of the county found it very inconvenient to travel to the court house "and other places usually appointed for publick meetings." Consequently, the upper portion of the county became Hanover County, and the lower portion remained New Kent County.

James Moss also served as a justice of the peace, and sheriff of New Kent County.

He was a member of the vestry of St. Peter's Parish, and its vestry book records, not only signatures of his attendance at meetings, but the death of his first wife, Anne, the births of two of his daughters, and the births and deaths of slaves belonging to him: "a Negro Girl belonging to James Moss, Gentleman, born May 12, 1719;" "Jenny, a negro of Capt. Moss born August 1. 1721;" "Jenny, a Negroe Girl belonging to Capt. Moss died June 10, 1722" (the poor baby lived only ten months); and "Fanny, a negro belonging to James Moss, born in May 1725."

James Moss died in New Kent County, Virginia in 1752.

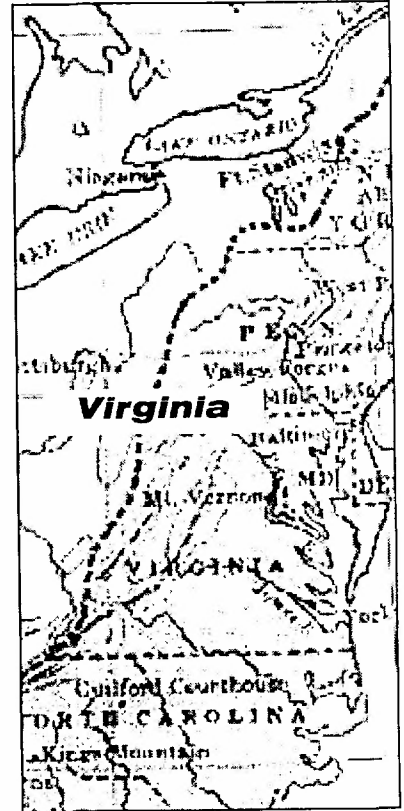
Submitted by Mrs. Clement Clay Torbert Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Clarence Penton Cook (Gene Shealy Torbert); Montgomery

Mrs. Clement Clay Torbert, Jr. (Gene Hurt); Opelika

Mary Dixon Torbert; Montgomery



SOURCE:

The Vestry Book and Register of St. Peter's Parish, New Kent and James City Counties, Virginia, 1684-1786, transcribed and edited by C.G. Chamberlayne, published in Richmond, VA, by The Library Board, Division of Purchase and Printing, in 1937.

In Grateful Remembrance
JOHN MOULTRIE

1702-1771



SOURCES:

Annals of Medical Progress and Medical Education in the United States before and during the War of Independence, by Joseph M. Toner, published in Washington by the Government Printing Office in 1874.

"John Moultrie, Jr., M.D., 1729-1798," by Eleanor Winthrop Townsend, M.D., in *Annals of Medical History*, published in New York, New York by Paul B. Hoeber, Inc.

Moutray of Seafield and Roscobie, by the Marquis De Ruigny and Raineval, published in London by Elliot Stock in 1902.

The Vestry Book and Register of St. Peter's Parish, New Kent and James City Counties, Virginia, 1684-1786, transcribed and edited by C.G. Chamberlayne, published in Richmond, VA, by The Library Board, Division of Purchase and Printing, in 1937.

Dr. John Moultrie Sr. was of ancient Scottish lineage. His ancestors were lairds of Seafield, Markinch, and Roscobie. A second son of James Moultrie (1686-1710), John Moultrie was born in the parish of Culross, shire of Fife, in 1702. He was educated at Edinburgh, became a surgeon in the British navy, and emigrated to Charlestown in 1728. On April 22 of that year, he married Lucretia Cooper, daughter of Dr. Bernard Christian Cooper of Goose Creek.

In 1729, Dr. Moultrie's name appears as one of the founders of the St. Andrew's Society, of which he later served as president from 1760 to 1771, the year of his death. He was a member of the Charles Towne Library Society and a vestryman of St. Michael's. In 1760, John Moultrie is listed as Major Moultrie, serving in Middleton's Regiment of Provincial Forces during the Cherokee War.

His son, Dr. John Moultrie Jr., was Royal Lieutenant of East Florida, the first of his family to be born in America, and the first native American to be graduated in medicine from Edinburgh University, in 1749. His thesis on yellow fever gained him an international reputation. He practiced obstetrics in Charleston, beginning in 1733 and continued for forty years. He was most popular in the South for his devotion to obstetrics.

Dr. Moultrie Sr.'s son William is the man for whom Fort Moultrie on Sullivan's Island, South Carolina is named. William Moultrie was a major-general in the American Revolution, defended Charles Towne harbor in 1776, and was later governor of South Carolina.

Two Moultrie family portraits, one by English portraitist John Francis Rigaud, and another by another English painter, Philip Reinagle, are in the collections of the Gibbes Museum of Art in Charleston, South Carolina.

Submitted by Mrs. Thomas Werth Thagard

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Henry Harmon Edens III (Beverly Ball Thagard); Charlotte, North Carolina

Mrs. Thomas Werth Thagard (Elizabeth Rhett Ball); Birmingham

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JOHN MYATT

1726-1801

John Myatt is the only recorded child of Thomas and Sarah Myatt of Lane End Farm in Horton Valley, Staffordshire, England, and was baptized at St. Michael's Anglican Church in Staffordshire on October 5, 1726. (Genealogists will find many spellings for Myatt including: Miot, Myate, Mayatt and Miate.) Exactly when he came to America is not recorded, but he must have come as a very young man, as he married Elizabeth Allen (born c.1727) early in the 1740s in Johnston County, North Carolina.

The marriage produced ten children: Mark (born 1743/44); Matthew W. (born 1747); John, Jr. (born c.1752); Mary (born c.1754); Britain (born before 1755); Elizabeth (born c.1757); Alexander (born c.1760); William (born c. 1765); Fereby (born c.1765); and Nimrod (born c.1768). Since several of the children are recorded as being born in Johnston County, North Carolina, the Myatts must have remained there after their marriage.

The Granville Land Grant of April 28, 1753, records the following grant of five hundred acres to John Myatt/Myate as being:

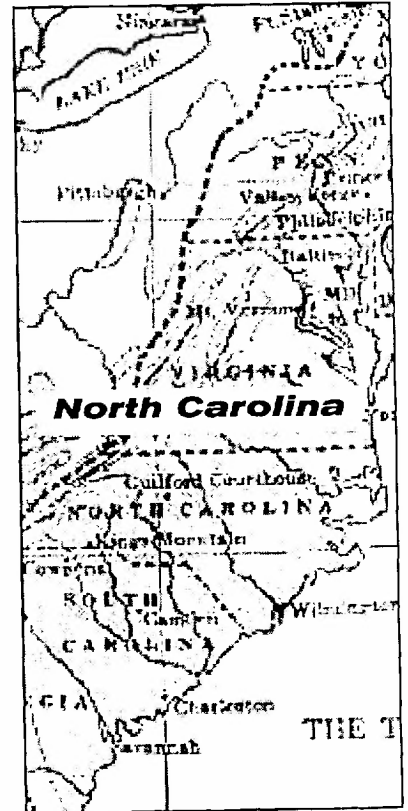
Between the Right Honorable John Earl Granville, Vis-count Carteret, and Baron Carteret, of Hawns, in the County of Bedford, in the Kingdom of Great Britain, one of the Lords of His Magesty's (George II) Most Honourable Privy Council, and Knight of the Most Noble Order of the Garter, of the one Part; and John Myate of Johnson County in the Province of North Carolina, Planter, of the other Part....

On December 5, 1771, Wake County, North Carolina, was formed from parts of Orange, Cumberland and Johnston Counties. In 1772, John Myatt Sr. served as a lieutenant from Wake County in the colonial militia. During the Revolutionary War, he provided supplies of bacon to the militia, and his sons fought for the rebel cause. Mark Myatt served as a captain and John Jr. as a private. John Sr. died in 1801 in Wake County at the age of seventy-five and is buried in the Mark Myatt Cemetery, Wake County, North Carolina.

Submitted by Carolyn Myatt Green Satterfield, Ph.D

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. William Hughes Satterfield (Carolyn Myatt Green); Birmingham



SOURCES:

The Colonial Records of North Carolina, Volume IX, 1771-1775, by William L. Saunders, published in New York by AMS Press in 1890, reprinted in 1993.

Colonial Soldiers of the South, by Murtie June Clark, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1983.

England to America, by H. David Myatt, published in Pekin, Illinois, by H. David Myatt in 1998.

In Grateful Remembrance
JAMES NEVILLE

1686-1752

and

GEORGE NEVILLE

1695-1774

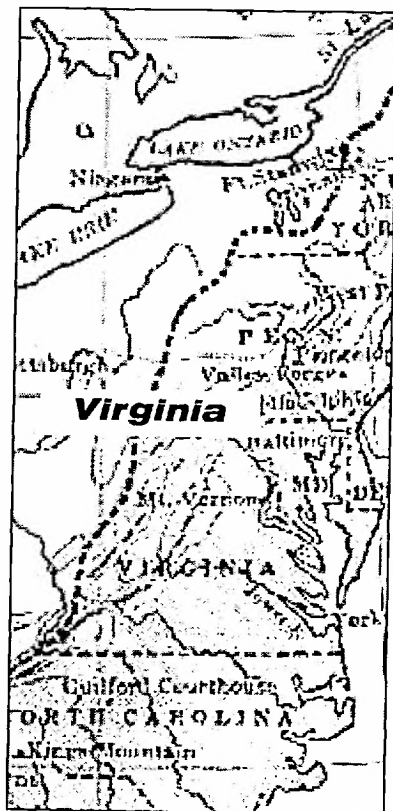
Of Norman origin, the Nevilles trace their descent from Gilbert de Neville, a Norman nobleman and an admiral of William the Conqueror's fleet. They became an influential family in England during the Middle Ages. Richard Neville, Early of Warwick (1428-1471), is the subject of Lytton's *The Last of the Barons* and appears in Shakespeare's *Henry IV* and *Henry V*. Ralph Neville, the first Earl of Westmoreland, was the son and heir of John Neville, Lord of Raby, probably through John's youngest son Edward, who married Elizabeth, the only daughter of Richard Beauchamp, Lord Bergavenny and Earl of Worcester. Edward succeeded his father-in-law as Lord Bergavenny in 1450 and was the first Neville to hold this title (at Eride Castle, some forty miles southeast of London).

John Neville, the progenitor of the family in this country, was among the group who arrived with Governor Leonard Calvert to found the Maryland Colony in 1634. He became a tobacco planter and a member of the Assembly. The referenced ancestors are brothers James and George Neville, whose father John III was the grandson and namesake of the progenitor.

James Neville was born c. 1686, probably in Isle of Wight County, Virginia. He served as a captain of the militia in Goochland County in 1740, and was appointed captain of the Albemarle militia when that county was formed in 1745. James was also one of the first justices of Albemarle County; Edgar Woods records that James Neville was appointed a county magistrate in 1746. James's son James II was colonel in the militia of Amherst County, and his son, Colonel Zacharias Neville, married Ann Scott Jefferson, niece of President Thomas Jefferson. James's second wife brought two children by her first husband into the household. These were Cornelius Thomas and Bethenia Thomas, who inherited from James Neville as his children. Cornelius Thomas served several terms in the House of Burgesses. James Neville died in 1752.

George Neville, the youngest child of John Neville III and Elizabeth Bohannon Neville, was born circa 1695 in Isle of Wight. He received grants of land for military service and was a captain from Prince William County in the Virginia militia, 1753. His plantation later fell into what became Fauquier County. He also owned two well-known wayside inns, *Neville's Ordinary* and *Auburn*. Recently this writer discovered via the internet an entry about this ancestor in the diary of a land surveyor who would become the country's first president. This entry is credited to the *George Washington Papers* at the Library of Congress, 1741-1799:

Fryday March 11, 1747/8 Began my Journey in company with George Fairfax Esqr: we travell'd this day 40 Miles to Mr. George Neavels in Prince William County.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

The explanation notes, "As early as 1743, Neville had acquired a tract in Prince William and had also made extensive purchases of land in Frederick County. In 1750 George Washington was engaged to survey for him some 400 acres of 'Waste & ungranted Land' in Frederick.... The deed to Neville from Lord Fairfax is dated 20 Nov. 1750."

George Neville named his wife Mary (Gibbs) and eight married daughters in his will, which was proven in June 1774.

Submitted by Mrs. Thomas Winfrey Oliver IV

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. William Manning Butler (Letitia Arrington McDonald); Atlanta, Georgia

Mrs. James Lawrence Goyer III (Julia Parker McDonald); Birmingham

Mrs. Thomas Winfrey Oliver IV (Julia Glenn Parker); Montgomery

SOURCES:

The A.B.C. of Heraldry, by Guy Cadogan Rothery, published in Boston, MA, by The Cornhill Publishing Company in 1915.

The Blakemore Family and Allied Lines, by Maurice Neville Blakemore, published in Richmond, VA, by The Compiler in 1963.

Burton Chronicles of Colonial Virginia, being excerpts from the existing records, particularly relating to the Burtons of the valley of the James and Appomattox, with especial reference to the ancestry of Jesse Burton of Lynchburg (1750?-1795), by Francis Burton Harrison, privately published in 1933.

Fauquier County and Albemarle County, Virginia, Wills, edited by William Armstrong Crozier, published in 1909.

The George Washington Papers, 1741-1799; in the Manuscript Division, Library of Congress.

The History of Albemarle County in Virginia, by the Reverend Edgar Woods, published in Charlottesville, VA, by the Michie Company in 1901.

Marriage Record, Parish Register, Christ Church, Middlesex.
Maryland Archives.

In Grateful Remembrance **JOSEPH NEVILLE**

1733*-1819

Joseph Neville Jr. was born December 2, 1733, in Abington Parrish, Gloucester County, Virginia. He was one of the eight children of Joseph Neville Sr. and Ann Bohannon Neville. He was a direct descendant of John Neville, who was a part of the group that accompanied Leonard Calvert, brother of Lord Baltimore, to America and founded the colony of Maryland.

When Joseph Jr. was eight years old, the family moved to Rockingham Farm, near Warrenton, in Prince William County, Virginia. In 1762, he moved to Moorefield, Hampshire County (now West Virginia), and married Agnes Nancy Brown, who was of Scottish descent. They had ten children—six sons and four daughters.

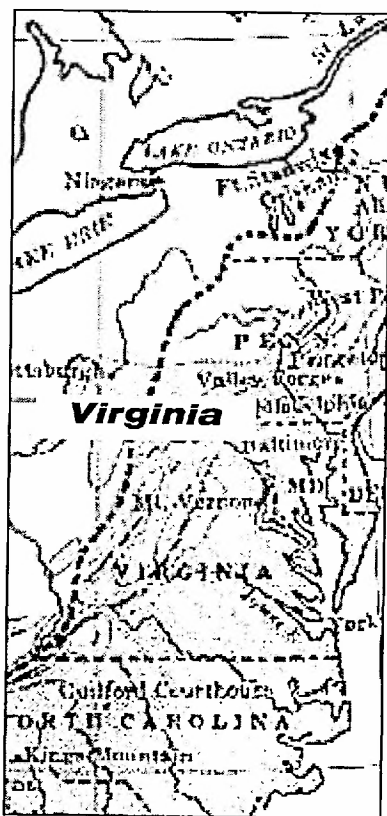
Joseph Neville Jr. was an outstanding surveyor, patriot, and statesman. He was the county surveyor for Hampshire County and was appointed by the state of Virginia to make an accurate survey of the disputed boundary line between Virginia and Pennsylvania that later became known as the Mason-Dixon line. The original surveyors had abandoned the project in 1767, just twenty-three miles short of completion, because of Indian attacks. Joseph Neville Jr. finished the job in 1782. As a statesman, he served Hampshire County in the colonial House of Burgesses until 1766. He also served in Williamsburg in the first representative governing body of the colonies, during the time the Revolution brewed and finally erupted. Patrick Henry, Thomas Jefferson, and George Washington were fellow members of this body. Neville was a member of the conventions of 1775 and 1776, the latter of which declared for independence on June 16, 1776. In 1777, 1780, and 1781, he was a member of the Virginia House of Delegates and was elected to the United States House of Representatives in 1792 to serve in the Third Congress. He did not run for re-election.

Neville was a member of the Hardy County Commission, which supervised the presidential election of 1800. In this election, Thomas Jefferson and Aaron Burr tied for electoral votes, with seventy-three each. This threw the election into the House of Representatives, with Jefferson winning.

Joseph Neville's military career lasted for more than thirty-seven years. He rose through the officer ranks and became a colonel, and by 1803 was a brigadier general. He served in the Continental Army during the Revolutionary War, and, in 1814, President James Madison ordered him to be ready to take the field in the War of 1812. This was within one month of the date on which the British burned the White House and the Capitol. There is no evidence that he actually saw action in this war, as he was eighty years old at the time, but he held this commission until he died in April of 1819.

The following is his obituary, which was published in the *Winchester Gazette*.

General Joseph Neville departed this life on the fourth of March at his seat in Hardy County, Virginia, after a short illness in the eighty-fifth year of his age. He was an old and respectable citizen of the County of Hardy, universally esteemed. During his long life he filled many offices of high trust and confidence. In the Revolutionary War, he bore a zealous and active part on his country's behalf in which he promoted the good cause with all the weight and influence of his character, as well as by advances from his purse when necessary. At the close of the struggle, he was appointed on the part of the State of



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Virginia, as one of the commissioners to run the line between this state and Pennsylvania, and he afterward represented the district in which he lived in the Congress of the United States. At the time of his death, he held the commission of Brigadier General of the Militia. His heart expanded with benevolence to the whole human race, and his hand was always open to supply the wants of the poor and the needy.

"Careless their merits or their faults to scan,

His pity gave, ere charity began."

These celebrated lines of Goldsmith were literally true in his character. He resided during the greatest part of his life on the fertile banks of the south branch of the Potomac, and for a few years previous to his death he resided on his farm in the Alleghany, from whence his body was removed and interred in the family burying ground of Edward Williams, Esq., by the side of his wife, who had departed a few years before him.

**NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1740 as Joseph Neville's date of birth, which, according to his obituary, must be incorrect.*

*Submitted by Mrs. John Wesley Bradshaw III, Mrs. John Henry Friend,
and Mrs. Arthur Prince*

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Howard Barney (Mary Bacon); Fairhope
Mrs. John Wesley Bradshaw III (Mary Danner Webb); Montrose
Mrs. John Henry Friend (Venetia Neville Butler); Montrose
Mrs. George Elmer Fuller Jr. (Anne Frazer); Spanish Fort
Mrs. Arthur Prince (Venetia Danner Barney); Mobile

SOURCES:

A 370-Year History of One Neville Family (1612-1982), by Joseph P. Neville (of the ninth generation of this family in America); privately published in Tempe, Arizona in 1988.

Biographical Directory of the United States Congress, 1771-present.
<http://bioguide.congress.gov>

"Know Your Ancestors in the Revolutionary War" contest, Famous Person category, 1976, by Pattie H. Chrissman.

In Grateful Remembrance **MANN PAGE I**

1691-1730

Mann Page I was born in 1691 at *Rosewell*, the original family home in Gloucester County, Virginia, that no longer exists. The location of the original *Rosewell* was considered peculiar by some of Mathew Page's contemporaries, lying as it did on very flat, low land. A possible reason for the choice of that location is that it was claimed by some to be the spot that Powhatan had his headquarters, and Mathew Page chose it to commemorate the saving of the life of Captain John Smith by Pocahontas.

The second and only surviving child of Mathew Page and Mary Mann of Timberneck, Gloucester County, Virginia, Mann Page I's grandfather was John Page, the progenitor of the Page family in Virginia, who had been born in England in 1627 and emigrated to Virginia about 1650, when he was about twenty-three years of age.

John Page owned land throughout the colony. One of his substantial holdings was in Middle Plantation, which included much of what was to become Williamsburg. He gave the land for Bruton Parish Church and graveyard in Williamsburg (where he is buried—his original tombstone has been moved into the church), and headed the list of subscriptions to form the church with a donation of twenty pounds sterling. From 1680 until his death in 1692, he was one of the most powerful political figures in Virginia.

Mann was educated at Eton in England. By the time he was sixteen years old, his parents and grandparents on both sides were dead, and he was the inheritor of vast landed estates. His first wife was Judith Wormeley, daughter of Ralph Wormeley, Secretary of Virginia, with whom he had two sons and a daughter. The daughter, Maria, later called Judith, was the only child to survive and she became the grandmother of Governor Thomas Mann Randolph of Albemarle County. Mann Page's second wife was Judith Carter, daughter of Robert Carter, president of Virginia, with whom he had five sons and one daughter. Three of the sons survived: Mann Page II, John Page, and Robert Page. Mann II married first in 1743, Alice Grymes, daughter of John Grymes of Middlesex County, a member of the Colonial Council during the reign of George I. His second wife was Anne Corgin Tayloe of Mt. Airy, Spotsylvania County. John Page married Jane Byrd, third daughter of Colonel William E. Byrd of Westover on James River and Maria Taylor, eldest daughter and one of the co-heiresses of Thomas Taylor, Esq., of Kensington, England. Robert Page married Sarah Walker, co-heiress and daughter of an English gentleman.

Quite prominent in politics, Mann Page I was a member of the King's Council from 1714-1730, on which every generation of the Page family sat until its dissolution at the Revolutionary War.

In 1729, Mann was to complete his own estate home, which he named *Rosewell*, in honor of his birthplace. It was at that time and for many years afterward the largest house in Virginia. Tradition holds that Thomas Jefferson drafted the Declaration of Independence in this place before going to Philadelphia: Jefferson was an intimate and lifelong friend of Mann grandson, Governor John Page, and frequently visited *Rosewell*. Mann Page I died there in 1730, at the age of thirty-nine years. Even though he died young, his short life was one of accomplishment. The words on his tombstone at *Rosewell* are as follows:



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Here lie the remains of the Honorable MANN PAGE Esq.
One His Majesties Council of this Collony
of Virginia
Who departed this life the 24th Day of January 1730
In the 40th year of his age.
He was the Only Son of the Honorable MATTHEW PAGE Esq.
Who was likewise a member of His Majesties Council.
His first wife was JUDITH Daughter of Ralph Wormeley Esq.
Secretary of Virginia;
By whom he had two Sons and a Daughter
He afterwards married JUDITH Daughter of the
Honorable ROBERT CARTER Esq.
President of Virginia
With whom he lived in the most tender reciprocal affection
For twelve years.

Submitted by Mrs. Clement Trantum Fitzpatrick Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Clement Trantum Fitzpatrick Jr. (Martha Page); Montgomery

SOURCES:

Genealogy of the Page Family in Virginia,
by R.C.M. Page, M.D.; published in
Harrisonburg, Virginia originally in
1893, reprinted in 1963.

*Old Churches, Ministers, and Families in
Virginia*, by Bishop Meade, published
in Philadelphia by J.B. Lippincott and
Company in 1847.

*Upon the Palisado and Other Stories of
Place from Bruton Heights*, Colonial
Williamsburg Research Publications,
1998.

In Grateful Remembrance **JOHN PEARSON**

c.1690-1771

John Pearson, an English gentleman of high rank, was born at Windsor, on the Thames River, about 1690. He was educated for the British Navy and had two sisters: one married a Board and the other a Coffin. On the death of his father, John, disagreeing with a maternal uncle, came to this country and landed somewhere on the Jersey coast, intending to ship for the West Indies. Off the coast of Florida, pirates captured the small boat in which he and a few companions were making the voyage. He managed to escape by leaping off the vessel at night and swimming boldly to the shore, where he was seized by Spaniards and thrown into the old fort at St. Augustine.

He lay for months in a dungeon. The prisoners were brought forth daily, and long discussions were held as to which horrible mode of death would be the most suitable and bloodcurdling. Sometimes a few would be tortured, while others were held in reserve. Finally, John Pearson escaped and hid for days in the adjacent marshes, and at last made his way to New Orleans in a rowboat. From there he traveled two years through the countryside to Charles Town, South Carolina. As he made his way slowly from tribe to tribe through unspeakable dangers and hardships, he gained knowledge of Indian languages and affairs that proved valuable in later years.

Reaching Charles Town, he was introduced to Governor Robert Johnson who, recognizing John Pearson's superior intelligence and education, made him his private secretary. Pearson was placed in charge of all Indian transactions, was a captain in the colonial wars, surveyed the road from Charles Town to Nashville, and built Fort London, the first Anglo-American settlement in Tennessee.

Sometime before 1740, Captain John Pearson married Mary Raiford, the daughter of Isaac Raiford, who was distinguished in both Carolinas. Isaac was reportedly one of the richest men in the South. His other daughter married the celebrated Moses Kirkland. John and Mary Raiford Pearson had five children.

Pearson was a justice of the peace in 1756 and a recruiter for Richardson's Regiment in the Cherokee War that began in 1759.

A curious anecdote illustrating the manners of the time furnishes the closing chapter in this unique career. It seems that on one of his expeditions to the "upcountry," Captain Pearson was presented by a hunter with a magnificent pair of antlers, which he sent at once to Governor Johnson, to whom he was greatly attached. Alas, the Governor's lady was fond of attention from others than her lord, and the executive, recalling the affair in *The Merry Wives of Windsor*, became mortally offended at what he considered an insult, although none was intended. Captain Pearson was dismissed from the Governor's service and, deeply chagrined, retired to his estate, *Windsor Forest*, in Fairfield to live out his days. He died there in 1771.

Submitted by Mrs. James Henry Seay, Jr., taken verbatim with gratitude from the source.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. James Henry Seay, Jr. (Patricia Reese Gayle); Montgomery



SOURCE:

This is Who We Are—Reese-Pharr and Related Families, by John Dudley Reese III, published in Ann Arbor, Michigan by Cushing-Malloy, Inc. in 1992.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

CLAUDIUS PEGUES

1719-1790

Of Huguenot descent, Claudius Pegues was born in London in 1719. Sixteen years later, he boarded the *Charles*, arriving in Charleston, South Carolina around December of 1736. It is said that he met his future wife, Henrietta Butler, during the trans-Atlantic voyage, but they did not marry until thirteen years after their arrival in America, after Claudius had settled in Georgetown.

In 1750, one year after their marriage, Henrietta gave birth to William; two years later another son, named Claudius, died in infancy. A second Claudius was born in 1755. Sometime before the birth of their fourth child, a daughter named Henrietta, the Pegues moved to Cheraw District on the Pee Dee River, in what is now the northwestern corner of Marlboro County, South Carolina. Seven days after her daughter was born, on June 9, 1758, the senior Henrietta died.

Claudius Pegues served in many prominent positions in St. David's Parish and Cheraw District, including the Provincial Congress in 1775-1776, the first General Assembly in 1776, and as justice of the peace in 1765, 1767, 1769, and 1785. Claudius's activities during the American Revolution earned him a reputation as a colonial leader. The only known exchange of prisoners between the British and the colonists was conducted at his home on May 3, 1781, after the Battle of Guilford Courthouse. Undoubtedly, the Pegues home was chosen because it stood halfway between the front lines of the British and Colonial armies. It is now on the National Register of Historic Places, and is still occupied by a member of the family, making it the oldest house in America to have been continuously inhabited by the original family.

Claudius's sons followed in his footsteps, serving the colonial cause through the Revolution. Claudius Jr. became a captain and went into politics on the east side of the Pee Dee River in Marlboro County. William lived on the west side of the same river, in Chesterfield County. Many of William's descendants were caught up in the westward migration, moving into Alabama and onward.

Submitted by Mrs. Philip Barbour Minor Banks

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Philip Barbour Minor Banks (Kathleen Armistead Waller); Eutaw



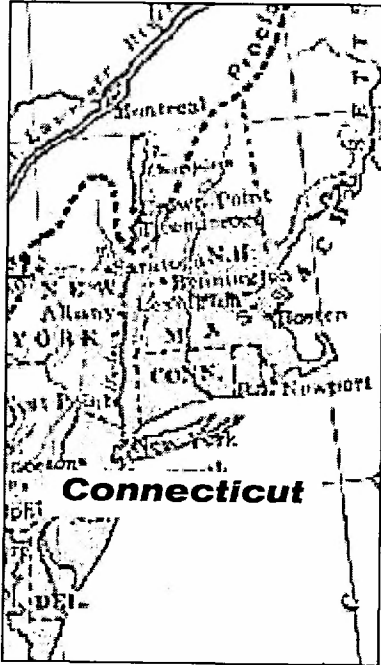
SOURCES:

The History of My Father's Family, by
Mattie Pegues Wood; published in
Montgomery, Alabama by M.P. Wood
in 1987.

<http://www.pigggenealogy.com/pegues.htm>

In Grateful Remembrance **WILLIAM PHELPS**

1599-1672



William Phelps was born in Tewesbury, Gloucestershire, England, in 1599. He, his wife, Mary Dover, and their six children came to America on the *Mary and John* in 1630. All the passengers were members of the same congregation and were fleeing the Church of England with their minister, the Reverend Mr. Wareham, whose teachings had become too heretical. The immigrants were put ashore at Nantasket, in the vicinity of Boston, and they founded the town of Dorchester near their landing spot. Five years later, fearful that the Puritans of the Massachusetts Bay Colony would cause as much trouble as the church of England had, the sixty families packed up and move to the wilds of Connecticut. Mary Phelps had died, but William and his six children joined in the founding of the city of Windsor.

William Phelps was a leader. He had been elected in 1634 as one of Dorchester's two representatives to the general court of Massachusetts. He was then elected to the first government of Connecticut, the Commission for a Provisional Government. A forerunner of the Connecticut General Court, the Commission consisted of eight men: two each from Springfield, Windsor, Hartford, and Wethersfield, which were the only settlements in 1636. This Commission declared war on the Pequot Indians in 1637, starting America's first Indian war.

William Phelps remained a prominent citizen for many years. He was a magistrate in Windsor in 1636-42 and 1658-62 and a deputy to the General Court many times. He was also named to a committee concerned about lying! He died in 1672.

Historian Henry R. Stiles wrote of William Phelps: "He was one of the most prominent and highly respected men in the colony, an excellent, pious, and upright man in his public and private life, and was truly 'a pillar' in church and state."

Submitted by Mrs. Truman McGill Hobbs

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Truman McGill Hobbs (Joyce Dexter Cummings); Montgomery

Mrs. Bruce Santon Reid (Emilie Cummings Hobbs); Montgomery

SOURCES:

History and Genealogies of Ancient Windsor, by Henry R. Stiles, published in Hartford, CT, in 1891.

The Phelps Family of America and Their English Ancestors, by Oliver Seymore Phelps, published in Pittsfield, ME, by Eagle in 1899.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

ANDREW PICKENS

1739-1817

Andrew Pickens was born in Paxton Township, Bucks County, Pennsylvania, on September 13, 1739. Andrew's forebears, Robert Pickens and his wife, Ester Jane Bonneau, must have been Huguenots, as they fled from France after the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes in 1685 to Scotland; from there they moved to Ireland. (See Glossary: Edict of Nantes.) Andrew's grandfather, William, and his wife, Margaret, left Ireland and sailed to Philadelphia. Andrew moved with his Scotch-Irish family as an infant to the Shenandoah Valley in Augusta County, Virginia. The family eventually moved through North Carolina to South Carolina, finally settling in Abbeville, South Carolina.

Andrew Pickens was a staunch Presbyterian, and was called "The Fighting Elder," as well as "Skyagunsta," or the "Wizard Owl," by the Cherokee, in tribute to his skill as a warrior. He married Rebecca Calhoun, aunt of John C. Calhoun, on March 19, 1765, and they moved to their home near Abbeville, South Carolina. Andrew and Rebecca were parents to Mary, Ezekiel, Ann, Jane, Margaret, Andrew (inaugurated governor of South Carolina in 1817), Rebecca, Catherine, and Joseph.

Andrew Pickens's service to his country and the state of South Carolina was recognized in the following resolution of the South Carolina General Assembly 117th Session, 2006-2007, Bill 461. It provides a review of the events of his life.

TO COMMEND AND HONOR GENERAL ANDREW PICKENS, OF PENDLETON DISTRICT, FOR HIS MANY YEARS OF OUTSTANDING AND DEDICATED SERVICE TO THE STATE OF SOUTH CAROLINA AS A PIONEER, PATRIOT, AND STATESMAN WHOSE DEDICATION TO LIBERTY HELPED ACHIEVE AMERICAN INDEPENDENCE AND WHOSE DEDICATION TO SOUTH CAROLINA ENSURED HER STABILITY AND PROSPERITY DURING HER EARLY HISTORY.

Whereas, Andrew Pickens was a successful farmer and was serving as a justice of the peace as the war for American independence began; and

Whereas, in 1775, Pickens became a Captain of Patriot militia, and then participated in the Snow Campaign in the winter of 1775, and then in the Fall of 1776, as a major of the militia, Pickens joined Williamson's expedition against the Cherokee Indians who had allied themselves with the Loyalists; and

Whereas, in July 1776, Pickens and a force of 25 militiamen were surrounded by over 150 Cherokees, but achieved victory in the "Ring Fight;" and

Whereas, on February 14, 1779, Pickens defeated Colonel Boyd at Kettle Creek, Georgia which destroyed Tory morale in South Carolina, while bolstering the numbers of Patriot militia; and

Whereas, at the Battle of Cowpens, Brigadier General Daniel Morgan gave Pickens command of the militia whose tactics proved decisive in the defeat of Banastre Tarleton; and

Whereas, following the Battle of Cowpens, South Carolina, Governor John Rutledge promoted Pickens to Brigadier General and he was also awarded a sword by Congress; and



In Grateful Remembrance

Whereas, Pickens participated in the Siege of Augusta, Siege of Ninety-Six and Battle of Eutaw Springs; and

Whereas, Pickens was elected in 1782 by the Ninety-Sixth District to the House of Representatives in the Fourth General Assembly at Jacksonborough and continued to serve in the House of Representatives through 1794; and

Whereas, Pickens was one of the commissioners named to settle the boundary line between South Carolina and Georgia in 1787; and

Whereas, in 1787, Pickens moved to his plantation at Hopewell in Seneca. Later in 1802, he moved to the site of the former Cherokee Village Tomassee where he lived until 1817; and

Whereas, Pickens was a member of the state constitutional convention in 1790; and

Whereas, he was the first United States congressman from Pendleton District serving from 1793-1795; and

Whereas, Pickens was appointed Major General of militia in 1795; and

Whereas, Pickens was a member of the State House of Representatives from 1800-1812, and declined the nomination for Governor in 1812; and

Whereas, Pickens was known by the Cherokee as *Skyagunsta*, or the Wizard Owl, as a tribute to his skill as a warrior; and

Whereas, Pickens remained an elder in the Presbyterian Church until his death in 1817 in Pendleton District whereupon he was interred at the Old Stone Churchyard.

Now, therefore, be it resolved by the Senate, the House of Representatives concurring: That the members of the General Assembly of the State of South Carolina, by this resolution, commend and honor General Andrew Pickens, of Pendleton District, for his many years of outstanding and dedicated service to the State of South Carolina as a pioneer, patriot, and statesman whose dedication to liberty helped achieve American independence and whose dedication to South Carolina ensured her stability and prosperity during her early history.

General Andrew Pickens died August 11, 1817 in Pendleton County, South Carolina and is buried at the Old Stone Church Cemetery with his wife Rebecca.

Submitted by Mrs. William Spencer Ringland

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. William Spencer Ringland (Patricia Strain); Birmingham

SOURCES:

The Fighting Elder, Andrew Pickens (1739-1817), by Alice Noble Waring, published in Columbia, SC, by University of South Carolina Press, in 1962

History of Old Pendleton District with A Genealogy of the Leading Families of the District, by R. W. Simpson, privately published in Pendleton, SC, in 1913.

THE REVEREND ABRAHAM PIERSON

c.1613-1678

Abraham Pierson, son of Thomas Pierson, was born c. 1613 in Bradford, Yorkshire, England. He graduated from Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1632, and was ordained a deacon at the Collegiate Church, Southwell, Nottingham, on September 23, 1632. He was a strong Puritan, and came to America in 1639 on the *Mayflower*, arriving in Lynn, Massachusetts, on May 10. He was ordained a Congregational minister in Boston, and, with his second cousin, Henry Pierson, was a primary leader in the 1640 founding of the colony of Southampton on the eastern end of Long Island (New York).

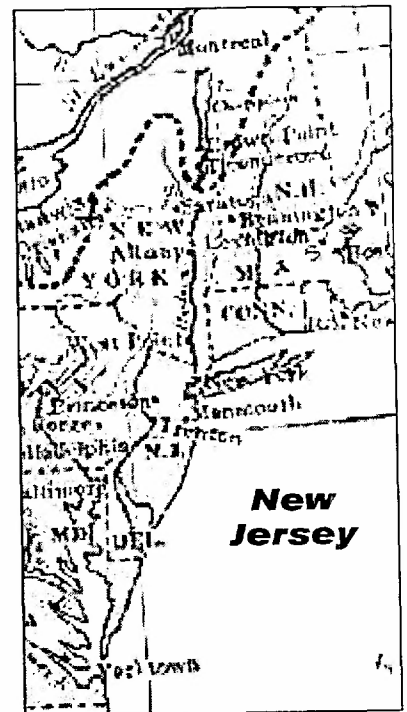
About that same time, he married Abigail Mitchell, who was born in South Ouram, Yorkshire, England, on April 26, 1618, the daughter of Matthew and Sarah (Wood) Mitchell. Abraham and Abigail had nine children: Abigail (born 1643); Abraham Jr. (born c. 1646), who became the first president of Yale College (now Yale University—his term was 1701-1707); Thomas (born 1648); Grace (born 1650); Susannah (born 1652); Rebecca (born 1654); Theophilus (born 1659); Isaac (born 1661); and Mary (born 1663).

The first church to serve the forty or so families in Southampton was Congregationalist, but later became Presbyterian. Abraham Pierson was most rigid in his desire to have "the civil as well as the ecclesiastical power all vested in the church, and to allow none but church members to act in the choice of officers of gov't, or to be eligible as such." This led to a division of the colony, and, in 1647, Abraham, with a small part of his congregation crossed Long Island Sound to Connecticut, where they organized and formed the town of Branford. There, for twenty years, he "enjoyed the confidence and esteem, not only of the ministers, but the more prominent civilians connected with the New Haven colony." Early on, he became interested in the Native Americans, made himself familiar with their language, and prepared a catechism for them, that they might know of God.

In 1665, Abraham Pierson united with John Davenport in opposing, with great inflexibility, the union of the two colonies of Connecticut and New Haven. He was rigid to excess in church communion, and disapproved of the liberality of the clergy in the Connecticut colony. He fully agreed with Davenport and others in the colony that no government other than that of the church should be maintained in the colony. They held that the church was greater than the state, and should rule the state, and "That church members only shall be free burgesses: and that they only shall choose magistrates and officers among themselves: to have the power of transacting all public and civic affairs." This was known as the Fundamental Agreement.

Taking the Fundamental Agreement with him, Pierson, with most of his congregation, left Branford in 1666, moving to a small community named New Millford on the Passaic River in New Jersey. He was a signer of the Agreement in 1666 and 1667, in the community now named Newark, presumably in honor of Pierson's birthplace of Newark-on-Trent in England.

The settlers purchased land from the Indians and laid the foundations of the city of Newark. Within the next two years, around sixty-five men came from Branford and two neighboring towns to the new settlement, each one entitled to a homestead lot of six acres. They brought their Congregationalist church organization with them from Branford to establish the First Church of Newark, which later became Presbyterian. Abraham Pierson led his flock of devoted followers for twelve years, following the



In Grateful Remembrance

Fundamental Agreement. For nearly a century after the community and the church were established, they were virtually indistinguishable, with the church members acting as civil magistrates. The religious interests of the community were served by the church as an organization, while the material welfare of the community was served by members of the congregation acting in a civil capacity.

Pierson was a stern and strict Puritan who was held in high regard in both civil and clerical circles. Cotton Mather characterized him as a "godly, learned man," and "wherever he came, he shone." When he died, his library included over four hundred books, making it one of the largest collections in the colonies. Although the bulk of his library was left to his son Abraham, he inserted the following clause into his will, dated August 10, 1671: "That my Wife shall have the Thirds of my Whole Estate to Whose Love and faithfulness I Comit the bring Up of my Children, and doe appoint her my sole Executrix, and give her my Great bible and What other English book she pleaseth to Choose." Abigail accepted the trust, and gave bond as executrix with the son Abraham Pierson as surety.

Abraham died on August 9, 1678, and was buried in Newark Burying Ground, Newark, New Jersey.

SOURCES:

Anniversary Year Publication for the Old First Church, by an unknown author, published in Newark, NJ in 1941.

Our Heritage: Old First Presbyterian Church of Newark, New Jersey, 1666-1956, by Muriel Dawson, published in Newark by the Gilbert Press in 1956.

The Ancestry of Rev. Nathan Grier Parke & his wife Ann Elizabeth Gildersleeve, compiled by N. Grier Parke II, edited by Donald Lines Jacobus, published in Woodstock, VT, by N. Grier Parke II in 1959.

<http://people.musc.edu/~geesey/PiersonAbraham.html>

http://breeseusa.org/Sket_Abraham%20PIERSON.htm

Submitted by Mrs. Caroline van Zandt Windsor

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Franklin Russell Jr. (Mary Chandler Thompson; Tallahassee, Florida)

Mrs. Vestor Jay Thompson Jr. (Katherine Bailey Slaton); Mobile

Mrs. Caroline van Zandt Windsor (Caroline Reid Snyder van Zandt); Monroeville

Biographies of Our Ancestors

THOMAS PITTMAN

1614-1692

Thomas Pittman, Sr. was born in Monmouthshire, England in 1614. He was a resident of Surry County, Virginia, and died there around 1692. He was married three times, but only had children by his first wife, Frances, whom he married in England. He and Frances had three children: Francis, William, and Thomas Pittman, Jr. After Frances died, he married Mrs. Martha Atkinson Gwaltney in 1666, and after her death, Mrs. Lydia Judkins in 1672.

Early in his career in Virginia, around 1651, Thomas Pittman was listed as a captain in the Virginia militia. He had been a Cavalier under King Charles, probably an officer, and fled to Virginia in 1649 to avoid capture and death at the hands of Cromwell's parliamentary army. It is said that the only other place in America that he could have gone where English was spoken was Massachusetts, but Puritans like Cromwell were in charge there.

By 1652, Captain Lieutenant Thomas Pittman was ordered by Governor Berkeley to appear in Jamestown with a company of men "with their arms fixed," probably in attempt to repel a group known as the Puritans for Governor. However, after an ineffectual resistance, the Puritans surrendered to the king's forces on March 12, 1652.

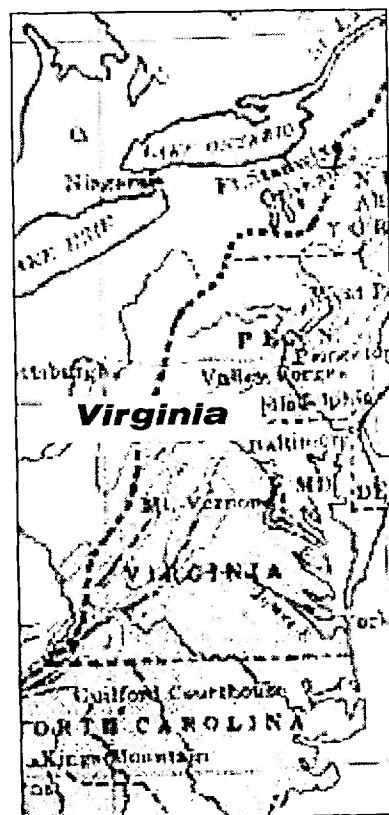
Records indicate that Thomas Pittman was a carpenter (sued for not finishing a house on time); a farmer (tobacco was grown by most of the settlers); a grinder mill operator in which he and Francis Pittman sold their half in 1661, with Thomas agreeing to do the repairs in the future. He must have been an honorable man, as records show that he was called as witness and to represent friends in court on several occasions. He is listed a total of thirty-two times in *Surry County Records, Virginia, 1651 to 1684*.

He is noted to have been with Bacon's group at Bacon's Castle (See Glossary: Bacon's Rebellion), and was asked to secure dogs to round up the cattle so that they could kill one for food. Although it was pointed out that he seemed to have a knack for choosing the losing side, Thomas was not executed in 1677 when the rebellion fell through. He, along with his two stepsons, Robert and Samuel Judkins, were pardoned by the king, but on March 26, 1677, he and seven others were placed under a peace bond, especially "toward ye Rt Honorable Sir Wm Berkeley knt Governor and Capt Genll of Virginia." He gave a lengthy deposition in 1677, stating that he was sixty-three years old, and born in England.

Submitted by Mrs. Robert Cecil Patton

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Robert Cecil Patton (Barbara Ellen Hepner); Opelika

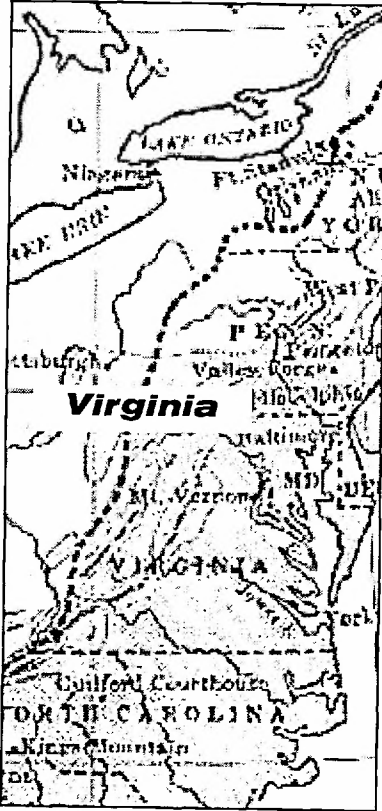


SOURCES:

Historical Southern Families, Volume II,
by John Bennett Boddie, published in
Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing
Company, Inc., in 1970.

[http://familytreemaker.genealogy.com/
users/l/a/w/Jesse-M-Lawrence/
GENE29-0001.html](http://familytreemaker.genealogy.com/users/l/a/w/Jesse-M-Lawrence/GENE29-0001.html)

1650-1711



William had a line of merchant ships that traveled regularly to Bristol and he took advantage of the "head right," a grant of land for each white settler that he brought to the colonies. By the time of his death, William Randolph owned fifteen thousand acres in Henrico and surrounding counties.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

William Randolph's colonial involvement went beyond politics and land acquisition. He was well educated before coming to Virginia, as is evidenced by his association with an elite group that read the classics in their original Greek and Latin. Always interested in education, he was one of the original incorporators of William and Mary College in 1692. In 1698 he was named a trustee and in 1709 he was made rector of the college.

As he prospered financially and in community standing, William Randolph and his wife, Mary Isham, daughter of Henry Isham and Catharine Banks Royall of Henrico County, produced seven sons: William, Thomas, Isham, John, Richard, Edward and Henry, and two daughters: Elizabeth and Mary. There may have been other children, but these survived to adulthood and were the progenitors of so many distinguished descendants that William Randolph and Mary Isham Randolph have been dubbed the "Adam and Eve of Virginia." Among these descendants were such remarkable people as Thomas Jefferson, Robert E. Lee, and Chief Justice John Marshall. A Randolph family story relates the words of a mother who married off her daughter to a poor Randolph, "An ounce of Randolph blood is worth a pound of gold!"

Known as a "First Family of Virginia," or FFV, the immigrant William Randolph left an indelible mark on the wilderness he turned into cultivated land and loyally served throughout his life.

Submitted by Mrs. John Guessna Harrell

DESCENDANTS:

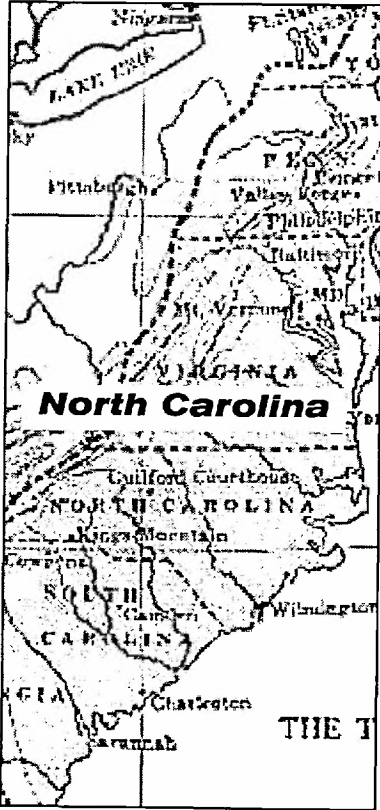
Mrs. John Guessna Harrell (Frances Beverley Davies); Birmingham
Mrs. Lucie Underwood McLemore (Lucie Underwood); Montgomery
Mrs. Price Chrenleigh McLemore, Jr. (Mary Ray Campbell);
Montgomery
Mrs. Louis Daniel McMilion (Mary Reid Ryall); Selma
Mrs. James Jackson Monaghan (Helen Rosa Coleman); Birmingham

SOURCE:

*William Randolph of Turkey Island and
His Immediate Descendants*, by Wassell
Randolph, published in Memphis, TN,
by Seebode Service in 1949.

In Grateful Remembrance **DAVID REESE**

1709*-1787



David Tasker Reese was one of the original signers of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, which many believe to be the first official pronouncement of rebellion against the tyranny of Great Britain. This document was created and signed by more than twenty-five prominent citizens of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, on May 20, 1775. The defiant resolutions adopted by the convention declared Mecklenburgers to be a "free and independent" people. More discussion resulted in the Mecklenburg Resolves, which were adopted on May 31, 1775. The documents were sent to North Carolina delegates attending the Second Continental Congress in Philadelphia.

Son of The Reverend David Ap Rees and Maud Owens, David Reese was born in 1709 in Brecknock, Wales. David inherited many books from his father's library and was considered well-educated for his time. The volumes he brought to America with him included Milton's *Paradise Lost and Regained*, Shakespeare's plays, Pope's works, Plutarch's *Lives*, Watt's *Psalms and Hymns*, and the family Bible. As a young man, David Reese moved to Cecil County, Maryland, and witnessed a will in that county as early as 1733 at the age of twenty-four. On March 31, 1738, he married Susan Ruth Polk of Dorchester County, Maryland. They had ten children, the eldest of whom, James Polk Reese, was said to have been present at the signing of the Declaration of Mecklenburg.

About 1753/54, the Reeses left Maryland to join the vast migration to North Carolina and settled on a farm around Coddle Creek, now within the city of Charlotte. (Originally part of Anson County, this area became Mecklenburg County in 1762, thirteen years before the Mecklenburg Declaration.) The Reese house was situated on 770 acres. A description of the building was given by one of David Reese's grandsons:

A plain, comfortable, weather-boarded building, one-and-a-half stories high, having four large rooms and two attic rooms, with dormer windows, besides two rooms in the cellar, one of which was used as a dining room. At each gable end were immense rock chimneys, the long piazza in front, with a trellis covered with roses at either end. The house was surrounded by majestic oaks, under which hung the inviting swing on one side, on the other was a long row of bee-gums (beehives in hollow logs)....

The floors were waxed, and the furniture, some pieces of which were brought from Wales, were polished like glass. Quaint rag carpets of the brightest hues covered the floors in winter, except in the drawing-room the floor was covered with bought carpet.

The flower garden was bright with all the old-fashioned flowers. The walks were bordered with sweet pinks. In the rear of the house was the big spring, with its clear, cold water, hard by the brick spring house, where the milk and butter were kept. On the roadside stood the old sweep well, where the weary traveler refreshed himself and beast.... It was considered one of the finest places in Mecklenburg County.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

David Reese was described as "commanding in appearance, fine looking, with bright black eyes." Being a "born statesman," he became prominent in North Carolina, both in politics and in the church. He was chosen a Poplar Tent Presbyterian Church elder in 1751, a position he held until he died. He assisted in organizing the early Presbyterian churches in the area, and also served as an elder at Rocky River Presbyterian Church. He was one of Mecklenburg County's first magistrates, and although he was too old to serve in the Revolutionary War, he sat in the Provincial Congress of 1776, and helped to procure firearms for Mecklenburg troops. He and one of his sons, the Reverend Thomas Reese, also furnished provisions for the Mecklenburg militia.

David Reese died in 1787, and is buried in Poplar Tent Churchyard Cemetery in Charlotte. His will of February 5, 1787, revealed that he was a man of considerable means for his day.

*NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1711.

Submitted by Mrs. Richard Harris Parker

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Richard Harris Parker (Ruth Ninon Holder); Muscle Shoals

SOURCES:

Lives and Times of the 27 Signers of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, compiled and edited by Victor C. King, official historian, Mecklenburg County; published in Charlotte, North Carolina by Anderson Press in 1956.

They Came from Ireland, by R. W. Thornton, 1996.

Genealogy of the Reese Family in Wales and America: From Their Arrival in America to the Present Time, by Mary E. Reese. published in Richmond, VA, by Whittet & Shepperson, Publishers and Printers, 1903.

History of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, from 1740-1900, by J.B. Alexander, originally published in 1902, reprinted by Baltimore, MD, by Genealogical Publishing Company in 2007.

From the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints: "Family Search Pedigree Resource File,"
compact disc #74, pin #449412;
compact disc #128, pin #1645216;
compact disc #101; pin #444747;
compact disc #48, pin #731734;
compact disc 48, 731-735;
compact disc #48, pin #731738;
compact disc #48, pin #731743;
compact disc #48, 731744;
compact disc #48, pin #7317451

In Grateful Remembrance
WILLIAM RHETT

1666-1723



William Rhett was born in London on September 4, 1666. At the age of twenty-four, he married Sarah Cooke, with whom he moved to Charles Towne, South Carolina, four years after their wedding. The couple had seven children.

In 1706, Colonel Rhett commanded a small fleet of local ships that fought off a hostile French and Spanish invasion of Charleston. The title of Colonel reflects his status in the Colonial military.

A French vessel under the command of Monsieur de Féboure, Admiral, weighed anchor and sped out to sea without offering a single shot. A few days later, Colonel Rhett's flotilla captured a French vessel. One of his prisoners was Monsieur Arbuset, who was chief in command of the French military expedition. Colonel Rhett is also known for capturing the "gentleman pirate," Major Stede Bonnet, one of the fiercest pirates in the trade, who was hanged in 1718.

Colonel Rhett acquired a sugar plantation located outside the city limits on a portion of land known as the Point Plantation. After Rhett acquired the property in 1707, he renamed the twenty-eight acres *Rhettsbury*, a name that was still in use when the property was subdivided later for his granddaughters. A later residence, which was built around 1712, still stands at its original location, which is now 54 Hasell Street. It has been restored and is privately owned.

Colonel Rhett served South Carolina in the following capacities: Commissioner; Member and Speaker for Commons House of Assembly, 1706, 1711, 1713; Receiver General, 1711-1721; Collector of Customs, 1716-1723; Commissioner of Indian Trade, 1710-1714.

Colonel Rhett died on January 12, 1722, and is buried in St. Phillip's Episcopal Church in Charleston. The inscription on his marker reads, "He was a good person that on all occasions promoted the public good of this colony and several times generously and successfully ventured in defense of the same...a kind husband, a tender father, a faithful friend, a charitable neighbor."

SOURCES:

Landmarks of Charleston, by Thomas Petigru Lesesne, published in Richmond, Virginia by Richmond, Garrett & Massie, Inc., in 1932.
Old South Carolina Churches, by Hazel Crowson Sellers, published in Columbia, South Carolina by Crowson Printing Company in 1941.
Charleston: The Place and the People, by Mrs. St. Julien Ravenel, published in New York by the McMillan Company in 1912.

Submitted by Mrs. Rufus Middleton King and Mrs. Samuel Edward Stroh

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Rufus Middleton King (Anne Kennedy Danziger); Montgomery
Mrs. Samuel Edward Stroh (Emmie Katherine King); Montgomery

Biographies of Our Ancestors

TIMOTHY RIVES*

c.1748-1821

Timothy Rives was born in Brunswick County, Virginia, about 1748. He appears first in the Brunswick County records on November 29, 1771, with the grant to him of a Negro man, Jeffrey, by Timothy Rives, Sr., of Meherrin Parish, Brunswick County, Virginia, "for and in consideration of the natural love and affection which I have and bear unto my son Timothy Rives." On July 24, 1772, records show that he bought four slaves from his father for the sum of 160 pounds sterling. In December of that same year, Timothy Rives married Priscilla Turner, daughter of James Turner. Robert Rives was a witness.

Shortly after his marriage, Timothy Rives moved, as had his brothers, to Richland County, Camden District, South Carolina, where he became an extensive landowner and a prominent citizen of Columbia.

In 1781 and 1782, Rives saw service as a lieutenant of militia in the Revolutionary War for which he was paid, on August 30, 1785, an amount of a little over twenty-two pounds sterling for sixty days duty. He was deputy commissioner in 1782, a justice of the court as early as 1785, and was proprietor of Rives' Tavern, an old landmark in Columbia.

He acquired considerable property above Columbia, not far from the Columbia clay works. Land grants of South Carolina show the taking up by him of eighteen and 150 acres in two transactions on May 1, 1786, of another 640 acres on June 5, 1786, of sixteen acres on July 3, 1786, of 820 acres on March 5, 1787, and two days later, in another two transactions, 106 acres and another for 848 acres. These grants, all in Camden District, totaled 2,598 acres. The original Rives house is thought to be still standing, back from Broad River.

The earliest picture of the statehouse of South Carolina is an old print showing the building as it appeared from Rives' Tavern around 1805. Timothy Rives was still running the tavern, which must have stood somewhere near the Hampton monument on the statehouse grounds; in that year he acted for several months as steward for the newly opened South Carolina College (thus following in the footsteps of his ancestor six generations removed, Timothy Ryves, Gentleman, steward of the University of Oxford in 1612), "dieting" the students at his tavern. He rented the tavern from Colonel Thomas Taylor.

Timothy Rives was quite a wealthy man, owning more than twenty-five hundred acres and fifty slaves at his death on June 8, 1821. His wife, Priscilla, preceded him in death on March 6, 1817. Their children were John Turner Rives, Mary, Charlotte, Martha, Thomas, James, and Sterling Williamson Rives.

**NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists Timothy Rives Sr. (c.1710-c.1773) as being from Virginia and serving as a gentleman justice of Brunswick County.*

Submitted by Mrs. Lewis Tony Singley Mrs. Victor Bethune Atkins Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Victor Bethune Atkins Jr. (Fredrica Elizabeth Heinz); Selma
 Mrs. Reid Stephen Cain (Pamela Rives Jones); Selma
 Mrs. William Leon Jones (Amelia Ann Rives); Selma
 Mrs. Almon Stoddard Rockwell (Wilma Jean Heinz); Selma
 Mrs. Lewis Tony Singley (Chris Heinz Rockwell); Selma
 Mrs. Paul Gregory Speyer (Fredrica Heinz Atkins): Birmingham

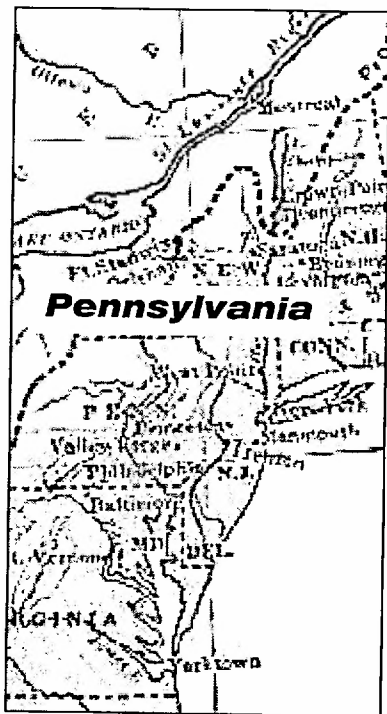


SOURCE:

Reliques of the Rives: Descendants of Timothy Rives Jr., of Brunswick County, Virginia and Richland County, South Carolina (Ryves): being historical and genealogical notes of the ancient family Ryves of County Dorset and of the Rives of Virginia, an essay, sociological and historical of a family's contribution to the making of a nation. by William Douglass. published in Lynchburg, VA, by J.P. Bell Company in 1929.

In Grateful Remembrance
DANIEL ROBERDEAU

1727-1795



Daniel Roberdeau, born on the island of St. Christopher in the British West Indies, was the only son of Isaac Roberdeau of Rochelle, France, and Mary Cunyngham, the eldest child of Robert Cunyngham of Glengarnoch, Scotland. Isaac and Mary met and married in St. Christopher after Isaac, a Huguenot, had fled France after the 1685 revocation of the Edict of Nantes (See Glossary). Isaac Roberdeau died early, and Mary Roberdeau moved to Philadelphia with her children and subsequently married again, a Mr. Keighley. In addition to Daniel, Mary had two daughters, Elizabeth and Ann Judith (who married William Clymer, brother of George Clymer, signer of the Declaration of Independence).

Daniel was sent to England for his early schooling, then finished his education in Philadelphia. He became an importer and merchant, specializing in produce from the West Indies, particularly wine and rum. Over the years, he acquired his own ships and real estate in Philadelphia and Alexandria, apparently amassing considerable wealth. In 1761, he married Mary Bostwick, daughter of the Reverend David Bostwick, a prominent minister of New York City. Daniel and Mary had one son, Isaac, and three daughters, Ann, Mary, and Selina. He was an elder of the Presbyterian Church in Philadelphia until 1771, and was one of the founders of the church in Alexandria when he moved there after the Revolutionary War.

Daniel Roberdeau was a colonel in the local guard before the War and in 1775 was elected the first president of the voluntary association for defense of the state. He was a member of the council of safety, along with Benjamin Franklin, Robert Morris, Daniel Clymer, Edward Biddle, Thomas Wharton, and others. He was elected brigadier general of the Pennsylvania volunteer association on July 4, 1776, and was personally requested by John Hancock, president of the new United States Congress, to move his forces to Trenton to assist General George Washington. He fought in numerous engagements in other areas during the course of the Revolutionary War.

General Roberdeau personally fitted out a privateer to attack British merchant ships. He advanced eighteen thousand dollars to the Benjamin Franklin Commission so it could try to induce the French to intercede in the War on the side of the Americans. In the early days of the War, he was assigned to develop a lead mine to produce ammunition for the army, and is said to have built with his own funds a stockade in Bedford County to defend the mine, which came to be known as Fort Roberdeau.

Records show Daniel Roberdeau to have been an active participant in many of the affairs of state and historical events of the times. He signed the original merchant's protest of the Stamp Act, one of the early actions that provoked the Revolutionary War. He was a member of the Pennsylvania Assembly with Benjamin Franklin from 1756 through 1760. He was elected to the First Continental Congress in 1777 and signed the Articles of Confederation. After the War, he was chairman of the price control committee. Serving with him were the publisher Thomas Paine, scientist David Rittenhouse, and artist Charles W. Peale.

During the War, the now General Roberdeau was seized with an infectious fever, and went to recover in Lancaster, Pennsylvania, where his wife and children had fled for safety from the fighting. He recovered, but Mary contracted the disease and died in February of 1777. She was buried under the communion table in the Lancaster Presbyterian Church.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

At the age of fifty-one, the general married Jane Milligan, with whom he had two daughters and a son: Jane, James, and Heriot. Five years later, in 1783, Daniel Roberdeau traveled to London with his eldest son, Isaac. When set upon by a highwayman on Hounslow Heath, the large and powerful Roberdeau dragged the attacker into the carriage, placed a foot upon his neck and a pistol to his chest, drove back to London with the robber's feet hanging out the door and delivered him to the authorities.

The Roberdeaus moved to Alexandria in 1784, where the Washington and Curtis families were frequent guests in their home. Once, when his daughter, Selina, was riding with Martha Washington, the carriage overturned, breaking Selina's wrist. The break did not heal properly, and afterwards her wrist was not quite straight.

Daniel Roberdeau moved to Winchester, Virginia, late in 1794 and died there the next year. He was originally buried in the cemetery of the Presbyterian Church, but was later removed to the Mt. Hebron Cemetery.

Submitted by Mrs. William Frank Cope, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. William Frank Cope, Jr. (Patricia Wheat Bennett); Mobile

Mrs. Clifton Inge Morrisette (Melissa Seline Cope); Mobile

SOURCES:

The Royal Descents of 500 Immigrants,
by Gary Boyd Roberts, published in
Baltimore by Clearfield Company in
June 1993.

*DAR Patriot Index Centennial Edition
Part III*, by National Society of the
Daughters of the American
Revolution, Washington, D.C., in
1990.

*Genealogy of the Roberdeau Family,
Including a Biography of General Daniel
Roberdeau, of the Revolutionary Army,
and the Continental Congress; and a
Signer of the Articles of Confederation*,
by Roberdeau Buchanan, published in
Washington by J. L. Pearson, Printer,
in 1876.

<http://www.ConstitutionFacts.com>
(The signers of the Articles of
Confederation)

In Grateful Remembrance

JOHN ROLFE

1585-1622

As a young man of twenty-four in 1609, John Rolfe and his wife departed his native Norfolk, England, for America on *The Sea Venture*, the flagship of the Virginia Company. The voyage was interrupted by a terrible storm that left the couple stranded in Bermuda for ten months, where their child was born and died. It was a year before they arrived safely in Jamestown. Conditions in the struggling community were desperate, with rampant disease and the constant threat of Indian attack. Rolfe's wife died shortly after their arrival.

John Rolfe realized, as did other English gentlemen colonists in Jamestown, that the colony had no staple product for export, and they desperately needed one. Searching for a crop that could be sold abroad to provide economic security, Rolfe decided upon tobacco. With seeds he had imported, probably from the West Indies, he developed a new strain that was sweeter and more pleasing than the tobacco the Indians grew and used. Thus, the Jamestown colonists became the first Europeans to produce a marketable crop on the mainland of North America.

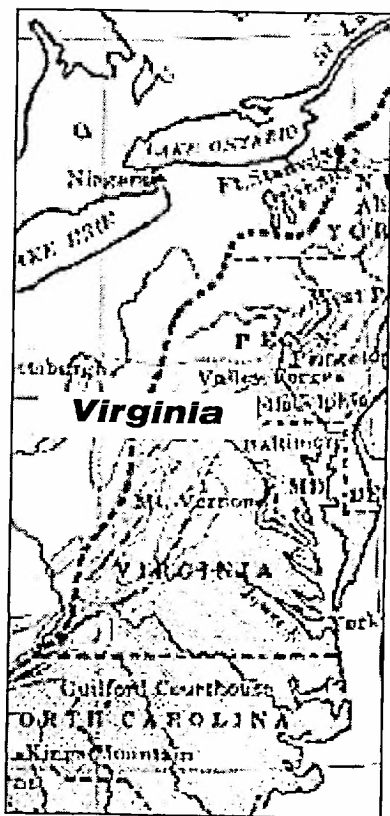
Demand for tobacco was strong, and trade flourished. It is said that the English king, James I, called it a "stinking weed," but commerce in it yielded so much tax money for England that he finally relented.

Thus the plantation economy was established in the colonies. Tobacco trade boomed. In 1616, the colony exported twenty-three hundred pounds of tobacco to England; in 1619, the amount grew to twenty thousand pounds; by 1626, the amount of tobacco that Virginia shipped abroad was 260,000 pounds!

John Rolfe's contribution to colonial survival and development through the introduction of the cultivation of tobacco is largely overshadowed by the young widower's marriage to an Indian princess, Pocahontas. She was the daughter of Powhatan, principal chief of an alliance of more than thirty tribes that were prohibiting trade with colonists, along with waging guerilla warfare and taking Englishmen hostage. In retaliation, the Jamestown settlers kidnapped Pocahontas, hoping to exchange her for the captured Englishmen and their weapons. Surprising everyone, Pocahontas refused to be part of the negotiations and elected to remain with the English. She was later baptized by the Reverend Alexander Whitaker at Henrico, near Jamestown, and took the Christian name of Rebecca.

Economic success had made John Rolfe a prominent man in the colony by the time he met Pocahontas in 1612. Whether his marriage to her two years later was made purely out of love, or if Rolfe saw it as a means to negotiate peace with the Powhatan confederacy, is unclear. An eight-year period of peace did follow the union. In a letter to Governor Dale, Rolfe said that the marriage was "for the good of the Plantacon, the honor of our Countrye, for the glorye of God, for myne owne salvacon."

In 1615, Pocahontas bore a son, Thomas Rolfe, and in 1616, the Rolfes answered an invitation from the Virginia Company to visit England. Appreciative of the peace and renewed trade relations with the Indians, the English king and queen both graciously received Pocahontas as "Lady Rebecca." However, Pocahontas soon became ill, and died of consumption while in England. The infant, Thomas, was left in England under the care of Rolfe's brother, Henry. Rolfe returned to Virginia, where he married a third time, to Jane Pierce, with whom he had a daughter, Elizabeth.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Rolfe's last years were productive and busy, as he served as secretary of Virginia and as council of the state. Ironically, there is a possibility that, despite his marriage to Pocahontas, John Rolfe may have been killed in the massacre of the English launched by Powhatan in 1622, when a quarter of the Jamestown population was slaughtered. Although the details of his death are not known, John Rolfe did die suddenly in 1622, that year of full-fledged warfare between the colonists and the tribes.

Submitted by Mrs. Thomas Barnett DeRamus Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. William David Sellers Crommelin (Elizabeth Lanier DeRamus); Birmingham

Mrs. Thomas Barnett DeRamus, Jr. (Elizabeth Wilkinson Lanier); Tuscaloosa

Mrs. Grace Lanier Norville (Grace Lanier Brewer); Birmingham

SOURCES:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-1624/5), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.

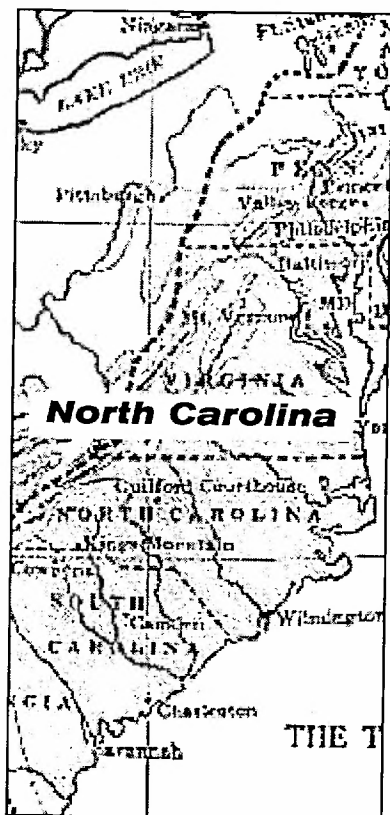
Pocahontas and her Descendants, by Wyndham Roberson with illustrative historical notes by R.A. Brock, published in Richmond, VA, by J.W. Randolph and English in 1887.

www.virtualjamestown.org/jrolfe

www.bookrags.com/John_Rolfe

In Grateful Remembrance **ROBERT RUTHERFORD**

1734-1814



SOURCES:

The Scots Peerage, founded on Wood's edition of Sir Robert Douglas's Peerage of Scotland, edited by Sir James Balfour Paul, Lord Lyon King of Arms, 1880. Electronic edition copyrighted by Richard G. Boyd, 1989-2003.

Colonial Records of North Carolina, Volume 10, by William Saunders (1835-1891), published in Raleigh by the state of North Carolina, 1886-1890.

Reminiscences and Memoirs of North Carolina and Eminent North Carolinians, by John Hill Wheeler (1806-1882), published in Columbus, OH, by Columbus Print Works in 1884.

Annals of Newberry District, South Carolina, in Two Parts, by John Belton O'Neill, published in Newberry, SC, by Aul and Houseal in 1892.

The name Rutherford is said to have originated when King Ruther of Scotland bestowed it on a fearless warrior who led the king safely on an expedition against the Britons. A later Rutherford, James, married Lady Margaret Estes, a descendent of Charlemagne; still later down the line, John Rutherford, who was knighted by Queen Anne, married Elizabeth Carncross and started the line from which the Rutherfords of America are descended.

Originally, the Rutherfords settled in New York and New Jersey. However, in early 1734, one sailed his boat down to Essex County, Virginia, and it was on the trip that Robert Rutherford was born. His family settled with him in Hobbs Hole, now Tappahannock, Virginia.

Robert Rutherford married Dorothy Ann Brooks in 1752 in Tappahannock. They had eight children: Joanna, Mary, John, Thomas Brooks, Nancy Ann, Robert Jr., Happy Elizabeth, and William Brooks. While living in Virginia, Robert Rutherford was a member of the non-importation association, formed by the members of the House of Burgesses that were against the importing and buying of British products. After moving to Chatham County, North Carolina, he was a delegate to the first Provincial Congress at Hillsborough on August 21, 1775. He also became a colonel in the Chatham County militia.

In 1780, Colonel Rutherford moved to South Carolina to the Newberry District, where his energy, prudence, and kindness made him a man of mark. He assisted in establishing the county court of Newberry District, was appointed a judge in 1785, a position he held for six years. He was the founder of the Newberry Academy, a commissioner of public works, and for many years a member of the legislature. He is also reported to have had, in 1796, the first cotton gin in the area.

The loving respect shown him by his neighbors and fellow citizens gave proof that he was an active Whig and a sincere patriot, as well as a valued citizen. He withheld charity from no one, except the idle and drunken. He believed in hard work, once saying, "Many people say it is too wet or too dry to work. God gave the seasons: it is man's duty to work—work wet, work dry, and I never failed to find God gives the increase." Colonel Robert Rutherford was a successful planter, merchant, public servant, and patriotic soldier.

Submitted by Mrs. Edward Sellers McCurdy

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Richard LaFayette Guthrie (Sara Kathryn Couvrette); Auburn

Mrs. Edward Sellers McCurdy (Kim Couvrette); Selma

EDWARD RUTLEDGE

1749-1800

Edward Rutledge was born in Charleston (then Charles Towne), South Carolina, on November 23, 1749. He was the youngest of seven children of Dr. John Rutledge and Sarah Hext Rutledge, and was only a year old when his father died. Sarah was a Charleston heiress of some fortune and, although a widow at only twenty-seven, she was able to afford splendid educations for her children. Private tutors provided Edward's early education and, when he was old enough, he went to work as a clerk in the office of his brother, John Rutledge.

At the age of nineteen, Edward was sent to England to study law at the Middle Temple in London (See Glossary: Middle Temple), where his brother, John, had also studied. John wrote to Edward, admonishing him.

I hope that whatever you attempt, you will make yourself completely master of; for nothing makes a person so ridiculous as to pretend to things which he does not understand; and it will not be sufficient for a man, in such a case, to rest satisfied, because he may pass as a complete scholar among those with whom he may have to do in general, who, perhaps, may know little about the matter; such a one may meet sometime with his superiors, and in what situation will he then be?

When he returned from England in 1773, Edward Rutledge was admitted to the bar to practice law, and he married Henrietta Middleton, daughter of the wealthiest planter in South Carolina. Through this marriage, Edward became the richest man in his family, because he received from the Middletons a dowry worth about seventy thousand pounds sterling. Edward and Henrietta had three children.

In 1774, the twenty-four-year-old Edward Rutledge was elected to the colonial legislature through the arrangements of his brother John. Later in that same year, the legislators elected him a representative to the first Continental Congress, along with John and his father-in-law, Henry Middleton. The trip to the convention in Philadelphia was something of a family party, for all three men took their wives.

Both Edward and John were again elected delegates to the second Continental Congress in 1775. John left Edward to represent his interests in Philadelphia, while he returned to South Carolina, wrote a state constitution, and was elected president of the state.

When Richard Henry Lee of Virginia presented his resolutions for independence to the Continental Congress on June 7, 1776, Edward was undecided on how South Carolina should vote, so he requested that the decision be postponed until July 1. During the meeting of the entire committee on July 1, Edward and the other South Carolinians voted against independence. However, the next day Edward changed his mind, and voted for Lee's independence resolutions. On July 4, 1776, he voted in favor of the Declaration of Independence and signed it with the other delegates on August 2. In a letter to brother John on July 9, Edward mentioned what had happened in the following offhand manner: "Enclosed also is a very important Declaration which the King of Great Britain has at last reduced us to the necessity of making.... All the colonies...were united...."



In Grateful Remembrance

In August 1776, Edward Rutledge was appointed by Congress, along with John Adams and Benjamin Franklin, to meet with the British commander, Lord Howe, in New York, at Howe's request, to discuss the possibility of a peace settlement. The negotiations were fruitless, but in later years, Rutledge enjoyed telling an anecdote about Franklin that occurred during that time. According to the story, Franklin offered the British sailors who took them back from Howe's headquarters a handful of gold and silver coins for their trouble, but the officer in charge would not let the soldiers accept it. When Rutledge later asked Franklin why he had done this, the witty old statesman replied, "As these people are under the impression that we have not a farthing of hard money in the country, I thought I would convince them of their mistake. I knew, at the same time, that I risked nothing by an offer which their regulations and discipline would not permit them to accept."

Rutledge returned to South Carolina in 1777 and became a captain in an artillery battalion. He was taken prisoner by the British in the siege of Charleston in 1780, and was sent to St. Augustine, where "dangerous" rebels were held. He and fellow South Carolinians Arthur Middleton and Thomas Heyward, Jr. were singled out for indignities until they were taken to Philadelphia and freed in the prisoner exchange at the end of the War. Meanwhile, the British roaming through the southern countryside made a point of devastating the properties and plantations of the Rutledge and Middleton families (although the house at Middleton Plantation was not destroyed until the Civil War).

After his return to South Carolina, Edward Rutledge was elected to the state legislature in 1782 and every year thereafter for the next sixteen years. He became a law partner of Thomas Pinckney, who served as governor in 1787-1788, and his fortune prospered. In 1798, he retired from his law practice. That same year, he was elected governor of South Carolina as a Federalist. On January 23, 1800, while still serving as governor, Rutledge died in Charleston at the age of fifty.

Submitted by Mrs. Marvin Lynn Lowe and Mrs. Raymond Rudolph Renfrow Jr.

SOURCES:

Founders of Freedom in America, by David C. Whitney, published in Chicago by J.G. Ferguson Publishing Company in 1964.

They Put It On The Line: The fate of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, by T.R. Fehrenbach. Reprinted by Mollie Steves Zachry in memory of her grandmother, Daisy Walthall Folbre, for The National Society of the Colonial Dames of America in the State of Texas, San Antonio Town Committee, in May, 1992.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Marvin Lynn Lowe (Alburta Martin Daugette); Gadsden
Mrs. Raymond Rudolph Renfrow, Jr. (Florence Anne Daugette); Gadsden

Biographies of Our Ancestors

ABRAHAM SALLE

1670- c.1719

Born in Saint Martin Ile De Re, Aunis, France in 1670, Abraham Salle was the progenitor of that family in America. The name has been spelled Sallee, Saillee or Saily, but appears in colonial documentation as Salle. Abraham Salle was the son of Jean and Marie Salle of Picardy, members of John Calvin's Reformed Church, which had been established in 1550, and he grew up in that faith.

When Louis XIV revoked the Edict of Nantes in 1685, totally outlawing Protestant heretics, now called by the epithet "Huguenots," many French citizens took refuge in England. (See Glossary: Edict of Nantes.) Since the colonies were land-rich and people-poor, efforts were made to recruit the Huguenots to America. Virginia was more successful than some colonies in their recruitment, as the governor promised religious freedom—the Huguenots could have their own ministers, rather than being compelled to join the Church of England.

Four ships sailed in 1700 for the shores of Virginia and the immigrants established themselves at Manakin Towne in Henrico County. The exact date of Abraham Salle's arrival in America is not documented, but he was first recorded in New York in 1700, where he petitioned the governor and council for privileges of citizenship. By 1701, he had moved to Manakin Towne and became an important merchant, clerk of the parish, captain of the militia and justice of Henrico County.

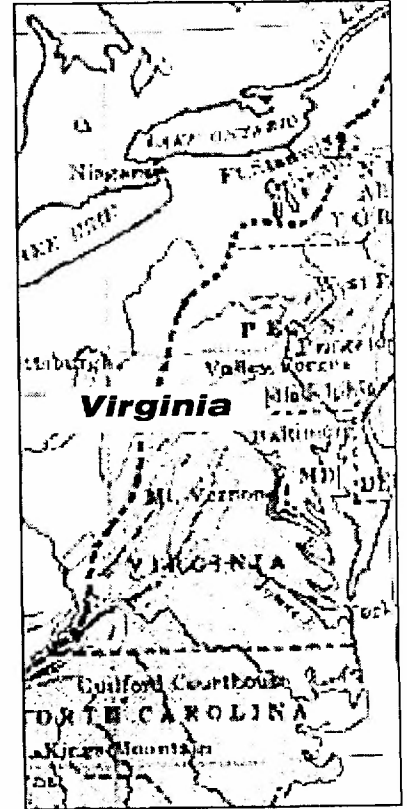
In the early years of the Manakin settlement, Abraham Salle is recorded to have been a spokesman to William Byrd II, petitioning the governor for more land. He was described as a justice of the peace and a leading citizen of Manakin Towne.

Abraham Salle married Olive Perrault, possibly the daughter of Captain Daniel Perrault of the ship *Peter and Anthony*, one of the four that had brought the Huguenots to Virginia. They were the parents of five sons and one daughter. Upon his death, Abraham Salle was a man of some means, leaving an estate of considerable land and slaves to his children.

Submitted by Mrs. Richard Bernard Englund

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Richard Bernard Englund (Gage Bush); Point Clear



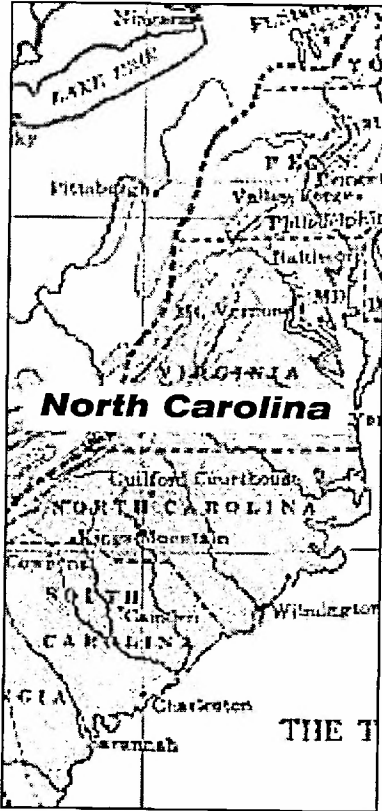
SOURCES:

The French Huguenot Frontier Settlement of Manakin Towne by James L. Bragg Jr., published in *The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, October 1953.

A Huguenot Exile in Virginia, or Voyages of a Frenchman Exiled for His Religion, with a Description of Virginia & Maryland, by Gilbert Chinard, published in New York by The Press of the Pioneers, Inc., in 1934.

In Grateful Remembrance **JOSEPH SANDERSON**

b. unknown-1743



Joseph Sanderson was born and died in Currituck County, North Carolina, where he amassed extensive acreage and served his county in several colonial leadership capacities. He may have been the son of the immigrant, Richard Sanderson, who was born in Scotland but died in Currituck County in 1718. His mother may have been Demaris Collmon, who died in Currituck in 1719. Joseph's birth date is unknown, but he is listed on the Currituck County tax and militia records beginning in 1714, which would make him at least sixteen years of age by that time.

Many county records have been lost, but it is known that Joseph Sanderson was a member of the House of Burgesses from 1725 through 1726, and possibly until 1743. He is referred to as Captain Sanderson in some records, indicating service in the colonial militia. William Saunders' *Colonial Records of North Carolina (1713-1728)* records his service on several grand juries, often as foreman, and his appointment to the commission of peace in 1724. An unusual note is that Joseph Sanderson is recorded on a tax list of 1719 as having been paid for killing three wildcats.

Although some details of his life have been lost, much can be gleaned by reading the will of Joseph Sanderson, which fortunately has been preserved. In his will, which distributes large real estate holdings, he names his wife, Julia, whose maiden name may have been Tully, and seven sons: Richard, Samuel, Joshua, Thomas, William, Benjamin, and Joseph. Certainly, the oldest son, Richard, would have provided a home for his mother, as Joseph left him the manor plantation on which they lived. To Julia, outright, he left one-fifth of all the cattle on their plantation, eight ewes and one ram, three horses, three beds with linens, and "Tenn Two year old hogg if they can be found."

To Richard, he left the home plantation and another plantation called *Pawmers*, his "New Gun," the cattle and furnishings not already pledged to Julia, and four slaves. Samuel was to receive another plantation and a female slave "with all of her increase." Joshua was to inherit two plantations and Thomas one. To the fifth son, William, was assigned one hundred acres; and the younger boys, Benjamin and Joseph, sixty-five and fifty acres respectively.

Apparently, Joseph suffered from ill health as he began his will, dated 1743, with the statement that he was "very sick of Body but of a true and perfect mind and memory." He died shortly thereafter.

Submitted by Mrs. James Pollard Clark and Mrs. George Laurence McCrary Jr.

SOURCES:

The North Carolina Historical and Genealogical Register edited by James Hathaway in 1900-1903, reprinted in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1998.

Colonial Records of North Carolina, 1713-1728, compiled and edited by William Saunders and published by F. M. Hale, Printer to the State, in 1886.

Will of Joseph Sanderson

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Donald Henry Bevill (Cruse Patton Nolen); Birmingham
Miss Irene Nolen Clark; Huntsville
Mrs. James Pollard Clark (Mary Cruse Patton); Huntsville
Mrs. Kevin Gerald Crumlish (Margaret Anne McCrary); Mooresville
Mrs. James Andrew Glennon (Alice Lonsdale Nolen); Point Clear
Mrs. George Laurence McCrary Jr. (Shirley Winona Dowling); Mooresville

Biographies of Our Ancestors

REUBEN SEARCY

1729* -1795

John Searcy and his wife, Phoebe, were born around 1707 in Nottingham, England. They came to America in 1727 or 1728 with his two brothers, Richard and Robert, and settled in the Nut Bush section of North Carolina that later became Granville County. Their son, Reuben, was born there.

Reuben married Susan Henderson (1742-1778) on April 23, 1760. Susan was the sister of Richard Henderson (see entry) of the Transylvania Company. The couple had ten children before she died. Reuben was married a second time to Elizabeth Jett (1757-1842), with whom he had eight children.

On March 23, 1759, Searcy and other prominent members of the region presented a petition to the court protesting, while still asserting loyalty to King George II, the exorbitant legal fees charged by the crown's attorney general and famous lawyer, Robert Jones (see entry), whom, they alleged, encouraged "frivolous lawsuits" for his own personal gain. Apparently, Lawyer Jones was quite eloquent when arguing a case as the petition claimed that he "worked on the passions of weak juries to blind their perception of justice." (It is quite probable that Mr. Jones filed a libel suit against Searcy for this assault.) The original document, "The Petition of Reuben Searcy and Others," was lost for some time but was found in the early twentieth century by Thomas M. Owen, first director of the Alabama State Department of Archives & History, and printed in the *American Historical Review*. The petition reflects the growing discontent in pre-revolutionary America.

Although summoned before the Assembly and reprimanded for tampering with elections in 1760, Reuben Searcy was appointed high sheriff of Granville County in 1764, elected clerk of the court in Granville County in 1771, and named to the position "custodian of guns" in 1781.

Probably due to the influence of Henderson family ties to Kentucky, Reuben took his second family there and became prominent in that region also. He finally settled in Tennessee, where he died at the age of sixty-six, which was deemed a "good old age," and is buried near Nashville.

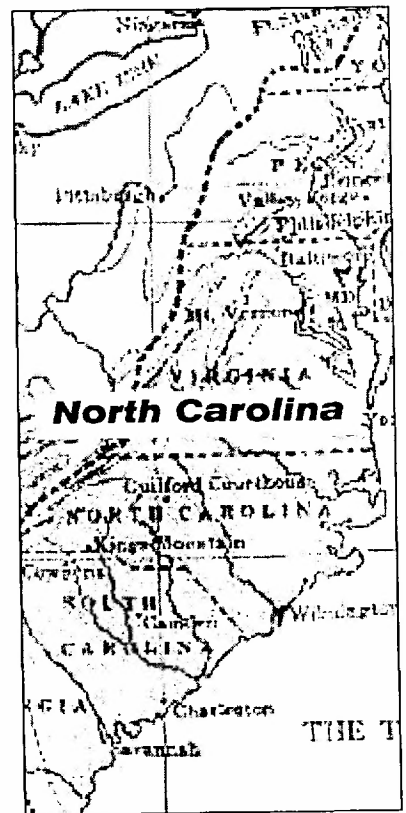
Reuben and Susan's grandson, Reuben II, was born in Chapel Hill, North Carolina, and moved to Tuscaloosa before 1837. He is the ancestor of many Alabama Searcys.

*The NSCDA *Register of Ancestors* lists 1735.

Submitted by Mrs. James Donald Reynolds

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Edgar Parker Bethea, Jr. (Ann Phillips Carr); Birmingham
 Mrs. William John Dannheim (Katherine Searcy Carr); Jacksonville, Florida
 Mrs. William Harold Fisher (Mary Reid Reynolds); Birmingham
 Mrs. James Donald Reynolds (Alice Dearing Derrick); Montgomery
 Mrs. Stephen Lyall Young (Kathleen Johnson Sledge); Cantonment, Florida



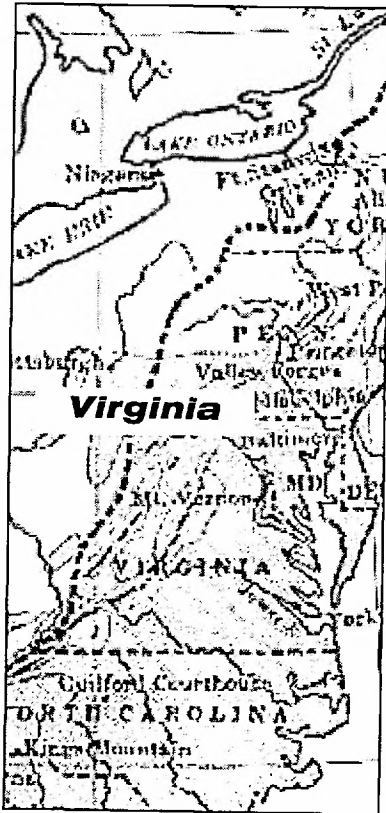
SOURCES:

Colonial Granville County and Its People: Loose Leaves from the Lost Tribes of North Carolina, compiled and edited by Worth S. Ray, published in Baltimore in 1965.

American Historical Review (Volume XXI, number 2), "The Petition of Reuben Searcy and Others," reprinted by Archibald Henderson.

In Grateful Remembrance **FRANCIS SMITH**

1705-1762



SOURCES:

"Genealogy of the Smith Family of Essex County, Virginia," *William and Mary Quarterly* of January 1917, compiled by C. W. Coleman.

Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Volume VII.

Tyler's Quarterly Historical and Genealogical Magazine, Volumes VII and XIV, Lyon G. Tyler, Editor, published in Richmond by The Richmond Press. This publication is available in the Reference Room at the Alabama Department of Archives & History.

The General Assembly of Virginia 1619-1978, A Bicentennial Register of Members, by Cynthia Miller Leonard, published in Richmond by the Library of Virginia in 1978.

Francis Smith was the grandson of Nicholas Smith of Petsworth Parish in Gloucester County, Virginia, and the son of Captain Nicholas Smith of South Farnham Parish in Essex County. The elder Nicholas served his parish as a vestryman in 1697 and as a church warden in 1700. He owned land in South Farnham Parish, which he conveyed to his son, Nicholas II, in 1714.

It was thus in Essex County that Nicholas II lived and raised his family. He served his county as a justice between 1720 and 1730; and as a vestryman for South Farnham in 1739. In a deed dated July 15, 1729, Nicholas II conveyed four hundred acres described as his "dwelling place" to his son Francis Smith.

Following in the footsteps of his father and grandfather, Francis also served as a vestryman and justice. He was a major of the horse in the early 1750s, a colonel in the Essex County militia, and member of the House of Burgesses from 1752-1758.

Francis married first Lucy Meriwether, daughter of Mary Bathurst and Francis Meriwether, in or around 1729. Their children were Mary, Elizabeth and Meriwether. Lucy was living in 1740 but died some time before 1747/48, at which time Francis married Anne Adams, daughter of Tabitha Cocke and Ebenezer Adams. This marriage also produced three children who were named Francis, William and Anne.

In his will, proved March 15, 1762, Francis's carefully detailed estate reveals that he was a man of some means. The will designates by name a total of seventy-five slaves to be distributed among his heirs. Anne was to receive one-half of all his lands in South Farnham County for her lifetime, along with livestock and furnishings. At her death all of her property was to go to her son, Francis. Each son, including Francis, received additional tracts of land. Their father's guns, "Frank's Gun" and "Billy's Gun," went to Francis and William respectively; Meriwether was to have a small gun and "his choice of swords." All of Francis's books were to be divided equally among the boys. The daughters inherited no land, but received a fair share of slaves, furnishings and livestock.

Francis and Lucy Smith's grandson and son of Meriwether, George William Smith (1762-1811), would twice become acting governor of Virginia in 1810. He was elected in his own right in 1811, but he tragically perished in the burning of the Richmond Theater on December 26th of that year.

Submitted by Dr. Joanne Smith T

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Isaac Ripton Britton (Vera Howard Smith T); Birmingham

Dr. Joanne Smith T; Opelika

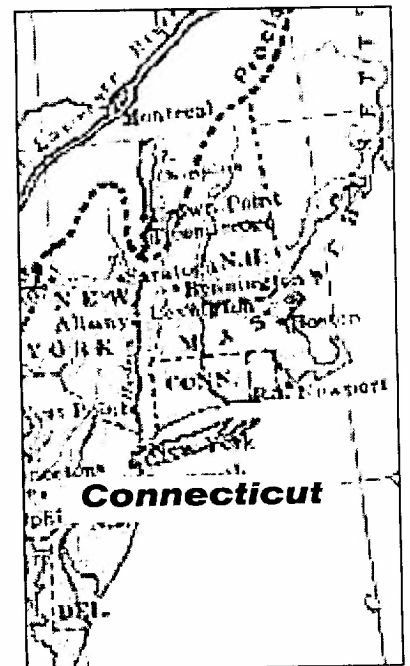
THE REVEREND HENRY SMITH

c.1608-1682

Because of religious persecution in the year 1636, Henry Smith (and family of second wife Dorothy and several children) fled England, after selling the family estate in Wymondham. They arrived at Plymouth (then Watertown), Massachusetts, ultimately establishing themselves in Wethersfield, Connecticut, to become the first "settled" minister of record in that state. Henry had been educated at Cambridge University and ordained by the Archbishop of Canterbury. The Reverend Henry Smith lived in turbulent times and made his mark in colonial America.

A letter written by one of Reverend Henry Smith's sons described his father as a scholarly man of gentle birth and breeding, a persuasive preacher, and a loyal friend. Samuel Smith wrote to his son Ichabod on January 1, 1698/99:

My Revered Father was an ordained Minister of ye Gospelle, educate[d] at Cambridge in England & Came to yis Land by reason of ye Great per-secution by which ye infamous Archbishop Laud and ye Black Tom Tyrante (as Mr. Russell was always wont to call ye Earl of Stratforde) did cause ye reign of his Majestie Charles ye Firste to loose favour in Watertown which is neare Boston, & after a year or two broughte bothe Men Servants & Maid Servants from England.... I so well remember ye Face & Figure of my Honoured Father. He was 5 foote, 10 inches talle & spare of builde, tho not leane. He was as Active as ye Red Skin Men and sinewy. His delighte was in sportes of strength & with his own Hands he did helpe to reare bothe our owne House & ye Firste Meetinge House of Weathersfield, wherein he preacht yeares too fewe. He was well Featured & Fresh Favoured with faire Skin and longe curling Hair (as neare all of us have had) with a merrie eye & swete smilinge Mouthe, tho he coule frowne sternlie eno' when need was... My Mother & Sister did each of em kill more yan one of ye gray Howlers [wolves] & once my oldest Sister shot a Beare yt came too neare ye House. He was a good Fatte onne & kept us all in meate for a good while. I guess one of her Daughters has got ye skinne. As most of ye Wethersfield settlers did come afoot throu ye Wilderness & brought with em such things only as they did most neede at ye firste ye other Things was sent round from Boston in Vessel to come up the River to us. Some of the shippes did come safe to Weathersfield, but many were lost in a grate storm. Amongst em was onne wch held alle our Best Things. A good many Yeares later, long after my Father had died of the grate Fever & my Mother had married Mr. Russell & moved to Hadley, it was found yt some of our Things had been saved & kept in ye Fort wch is by ye River's Mouthe, & they was brought to us. Most of em was spoilt with Sea water and Moulde especially ye Bookes & ye Plate. Of this there was no grate store, only ye Tankard, wch I have, and some spoones divided amongst my sisters, wch was alle so black it was long before any could come to its owne color agen, & Mr. Russell did opine yt had it not been so it might not have founde us agen, but he was sometimes a little shorte of ye Charity wch thinketh no Evil, at ye least I



In Grateful Remembrance

was wont to think so when his Hand was too heavy on my Shoulders & I remembered ye sweetness & ye Charity of my firste Father...

This son, Samuel, was born at Wethersfield in 1639, married Mary Ensign, and settled in Northampton, Massachusetts. Samuel and Mary gave birth to Ebenezer in 1668. Ebenezer, although baptized in Northampton, would make his mark in Suffield, Connecticut, where he became a man of influence in both church and town affairs. The Connecticut colonial records make frequent mention of Ebenezer Smith in connection with matters of the small New England town. In 1693, at age twenty-five, Ebenezer married Sarah Barlow Huxley, with whom he had nine children, among them Ebenezer Smith Jr., born in 1699 at Suffield.

In 1725, Ebenezer Smith Jr. married a girl also from Suffield, Christian Owen. Two years later, their son Jadediah was born. Jade graduated Yale in 1750 and became an ordained Presbyterian minister in Granville, Massachusetts. He served the church there from 1756 to 1776. However, as Jadediah was a Loyalist who refused to fight against the king, nor against his kin, most of whom were ardent patriots, his congregation dismissed him. He fled with his family from New England, arriving on September 2, 1776 in Natchez, Mississippi. A brother, Elnathan, had preceded Jade to Mississippi and had found considerable success there; unfortunately, Elnathan died shortly before Jade's arrival in Natchez. Jadediah himself died a week after he reached the prosperous Mississippi river city. Jadediah's wife and ten children, plus Elnathan's wife, Hannah Bates, and her children, were left without their husbands and fathers.

The eldest daughter of Elnathan and Hannah Smith was Edith, born in Granville, Massachusetts in 1767. At nine years of age, Edith was uprooted from the relative tranquility and civilization of New England and made to take the journey to Natchez, which was on the frontier of America. She suffered much hardship, but survived and grew to maturity. In 1789, she married John Christian Buhler, of the parish of East Baton Rouge, Louisiana. Edith outlived Buhler and married Richard Devall in 1800.

The Devalls were originally from France, and were expelled at the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. (See Glossary: Edict of Nantes.) They went to London and became merchants. Richard Devall was born in 1754 and arrived in America from Liverpool, England in 1775, in a party of young men sent out by a company to buy land and settle in Louisiana. They were all well-educated men of good standing. A widower when he married Edith Smith, Richard Devall would eventually own a large part of Baton Rouge, and to this day, the center of Baton Rouge is called Devall Town. Richard and Edith Devall had eight children.

Submitted by Mrs. Henry Guy Folmar, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Henry Guy Folmar, Jr. (Ada Dowdell Wright); Auburn

SOURCES:

Colonial Days and Ways, by Helen Everston Smith, published in New York by Century Company in 1900.

Connecticut Colonial Records, by the University of Connecticut.

<http://www.colonialct.uconn.edu/>

Documentary History of Yale University under the Original Charter of the Collegiate School of Connecticut, 1701-1745, by Franklin Bowditch Dexter, published in Washington, D. C. by the American Historical Association.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

LAWRENCE SMITH

1629-1700

Lawrence Smith was born in Stoneyhurst, Burnley Parish, Lancashire, England, on March 29, 1629, the son of Christopher Smith and Mary Townley. From his coat-of-arms, Lawrence Smith appears to have belonged to the Smiths of Totne, County Devon, England.

His first marriage was to Mary Hitchon in Lancashire, England, in September of 1651. They had a daughter, Mary, born in 1652. Mother and daughter both died before Lawrence Smith immigrated to Virginia. A second marriage to Mary Debnam resulted in ten children: Sarah, Elizabeth, Lawrence II, John, William, Augustine Warner, Augustine, Charles, one whose name is not known, and a second Charles. All grew to maturity, married and had children of their own.

Although it is not known exactly when he came to America, he was a resident of Gloucester County, Virginia, by 1674, and present at

a grand assembly, held at James City between the 30th of September, 1674, and the 17th of March, 1675, in which war was declared against the Indians, among other provisions for carrying it out, it was ordered that 111 men out of Gloucester County be garrisoned at one fort, or place of defense, at or near the falls of the Rappahannock River, of which fort Major Lawrence Smith to be Captain or Chief Commandant, and that the fort be supplied with 480 pounds of powder and 1,443 pounds of shot.

In 1679, as commander-in-chief of Gloucester County, Major Lawrence Smith was empowered,

provided he would 'seate' down at, or near, said fort by the last day of March, 1681, and have in readiness, upon all occasions, at beat of drum, fifty able-bodied men, well armed with sufficient ammunition, etc., and two hundred men more, within the space of a mile along the river, and a quarter of a mile back from the river, prepared always to march twenty miles in every direction from the fort,

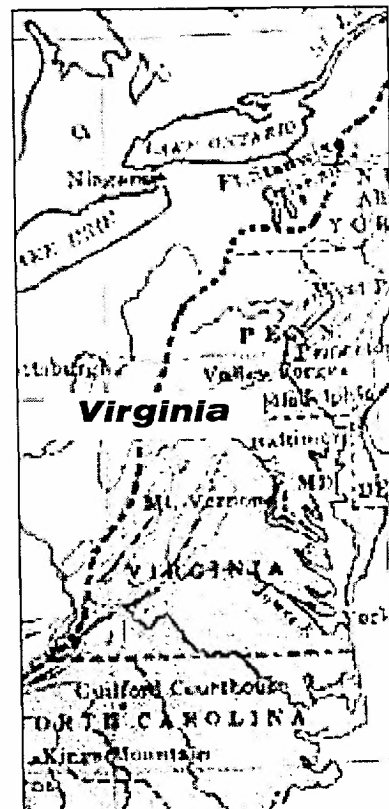
to execute martial discipline among the said fifty soldiers, and others, both in times of war and peace; and said Major Lawrence Smith, with two others, was to hear and determine all causes, civil and criminal, that may arise within said limits, as a county court might do, and make by-laws for the same.

In Bacon's Rebellion he sided with Governor Berkeley (See Glossary: Bacon's Rebellion). He was surveyor for the counties of Gloucester and York in 1686, and in 1691 laid out Yorktown. Major Smith served in the House of Burgesses for Gloucester County from 1691 through 1692 (one source states 1688). In 1699 the governor recommended him as "gentlemen of estate and standing," and eligible for appointment to the King's Council, but his death in 1700 prevented the bestowal of this honor upon him.

Submitted by Mrs. John Marshall Morrisette, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. John Marshall Morrisette, Jr. (Sarah Tonsmeire); Mobile



SOURCES:

Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography, Volume I, by Leon G. Tyler, published in New York by Lewis History Publishing Company in 1915. Reprinted in 1998 by Genealogical Publishing Company and also available as a compact disc.

Torrence and Allied Families, by Robert McIlwaine, published in Philadelphia by Wickersham Press in 1938.

<http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~mysouthernfamily/myff/d0009/g0000056.html>

In Grateful Remembrance **THOMAS SMITH**

1648-1694

The political turmoil in England surrounding Charles II's return to the throne in 1660 caused the monarch to investigate ways to restore order. The chancellor and prime minister, Lord Clarendon, and many others of the king's council encouraged emigration to America as a remedy, with gifts of land as a reward those who followed these suggestions. As a recipient of such lands, Lord Anthony Cooper had his young secretary, John Locke, design a code of government for the new settlements in America. The result was a unique document in 1669 creating the title of *Landgrave* to signify a colonial title of nobility. (See Glossary: Grand Model, Landgrave.)

The first Landgrave Thomas Smith in South Carolina was a cousin of the Duke of Albemarle and of the Earl of Bath, both of whom were lord proprietors and secured a place for Smith and his family in South Carolina. Due to past political activity, Thomas had found himself somewhat unpopular in England and was ready to make a place for himself in the New World. One of the first settlements under the new order was called *Goose Creek*, which was located on land between the Ashley and Cooper rivers, so named because of the shape of the little winding stream that almost joined the two rivers. This place was to become the home of Smiths for generations.

Thomas Smith was the son of John Thomas Smith and Joan Atkins, and was born in 1648 in England. He married Barbara Atkins, who was Joan's step-daughter by a previous marriage, and they had two sons, Thomas and George. Accounts differ as to when the Smith family came to South Carolina. Both are included in this essay and readers may do further research to determine an exact date.

The Olden Times of Carolina states that Thomas and Barbara Smith arrived in Charles Town (later Charleston, South Carolina) in 1671, bringing with them a son, in addition to Barbara's mother, Thomas's brother James, two of Barbara's sisters, plus two serving girls and several men servants. This account states that the son, Thomas, was born in England in 1670 and so dubbed the "Little Englishman," and that a second son, George, was born in America in 1672 and was known as the "Little American." This makes a wonderful story, reflecting a ray of colonial humor, but it is also documented by land records showing that the brothers Thomas and James received lots #41 and #57 in Charles Town in 1672. Thomas bought the lot given to his brother and built his home on the northeast corner of Bay and Longitude and remained in Charles Town to build up the "bacon and rice aristocracy," while James moved to Boston to make his entry into the "codfish aristocracy."

Our Family Circle records that Thomas was sent from England in 1681 to occupy his Back River home, *Medway*, in 1682. This is not likely the case, as Barbara died in 1686, and Thomas married Sabina de Vigon on March 22, 1687. She was the widow of Jan van D'Arsens, the Dutch nobleman who built *Medway* after leading a group of Hollanders to the Carolinas. Sabina died in 1689 and was buried from the house, which she and Thomas occupied at the time, at an unknown site beside her first husband.

By 1690, Thomas Smith had become a *cassique* (the forerunner of a landgrave) and, in a patent dated 1691, he was named landgrave with four baronies of forty-eight thousand acres of land granted to him. By 1692, he was a member of the Grand Council, and he was appointed governor and commander-in-chief of South Carolina by the lords proprietors in 1693. He was also high sheriff of Berkeley County that same year.

Landgrave Smith is credited with the idea of drawing names of jurors indiscriminately from a box, and is also credited with planting the first rice grown in this country. Seeds from a bag of rice given him by the captain of a ship just arrived from Madagascar were planted in his



Biographies of Our Ancestors

city garden in Charles Town. Rice ultimately became the major source of wealth in the Carolina low country.

Landgrave Thomas Smith died at *Medway* in 1694 and was buried in the family plot. The grave marker is near the ancient home that still stands, about twenty miles from Charleston. Within a brick wall can be found a stone slab with the inscription:

Here Lieth Ye Body of the Right Honorable Thomas Smith Esq.

One of Ye Landgraves of Carolinas who departed this life

Ye 16th of November, 1694

Governor of the Province in Ye 40 year of his age

According to an article written in the *Sunday News of Charleston* in 1898, "Thomas Smith was not a mere adventurer, but came to take possession of large estates which he had purchased, and he brought with him ample means to improve them upon his arrival." In a paper written by Mrs. Gertrude Legendre, the owner of *Medway*, we learn that "Landgrave Smith was one of those early settlers who rapidly increased his acreage, wealth and fame. 'Sabina was a catch and helped to make Smith one of the rich men in the Province. She brought him, from her first husband, the claim to a barony of land, a plantation, and a brick house on the Medway River.'"

The eldest son, Thomas, who was born and later educated, in England, received both the title of landgrave and his father's estates by virtue of the Law of Entail. He married Mary Hyrne and produced ten children with her. George, the younger son, became a physician in 1700. After studying medicine in Scotland, he returned to Charles Town and married Dorothy Archar.

Three generations later, George's great-granddaughter, Edith Smith, married Thomas' great-grandson, Thomas Smith of Westoe. Obviously, the two families remained very close over those many years.

Submitted by Mrs. Mrs. William Jordan Gamble, Mrs. Palmer Clarkson Hamilton and Mrs. Marvin Mostellar, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Cecil Edward Bamberg, Jr. (Elizabeth Berrien Pitts); Birmingham
 Dr. Belle Sumpter Miller Carmichael (Belle Sumpter Miller); Birmingham
 Mrs. James Vickers Courtney (Kate Baldwin Gamble); Mobile
 Mrs. William Jordan Gamble (Jean Perry Soule); Selma
 Mrs. Palmer Clarkson Hamilton (Amy Ross St. John); Mobile
 Miss Anne Gayler Miller; Birmingham
 Mrs. Marvin Mostellar, Jr. (Virginia Anne Suffich); Fairhope
 Mrs. William Jerome Pitts (Ruth Berrien Carpenter); Birmingham
 Mrs. Jefferson Goode Ratchliffe (Bessie Bradshaw Smith); Selma
 Mrs. Caroline Smith-Kenan; (Fredrica Caroline Smith); Birmingham
 Mrs. William Gordon Thames, Jr. (Mary Owen Kenan); Tallahassee, Florida
 Mrs. Charles Stakeley Willcox, Jr. (Julia Lillian Kenan); Birmingham
 Mrs. Perry Michael Yancey (Mary Moseley Gamble); Birmingham

SOURCES:

The Olden Times of Carolina by "The Octogenarian Lady of Charleston," published in Charleston in 1885.

Ancestral Records and Portraits, A Compilation from the Archives of Chapter I, Volume I, by The Colonial Dames of America, Washington, D.C.

Sunday News of Charleston, July 10, 1898.

Medway Plantation, a paper written in 1970 by Gertrude S. Legendre.

Our Family Circle by Anne Elizabeth Miller, published by J. W. Burke Company in Macon, Georgia in 1931.

The Descendants of Thomas, First Landgrave Smith of South Carolina by Barnwell R. Heyward in 1902.

Biographical Directory of the South Carolina House of Representatives, Volume 2, by the University of South Carolina Press in Columbia.

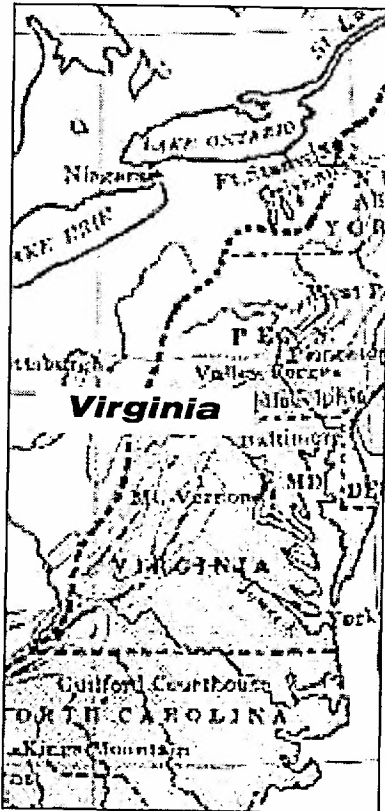
Historic Goose Creek, South Carolina, 1670-1980 by Michael J. Heizler in 1983.

Genealogies of Black, Yates, Poyas, Smith, Hyrne, Bealer, Legarc, Burrows, Ward, Air and Mikell Families-A Compilation of Family Data by Sam B. St. John of Mobile, Alabama in 1991.

McCrary's Carolina under Proprietors by the Colonial History Society of South Carolina in 1957.

1676-1740

Lieutenant Governor Spotswood was one of the first colonists to realize the value of opening up the west. In 1716, he and a "merry band of men" crossed over the Blue Ridge Mountains and explored the area. They traveled for four weeks and for a distance of almost five hundred miles. One of the members of the party, John Fontaine, kept a journal and records that Spotswood claimed the Shenandoah Valley in the name of the English king (Queen Anne having died in 1714). This declaration was followed by a festive celebration in which toasts were drunk to every member of the royal family. After their return to Williamsburg, Lieutenant Governor Spotswood presented a miniature golden horseshoe to each member of his excursion with the inscription, *Sic juvat transcendere montes* ("Thus it is a pleasure to cross the mountains") and he gave them the title of Knights of the Golden Horseshoe. This historic episode was the subject of a romantic novel written in 1845 by William Alexander Carruthers, entitled *The Knights of the Horse-Shoe: a Traditionary Tale of the Cocked Hat Gentry in the Old Dominion*.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Also in 1716, Spotswood established the first iron foundry in the Virginia colony at Germanna in Spotsylvania, a county that he had named for himself. In 1718, he commissioned two small ships to seek and destroy the pirate, Edward Teach, or Thatch, also known as Blackbeard. The governor's men killed Blackbeard in hand-to-hand combat on the ships and brought his men as prisoners back to Williamsburg.

Alexander Spotswood was replaced as governor in 1722, probably because of his tendency to interfere in church affairs in the colonies. The Bishop of London's representative, James Blair, was perhaps more powerful than even the governor, and they frequently clashed. Spotswood returned to England, and in 1724 married Anne Butler Brayne. They had four children: John, Anne Catherine (ancestor of Robert E. Lee), Dorothea and Robert.

The family returned to Virginia in 1729 and lived in Germanna in a home known as *Enchanted Castle*. By this time, Spotswood owned three iron foundries. He served as deputy postmaster general from 1730 to 1739, and hired a young Benjamin Franklin to manage the post office in Philadelphia.

Ever the soldier, Spotswood enlisted to fight for Britain against Spain in 1739 and was given the rank of brigadier general. He died on June 7, 1740, after a brief illness in Annapolis, where he had gone to embark on his last campaign. His grave is thought to be near Yorktown, but no tombstone has been found.

His son, John Spotswood, married Mary West Dandridge, a cousin of Martha Washington. His daughter, Dorothea, married Mary Dandridge's brother, Nathaniel West Dandridge. John Spotswood served in the House of Burgesses in Williamsburg. Both Alexander and John Spotswood are listed in the *NSCDA Register of Ancestors*.

A portrait of Alexander Spotswood hangs in the Governor's Palace in Williamsburg, and a portrait of him and one of his wife, Anne Butler Brayne, are in the Library of Virginia in Richmond.

Submitted by Mrs. Edward Morris Streit, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Frederick Marion Holt (Amy Coblentz Wilson); Florence
Mrs. Edward Morris Streit, Jr. (Eleanor Allen Gage); Tuscaloosa

SOURCES:

Alexander Spotswood, Portrait of a Governor, by Walter Havinghurst, published in Williamsburg, Virginia by Colonial Williamsburg in 1968.

Alexander Spotswood, Governor of Colonial Virginia 1710-1722, by Leonidas Dodson, published in Philadelphia by University of Pennsylvania Press in 1932.

In Grateful Remembrance **JOHN STILLWELL**

c.1663-1725



The progenitor of the Stillwells in America was Nicholas Stillwell, who first appeared in Virginia in 1639 and died in 1671 on Staten Island, New York. In the first half of the seventeenth century, New York was nothing more than a wilderness with a few Dutch settlers and the peril of attack by Indians. It was on the fertile and easily cleared ground of Staten Island that Nicholas Stillwell first patented land in New York.

Captain Richard Stillwell, son of Nicholas, was born between 1632-1638 and died 1688/89. He married Mary Cooke, who was the daughter of John Cooke, Esquire and magistrate of Gravesend, Long Island. Their son, John Stillwell, was born about 1663, as his name appears in the Staten Island census of 1706 as aged forty-three years.

Like his father and grandfather before him, John held a high place in his community and was known to be a distinguished and highly creditable man. He married first Elizabeth, who may have been the daughter of James Hubbard of Gravesend. It is not clear if any of his children were from this marriage, as Elizabeth died, and John married Rebecca Throckmorton, daughter of John Throckmorton of Middleton, New Jersey (see entry: John Throckmorton). Rebecca brought a landed estate to their marriage, and was the mother of at least six of John's eight children, if not all of them. The children's names are listed in John Stillwell's will as Richard, Thomas, John Joseph, Daniel, Rebecca, Mary and Alice.

John Stillwell was the owner of a considerable estate on Staten Island and played an important role in the affairs of his community and his colony. From 1692-1698 he was as high sheriff of Richmond County, commissioned by Governor Fletcher. He was also a captain in one of the two companies of foot militia in Richmond County and a justice of Staten Island in 1703 and 1707-1709. From 1702 until his death in 1725, John Stillwell served in the Colonial Assembly from Richmond County, and was one of those who signed an address to King William III regarding colonial issues of the time.

Submitted by Mrs. John Randolph Conover

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. John Randolph Conover (Marion Winter Thorington); Huntsville

SOURCE:

*The History of Captain Richard Stillwell,
Son of Lieutenant Nicholas Stillwell* by
John E. Stillwell, published privately
in New York in 1930.

Biographies of Our Ancestors
JOHN STONE

1648-1698

John Stone was part of the first generation of the Stones of Poynton Manor born in America. While he was not a governor, like his father and his great-grandson, he was representative of the many Stones that were to follow him. Every generation was active in government on some level, whether it was as a representative in the assembly, as was John Stone, or just a justice of the peace or county commissioner. One even served as coroner. Regardless of the position, the Stones of Poynton Manor were very active in the colonial period. This began in 1628 with William Stone.

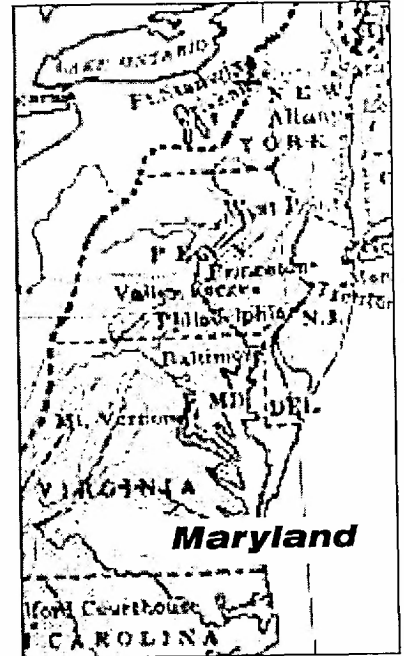
William Stone was born in 1603 in England and married Verlinda Cotton. They migrated to Virginia in 1628, where he served in the House of Burgesses. In 1648, William Stone was appointed as the third proprietary governor of Maryland, thus moved his family to the land he was given in Charles County that became Poynton Manor. It remained in the family for nearly 250 years, until 1891.

Governor Stone was appointed by Lord Calvert because he was a Protestant, and also probably because he was going to bring hundreds of settlers with him from Virginia to Maryland. He governed for six years, then the Puritans began to take control of the government and pass laws to restrict religious freedoms. Governor William Stone decided to fight back.

In 1655, he led a greatly outnumbered group of soldiers against the Puritans at the Battle of Severn. This marks the first time Americans fought each other on American soil, and foreshadowed things to come. The Puritans prevailed, and the wounded Governor Stone was held captive and ordered killed. He was later released with the help of some Puritan friends. Even though the Puritans won the battle, they did not stay in command, as Oliver Cromwell, the ruler of the Puritan Party of England, thought the Puritans had gone too far in restricting religious freedom. On Cromwell's word, the Toleration Act (which granted religious freedom) was restored, and the Puritan domination of Maryland ended. Even though Governor Stone was released, he did not return to power. He died a few years later in 1660.

John Stone kept the tradition of being active in government alive, though it would be a few more generations before another Stone became governor. John held numerous offices in Charles County, from gentleman justice of the quorum in 1670 to commissioner of the peace in 1687, and he also represented the county for ten years in the General Assembly from 1678 through 1688. He was a member of the commission to regulate trade in the province and, in 1689, he was on a committee to regulate civil affairs in Charles County. John Stone also held the office of coroner of Charles County in 1678.

John Stone apparently married three times. The first wife was Elizabeth, possibly the daughter of Thomas Warren. John and Elizabeth had two sons, Thomas and John. Another son, Matthew, was probably by a second marriage. From the third wife, Eleanor Bayne, came Walter, Eleanor, and Elizabeth.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

The Stones of Poynton Manor, by Harry Wright Newman, published in Washington, D.C. by the author in 1937.

History of the United States of America, by Henry William Elson, published in New York by The MacMillan Company in 1904.

Exploring Maryland's Roots, accessed on March 27, 2007, at:

<http://mdroots.thinkport.org/librar/williamverlindastone.asp>

In his will, dated September 17, 1697, John Stone named Eleanor and Thomas as executors. He left Thomas and Walter a five- hundred-acre portion of *Poynton Manor*, along with eighty acres of the adjoining *St. John's*. Matthew and John received the five- hundred-acre plantation called *Mangawoman*, and Eleanor and Elizabeth were given the four-hundred-acre *Durwin*.

John Stone died in 1698.

*Submitted by Mr. Sidney Glenn Daniel III, in honor of his grandmother,
Mrs. Sidney Glenn Daniel*

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. George Erel Elliott II (Gladys McNeel Stephens); Selma

Mrs. James Newton Hughes (Martha Shorter Stephens); Selma

THE REVEREND SAMUEL STOW

1623/4-1704

Samuel Stow was born on February 8, 1623 or 1624 in Biddenden, County of Kent, England. With his parents, John and Elizabeth Bigg Stow, his five siblings, and his maternal grandmother, he sailed from England on the ship *Elizabeth* on April 9, 1634. The family arrived in New England on May 17, and settled in Roxbury, Connecticut. Samuel graduated from Harvard University in 1645, and, probably in the same year, married Hope Fletcher of Chelmsford, Massachusetts. There were seven children of this marriage. Their names, as listed in his will, are John, Samuel, Ichabod, Israhiah, Rachael, Elizabeth, and Margaret.

In 1653, he moved to Middletown, Connecticut, where he was the first, and for many years, the only minister (Congregational), but as no church was then organized, he was never ordained. In his obituary, reference is made to the "excitement caused by the ecclesiastical controversy at Hartford." No explanation of the controversy was given, but Samuel Stow was somehow involved. As a result of this incident, on November 9, 1659 the general court chose a committee "to goe down to Middle Town, to inquire ye nature of ye troublesome difference fallen out there, and to endeavor a composition thereof." But, "there appearing such unsutablenes [*sic*] in their spirits," the court, on October 4, 1660, determined that the town should have "free liberty to provide for themselves another... minister." In "ye mean time," the town should give Stow "his usual stipend, he continuing the exercise of his ministry as formerly." On March 14, 1660, the general court, "having heard and considered the difference betwixt ye Town of Middle Town and Mr. Stow... doe judge and determine that ye people of Middle Town are free from Mr. Stow as their engaged minister." The court also said, however, that he must be given "Letters Testimonial," that he "is not infringed of his liberty to preach in the town," and that he be "paid for his labour in ye ministry the year past (forty pounds sterling)" by April 10.

In 1681, he was invited to preach at Simsbury, Connecticut. In May, 1682, there was addressed to the general court a "Humble Motion of Simsbury Men" who, having "knowledge and tryall of Mr. Stow in ye labours of ye word and doctrine of ye Gospel," asked that Stow continue as a "Pastor and Watchman over our soules." They wanted him to be a "teaching minister," however, and he declined, but agreed to serve out his contracted time. He then relinquished the profession and returned to Middletown, where he was a "retired and highly respected citizen until his death."

In a letter to Nathaniel Higginson (Harvard 1671), dated November 16, 1705, Judge Samuel Seawell wrote, "The Reverend Mr. Samuel Stow of Middletown went from thence to Heaven upon the 8th of May 1704, being eighty-two years old."

Submitted by Miss Mary Amante Cook

DESCENDANTS:

Miss Mary Amante Cook; Mobile

Mrs. Marion Strickler Adams Jr. (Ann Dumas Greer); Mobile

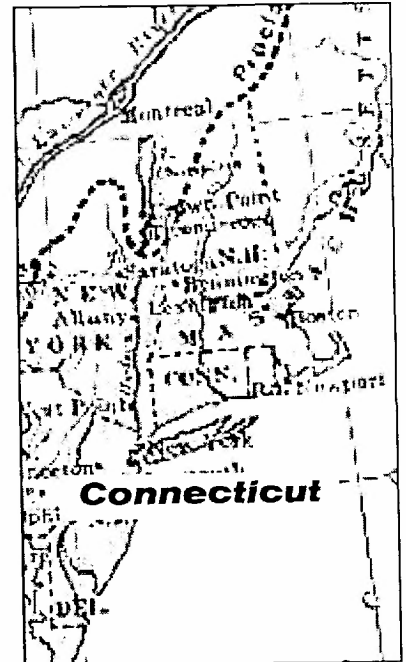
Mrs. Robert Lister Crosby (Nedra Toulmin Stimpson); Greenville

Dr. Eugenie Lambert Hamner (Maude Eugenie Lambert); Mobile

Mrs. Seldon Harbour Stephens III (Lilly Greer Stimpson); Mobile

Mrs. Benjamin Charles Stimpson (Nedra Toulmin Greer); Mobile

Mrs. John McDuffie Turner, Jr. (Mary White-Spunner Stimpson); New Orleans, Louisiana



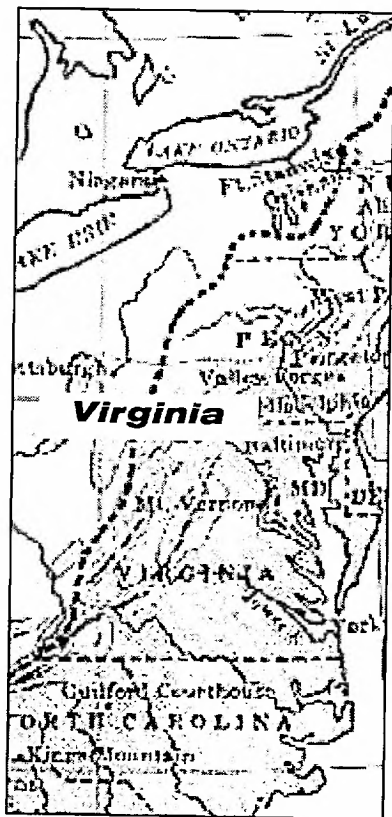
SOURCES:

Biographical Sketches of Graduates of Harvard University in Cambridge, Massachusetts, by John Langdon Sibley, published in Cambridge by Charles William Sever, University Bookstore, in 1873.

A Digest of Early Connecticut Probate Records, Volume II, Hartford District 1700-1729, compiled by Charles William Manwaring, published in Hartford, CT, by R.S. Peck and Company in 1904.

In Grateful Remembrance **JOHN STUART**

1749-1823



John Stuart is generally referred to as the "Father of Greenbrier County," Virginia (now West Virginia). He was born in 1749 in Augusta County, Virginia near Staunton, son of David and Margaret Lynn Stuart. Colonel Stuart was described as a "wirey, dark-eyed Scotchman, of more than ordinary cultivation, a fearless hunter, and a brave soldier."

During Stuart's boyhood, he heard tales of the wilderness beyond the western mountains of Virginia and was intrigued by the descriptions of excellent hunting, abundant resources, and beauty. In 1767, at the age of eighteen, he and a friend, Robert McClanahan, set out to explore the area, arriving in the Frankford region of Greenbrier. Upon returning to Augusta County, his enthusiasm for the land led him to begin acquiring it. He returned to the Greenbrier area in 1769, and, since the most urgent need at that time was for a gristmill, Stuart built the first one in the area. He demonstrated ingenuity in its erection by building it at the entrance to a cave, then channeling the water from an underground stream directly to the mill. The cave also served as a natural refrigerator, keeping the temperature even in spite of the heat at the cave's entrance. Today, the site is commemorated as the location of the early settlement and mill with a marker.

In 1771 Stuart moved to what is now Lewisburg, West Virginia, where he put up a stockade at Fort Spring, the only fort in the area, which served as a haven for settlers during Indian raids. Once again there was need for a gristmill, so Stuart built one, which his miller operated for over forty consecutive years. He was a commander in the Battle of Point Pleasant and engaged in numerous skirmishes with the Indians. He also conducted surveys for George Washington along the Kanawha River. Stuart served as the Greenbrier county clerk for twenty-seven years and was one of Lewisburg's first trustees. He erected the first stone house in the area in 1789, known as *Stuart Manor*, which remains in the family.

In 1776, John Stuart married Agatha Lewis Frogg, who was the widow of Lieutenant John Frogg, daughter of Thomas Lewis and Jane Strother, and granddaughter of John Lewis and Margaret Lynn Lewis of Staunton, Virginia. An interesting story about Agatha Stuart concerns the death of her first husband, John Frogg, who was killed by Indians at the Battle of Point Pleasant. Their daughter awakened the night of October 10, 1774, screaming that the Indians were killing her father. Her mother quieted her and the child went back to sleep, but awakened again, screaming. When this occurred a third time, Mrs. Frogg called the neighbors, who were also alarmed. Several days later they received word that Lieutenant Frogg had been killed as the daughter had dreamed.

Stuart was prominent in political affairs and was elected to the Virginia Convention of 1788 to consider ratification of the proposed federal constitution. The convention was composed of many prominent and intellectual men, including George Mason, Patrick Henry, George Wythe, James Monroe, and Richard Henry Lee. Some of the members were strongly opposed to the constitution and debated heatedly against its ratification. Stuart was a strong proponent of ratification and strategized with John Marshall, later chief justice of the supreme court, to combat the opposing forces led by John Patrick. The family has in its possession a letter, one of several, from John Marshall concerning these plans.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

Stuart was known for his scholarship, owned an extensive library, and was a member of the American Philosophical Society. He exchanged letters with a fellow member, Thomas Jefferson, concerning the bones of prehistoric animals that were found on his property. Stuart also wrote the first history of Greenbrier County, *Memoir of Indian Wars and Other Occurrences*, published in 1832. It is described as the only account of events in the early days of Greenbrier County and has been used by historians as principal source material. He was a religious leader who organized the first Presbyterian congregation and donated the land upon which the first church, the Old Stone Presbyterian Church, was built. The church remains active in Lewisburg.

Due to Stuart's leadership, he was able to attract superior men to settle the area, thus providing Greenbrier with a proud legacy. John Stuart died August 18, 1823 and is buried on the grounds of *Stuart Manor*. His tombstone and that of his wife, Agatha, are in the family graveyard in Lewisburg, West Virginia.

Submitted by Mrs. Bibb Coleman Beale Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Bibb Coleman Beale Jr. (Elizabeth Adams-Price Wood); Montgomery

SOURCES:

Greenbrier Pioneers and Their Homes, by
R.W. Drayton, published in
Charleston, WVA, by West Virginia
Publishing Company in 1942.

Lewisburg Landmarks, by R.W.
Drayton, published in Charleston,
WVA, by Education Foundation, Inc.
in 1957.

In Grateful Remembrance **PHILIP SYNG JR.**

1703-1789

Philadelphia silversmith Philip Syng Jr. was born in Ireland on September 29, 1703. An eleven-year-old Philip arrived in Philadelphia with his parents, Philip Syng Sr. and Abigail Murdock Syng, and younger brothers, John and Daniel, in the fall of 1714. After serving as apprentice to his silversmith father, young Philip became one of the most accomplished artisans in the American colonies and a leader in the development of eighteenth century Philadelphia. On February 5, 1729, Philip Syng married Elizabeth Warner. They eventually had eighteen children.

Many aspects of the life of Philip Syng paralleled those of his close friend and associate, Benjamin Franklin. Both arrived in Philadelphia as young men learning their professions. Each traveled to London to buy tools of their trade and embarked for Philadelphia one month apart. In 1726, Philip opened a shop on South Front Street, "seven doors below the coffee house," on Front Street. Franklin had a printing shop on Market Street by 1727.

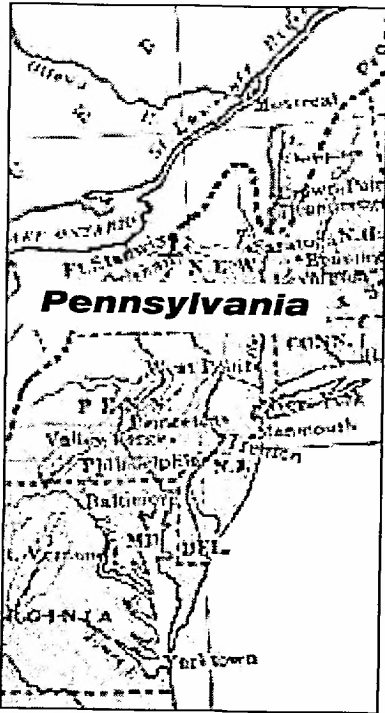
In that same year, 1727, Benjamin Franklin, Philip Syng, and ten other tradesmen would establish The Junto, a secret society for "self-improvement, study, mutual aid, and conviviality." Franklin and Syng took leading roles within this organization, which played a fundamental role in the development of Philadelphia's major civic institutions and positioned Philadelphia as the leading city in the American colonies. As leaders of The Junto, they set the stage for the establishment of America's tradition of volunteerism and citizens themselves addressing their own needs and seeking solutions by joining together.

The first of many institutions to originate in The Junto was the library of Philadelphia in 1731. Philip Syng served as a director and produced a seal and bookplate for the company that are still in use today. In 1736 Franklin and Syng established the Union Fire Company, the first one in America. They served as directors, lent money for the purchase of equipment, attended company meetings, and were active firefighters.

Apart from his activities with The Junto to improve city life in Philadelphia, Syng served as city assessor, warden of the port, provincial commissioner of appeals, and city treasurer. He oversaw the town watch, the maintenance of city lighting and fire hydrants, and helped to measure and install milestones on the road from Philadelphia to Trenton, New Jersey.

When Benjamin Franklin invented his famous stove in an attempt to create a more efficient fireplace in 1741, it was Philip Syng who created the first patterns for it. Syng also joined with Franklin in the 1743 formation of The Philosophical Society and was its first treasurer, then became the first treasurer of The American Philosophical Society when the two organizations merged.

Beginning what came to be known as "The Philadelphia Experiments" in 1746, Benjamin Franklin, Philip Syng, Thomas Hopkinson, and Ebenezer Kinnersley began experimenting with electricity and reporting their findings to Peter and Michael Collinson in London. Philip Syng made a hand-cranked generator that was used for the experiments. Syng also made an electric motor, which turned a small windmill with cardboard arms, and contributed to the discussions that established the principles and terms used to describe the properties of electricity. Franklin's reports were first published in England after their presentation to the Royal Society in 1751. A sensation was created in Paris when Thomas Francois D'Alibard published Franklin's papers in 1752. At Franklin's insistence, the fourth edition mentions his colleagues in Philadelphia.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

During the French and Indian War in 1747, Philip Syng helped Benjamin Franklin promote, organize, and fund the colony's first volunteer armed force, The Associators, and The Associators' Battery, south of the city. The Associators quickly raised a force of ten thousand men and became recognized as the foundation of the Pennsylvania National Guard and the Army's 111th Infantry Regiment and the 103rd Engineers.

In 1750, Philip Syng, Benjamin Franklin, and Thomas Hopkinson met as trustees to establish the College and Academy of Philadelphia. Their charter is recognized as the origin of the University of Pennsylvania. The "academy bell" that Franklin and Syng had made to sound fire alarms and call scholars to class is presently displayed in the University's Van Pelt/Dietrich Library.

In 1751, along with Thomas Bond and Benjamin Franklin, Philip Syng was a financial supporter of and named a trustee of The Pennsylvania Hospital. Syng's grandsons, Dr. Philip Syng, Physick, known as the "father of American surgery," and Dr. John Syng Dorsey, were later to play important roles at this, America's first hospital.

In 1752, appointed by the Union Fire Company to establish an insurance company, Franklin and Syng instituted the Philadelphia Contributorship for the Insurance of Houses from Loss by Fire. Philip Syng served as a director, created the company seal, and its hand-in-hand watermark.

Coinciding with the making of the Pennsylvania State House bell in 1752, Philip Syng was commissioned to produce a silver inkstand for the State House Speaker's desk. This inkstand became one of the most important metalwork made in America: used by Benjamin Franklin and others to sign the Declaration of Independence in 1776 and the United States Constitution in 1787, it is today the symbol of Independence National Park in Philadelphia.

Already appointed executor of Benjamin Franklin's original will of 1750, Philip Syng was entrusted with the funds for the construction of Franklin's new house to take place while Franklin was in London serving as Agent of Pennsylvania in 1764. During that same year, in an effort to end the proprietary privileges of a royal government, Syng distributed petitions and visited "all the houses in Town." The following year, in response to the Stamp Act, Syng signed the Non-Importation Agreement to boycott English goods. In 1779, he signed the Test Act.

Philip Syng holds membership number eleven in the Schuylkill Club, the oldest formally organized club in the English-speaking world. He was a vestryman at Christ Church in Philadelphia from 1747 to 1749, and was interred in its burial ground on May 8, 1789.

Submitted by Mrs. David Shaphard Marks III and Mrs. Richard Lamar Jeffers III

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Richard Lamar Jeffers III (Carolyn Stephenson); Mobile
Mrs. David Shaphard Marks III (Bess Bailey Stephenson); Mobile
Mrs. Donald Meador Troiano (Margaret Bradford Stephenson); Mobile

SOURCES:

Syng of Philadelphia Tercentenary
Committee, Sub-Committee of
Physick Committee, Philadelphia
Society for the Preservation of
Landmarks, J. Del Connor, Chair.

In Grateful Remembrance
MATTHEW TALBOT

1699-1758

Matthew Talbot was born on September 26, 1699 in Wiltshire, England. One history states that he was the third son of the tenth Earl of Shrewsbury, but another says he was the grandson of the Earl. The earldom, created in 1442, is the oldest in the British peerage: the first Earl of Shrewsbury, Sir John Talbot, was born in 1390 and led the English army against Joan of Arc. He is in Shakespeare's *King Henry VI*: "Is this the Talbot so much feared abroad, that with his name the mothers still their babies?" (Act II, Scene 3); and "Here, said they, is the terror of the French, the scarecrow that affrights our children so" (Act III, Scene 4).

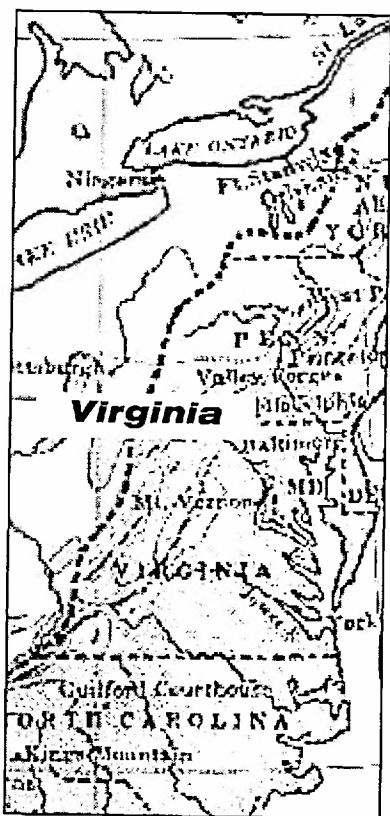
Matthew Talbot was descended from Alfred the Great, Charlemagne, William the Conqueror, the Howards, Dukes of Norfolk, and several Magna Carta Sureties. However, when he inherited the title of the fourteenth Earl of Shrewsbury, he refused it, having established himself in America and preferring "to live in the Old Dominion."

If he was indeed a grandson of the tenth Earl of Shrewsbury, Matthew Talbot's parents would probably be Thomas Talbot and Anne Tate. He came to America with his cousin Edward (or Edmund) to Maryland in 1720, at the age of twenty-one, to visit Sir William Talbot, the first secretary of the colony of Maryland and the person for whom Talbot County was named. Edward returned to England, but Matthew fell in love with Mary Williston, the daughter of James Williston, a large landowner, and Ann Hargrave Williston. Matthew and Mary were married on May 6, 1722.

Soon after their first son, Charles, was born in 1723, the Talbots moved to Virginia, first residing in Bristol Parish, Prince George County, before moving to the part of Lunenburg County that later became Bedford County. On January 12, 1746, Matthew Talbot, after the act creating Lunenburg County was passed, but before the county was organized, secured a patent for six hundred acres of land "being an island in Staunton River below the mouth of Seneca Creek." He was a member of the first county court, the one that organized the government of Lunenburg County, and when Bedford County was created, he was one of the first justices of its county court, which held its first meeting on May 5, 1746 at the Talbot home. Meetings continued there until a proper courthouse was erected in 1754.

In addition to this and many other civic duties, Matthew Talbot, a professed Church of England man, was for many years a vestryman for Cumberland Parish Church. Vestries at that time were active in such areas as the building and maintenance of ferries and bridges and other aspects of public life, as well as taking care of their religious responsibilities.

To protect and defend the lives of their families and their property, primarily from hostile Indians, the citizens maintained a militia. The militia became more important when the French made allies of many Indian tribes in order to drive out the English. The French and Indian Wars broke out, and Matthew Talbot in 1754, at the age of fifty-five, was commissioned a colonel in the Virginia militia. Several of his letters to his superior officers are preserved among the papers of George Washington, stored in the Library of Congress.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

The wife of his youth, Mary Williston, died in 1736, leaving him with four boys: Charles, Mathew, James, and John. He married Jane Clayton in 1737, and she bore him another son, Isham, and his only daughter, Martha. Matthew Talbot died in 1758 at his plantation at the age of fifty-nine. His will, recorded in November, 1758, is on file at the Bedford County Court House, Bedford, Virginia.

Submitted by Mrs. James Arthur King Jr. and Mrs. Stephen Michael Manzella

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Francis Minor Shepard Ager (Amy Brannon Neal); Birmingham
Mrs. James Arthur King, Jr. (Frances Dee Foster); Birmingham
Mrs. Stephen Michael Manzella (Louise Talbot Richardson); York, Pennsylvania
Mrs. Phil Hudson Neal Jr. (Sarah Alline Britton); Birmingham
Mrs. Luther Washington Richardson Jr. (Louise Carleton Winslett); Tuscaloosa

SOURCES:

<http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~fw64/matthew1.html>

Genealogical Sketch of Certain of the American Descendants of Matthew Talbot, Gentleman, compiled by Robert Howe Fletcher, Jr. in 1956.

Maryland Marriages, 1634-1777, compiled by Robert Barnes, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1978.

In Grateful Remembrance
JAMES THIGPEN II

1664-1731



James Thigpen II was born in Albemarle County, North Carolina on October 9, 1664. His first wife, Eleanor, was from England, and they married in 1683. She died in 1684, during childbirth. In January of 1685/6, he married Elizabeth Manwarring, who died in Perquimans Precinct, North Carolina on January 11, 1716. James Thigpen married again on September 2, 1716 to Margaret Jordan.

Although the exact date of Thigpen's arrival in Perquimans District is not recorded, he was one of its early settlers. The original inhabitants of this land were the Yeopin Indians, a branch of the Algonquians, who had named it Perquimans, which means "land of beautiful women."

James Thigpen is reported to have operated the first ferry crossing the Perquimans River. This river begins as a narrow stream and becomes more than a mile wide where it empties into Albemarle Sound. Only the local court had the authority to issue a license to operate a ferry and owners of a flatboat were given a territory consisting of between six and ten miles of river bank. The location of Thigpen's ferry is not known.

James Thigpen served as a justice of the peace in 1694 and was a member of the court of Perquimans Precinct in 1694 and 1706. Court sessions were held in individuals' homes and records show that on August 8, 1696, the court met at the house of James Thigpen. He is also recorded as serving on a jury in 1693. At the age of sixty-seven, James Thigpen died in Perquimans Precinct, North Carolina.

Submitted by: Mrs. Weldon Williamson Doe, Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Weldon Williamson Doe, Jr. (Caroline Rebecca Sellers); Montgomery

Mrs. Vaughan Robison Dozier (Frances Pelzer Doe); Montgomery

Mrs. Rutledge Etherton (Caroline McMillan Rutledge); Mobile

SOURCES:

History of Perquimans County, compiled by Mrs. Watson Winslow and published in Baltimore by Regional Publishing Company in 1974.

The Thigpen Tribe, by Alice Whitley Smith, published in Yanceyville, North Carolina, in 1963.

Biographies of Our Ancestors
JOHN THOMAS

1720-1811

John Thomas came to Chester County, Pennsylvania, with his parents as immigrants to America in 1730. He died in Greenville District, South Carolina, having moved to Spartanburg District on Fair Forest Creek with his wife and family about 1749. He served in many capacities: member of the second Provincial Congress, 1775-1776; colonel of the militia, 1775-1776; justice of the peace, 1776; and commissioner of land locations for the new Greenville County, South Carolina, in 1785.

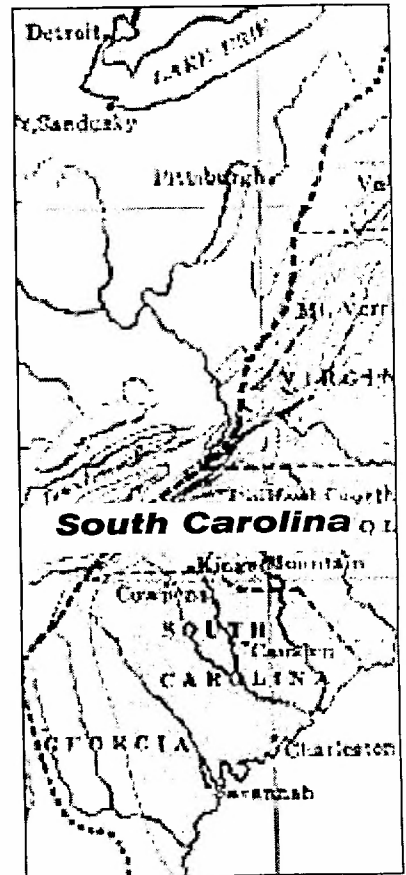
John Thomas had an interesting and active life, ranging from defending his colony against the Cherokee Indians and allied tribes to defending his country against the British. His wife, Jane Black Thomas, whom he married about 1740, was a valiant and brave patriot, as were their sons, daughters, and sons-in-law.

Much has been written about Jane Black Thomas, who was a native of Chester County, Pennsylvania, and was the sister of the Reverend John Black. She was a Christian woman of the Presbyterian church. Jane is said to have been short in stature, to have black hair, and to have been of indomitable perseverance concerning principle and right. She was described as being extremely patriotic and, as a woman of imminent piety, discretion, industry, was said to exhibit a loveliness of character and an unusual beauty of person!

Early in the Revolutionary War, weapons and ammunition had been sent to John Thomas's home (which was located in the southern section of what is now Spartanburg County's Croft State Park), in anticipation of future military needs. The house and its store of valuable ordnance was placed under a guard of twenty-five men, a part of the Spartan Regiment that Colonel Thomas had formed in 1775, in anticipation of a future attack. Late in the year of 1779, the Thomas family learned that a large group of Tories was advancing to try to confiscate the arms and ammunition. The Whigs began preparations and hid as much as possible before the arrival of their foes.

Remaining at the two-story log Thomas home were Mrs. Thomas, three of her daughters, and William, her youngest son, who was not of age to serve with the Spartan Regiment. Her son-in-law, Josiah Culbertson was also there to defend them. When the Tories arrived, they asked for admittance to the house. Jane Thomas ordered them to leave, and the Tories then began shooting at the house. Culbertson was the only one in the house who could return fire, but Jane and her children worked as fast as they could to reload each gun as it was fired. Culbertson sped from one window and rifle to another, around the interior of the log house, keeping up a barrage of fire on the attackers and giving the appearance of their being numerous defenders within the home. As the Tories mustered one last assault, Jane appeared before them brandishing a sword and daring them to come on. The Tories were intimidated and retreated. Recalling the event in 1832, son-in-law Captain Culvert observed, "The destruction of this ammunition [hidden in the house] would have been a serious loss to the Americans. This very ammunition was afterwards made use of by [General Thomas] Sumter at his fight on the Rocky Mount and the Battle of Hanging Rock."

Another story that illustrates the bravery of Jane Thomas is as follows. On July 11, 1780, while Colonel John Thomas was imprisoned at Site Ninety-Six (about sixty miles southeast of Spartanburg), she went to visit him and two of their sons who were also there. While visiting, Jane heard two Tory women speaking of a plan that deeply distressed her. They were discussing a surprise attack by the Loyalists on the Rebels who were at Cedar



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

History of the Presbyterian Church of South Carolina, Volume I, a monograph by the Reverend George Howe, Columbia, SC, 1870.

History of Spartanburg, South Carolina, by Dr. John B.O. Landrum, originally published in Spartanburg, SC, by The Print Company in 1900. Reprinted by Genealogical Publishing Company in 2006.

"Jane Thomas: Heroine or Feminist?" by Irene J. Cornwell, published in *Greenville Magazine*, April 1986.

King's Mountain and Its Heroes, by Lyman C. Draper, originally published in 1881 by Peter G. Draper; reprinted in 1969 by Overmountain Press in Johnson City, Tennessee.

Letters from Colonel John Thomas, September 1775.

"Obituary of Jane Black Thomas," published in *Carolina Gazette*, Charleston, SC, Volume 1, 1848.

The Revolution Remembered: Eyewitness Accounts of the War for Independence, by John C. Dann, published in Chicago by the University of Chicago Press in 1980.

Some Heroes of the American Revolution in the South Carolina Upper Country, by James D. Bailey, published in Easley, South Carolina, by Southern Historical Press in 1976.

Women of the American Revolution, by Elizabeth F. Ellet, originally published in three volumes in New York by Baker and Scribner, 1848. Reprinted in 2007 by American History Imprints.

Spring. (Cedar Spring was just a few miles from Jane's home, and the Whigs were stationed there.) Among the Whigs was her oldest son, John, who had positioned at Cedar Spring sixty men of the recently reorganized Spartan Regiment. Also present were several of her sons-in-law, plus various other kin. Mrs. Thomas was very much alarmed, but excited, to have overheard these plans. She quickly said good-bye to her husband and sons and began her ride to Cedar Spring, a rough and forbidding journey of about sixty miles that took a night and all of the following day. Upon her arrival at the camp, Mrs. Thomas apprised her son and his group of the impending danger, then rode on home to check on things there. The Regiment prepared their campfires to burn brightly, improvised bedrolls to resemble sleeping soldiers, then hid in the forest near the campsite. When the hundred and fifty Loyalists attacked the empty camp, they were defeated by the Rebel forces; all chances of Tory success had hinged on them having had the advantage of surprise. The victory belonged to Jane Black Thomas and the Spartan Regiment.

It is said that, after the Revolutionary War began, Jane Black Thomas never again drank tea. She said that it was "the blood of the poor men who first fell in the War." She lost two sons and two sons-in-law in the fighting. John and Jane Thomas lived long lives, sincere patriots to the core. Both died in 1811. He served his country well, and she was a brave and valiant lady, as well as a "spirited Whig."

Submitted by Mrs. William Milam Turner, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. William Milam Turner Jr. (Rosemary Heinz): Selma

Biographies of Our Ancestors

WILLIAM THOMPSON

1597-1649

William Thompson, a refugee driven from England because of religious persecution, was one member of the several branches of the Thompson family to settle in southern Maryland. According to genealogist Harry Wright Newman, he is listed as a passenger on the *Ark* which, with her pinnace (companion ship), the *Dove*, had sailed from Cowes on the Isle of Wight on November 22, 1633, landing in America on March 25, 1634. The voyages of the *Ark* and the *Dove* had a turbulent beginning as a "fierce tempest" beset them as they left England. The two ships were separated for months and rejoined in the Antilles. Their course was past the Straits of Gibraltar and the Madeiras to the West Indies. They passed St. Lucia, Guadeloupe, Montserrat, and Nevis, pausing for ten days in St. Kitt's. They rounded Cape Hatteras and entered Chesapeake Bay, proceeding into the Potomac River. On March 25, after four months at sea, they landed on St. Clement's Island, erected a wooden cross, and celebrated a mass. The state of Maryland celebrates its founding on March 25th each year.

William Thompson first settled in St. Michaels Hundred and later New Towne Hundred, both in St. Mary's County. (See Glossary: Bermuda Hundred.) "In April 1648, as 'Mr. Willm Thompson,' he was appointed high sheriff of St. Mary's County and subscribed to the oath accordingly."

Records of the first six generations of the Thompson family are found in *The Maryland Semmes and Kindred Families*. Six generations lived in Maryland, then Joseph Thompson (1753-1810) took his family to Georgia, along with other Catholic families, to establish the Catholic faith and to take possession of the land offered to Revolutionary War servicemen.

Cooper's *History of Georgia* [no publication data available] offers the following quote by the Right Reverend John England, D.D.:

Since 1794, there has been a Catholic mission in Georgia, at Locust Grove, which was then in the county of Wilkes. It was first established by some Maryland Catholics who drifted south, and was served by some French priests from Santo Domingo. The Thompsons, Semmes, Lucketts, Griffins, O'Neills, and Ryans were the principal families around this mission.

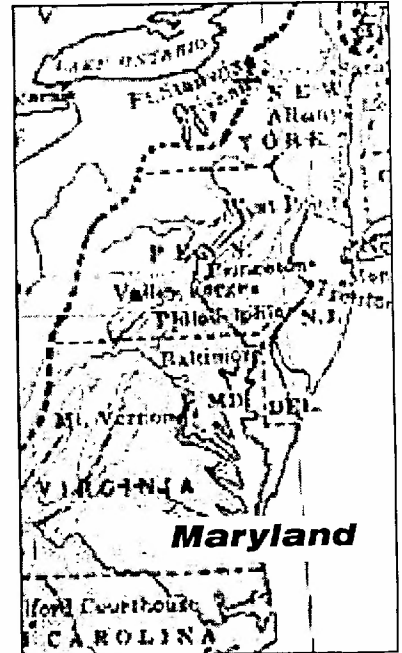
Bishop England died in 1842. Bishop England's newspaper, established in 1822, was *The United States Catholic Miscellany* and for forty years a beacon for his church until the Civil War in 1861 interrupted its publication.

Joseph Thompson was the father of Henry Bradford Thompson (1790-1870). Henry married Louisa Sophia Cratin (1797-1870). There were eight children. The couple were pioneers of the Indian lands about 1835 in Russell County, Alabama. A deed signed by President Andrew Jackson, approved January 1, 1835, by him, is in the possession of a descendant, E. Walker Parish Sr. Henry and Louisa Thompson are buried in Linwood Cemetery, Columbus, Georgia.

Submitted by Mrs. Charles Wesley Edwards Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Charles Wesley Edwards Jr. (Katherine Long Sellers); Florence



SOURCES:

Archives of Maryland, Volume 4.

The Ark and the Dove Adventurers, by the Society of the *Ark* and the *Dove*, edited by George Ely and Donna Valley Russell, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 2005.

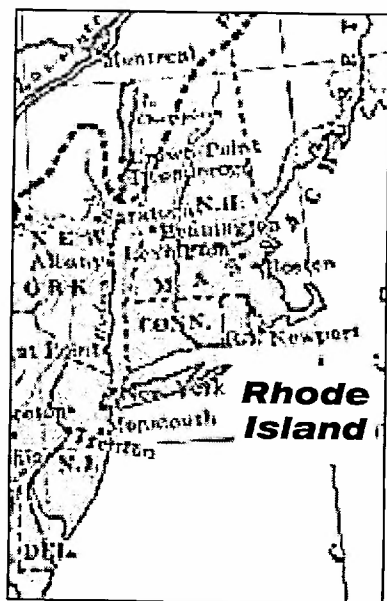
The Long Tree and Others, by Margaret Thompson Winkler, assisted by Carolina Nigg, published in Montgomery, AL by Uchee Publications in 1995.

The Maryland Semmes and Kindred Families, by Harry Wright Newman, published in Baltimore by The Maryland Historical Society in 1956.

The Thompson Family Genealogy, by Leonard Dismukes Parish, published in Clayton, AL, on July 21, 1978.

In Grateful Remembrance **JOHN THROCKMORTON**

1601-1690*



John Throckmorton, great-great-great-grandson of Thomas Throckmorton and his wife, Margaret Olney, of Coughton Court, Warwickshire, England, was christened May 9, 1601, in Norwich, Norfolk, England.

The son of Bassingbourne Throckmorton and his wife, Mary Hill, John married Rebecca Colville and came to America in 1631. He arrived at Nantasaket, Massachusetts on February 5th in the ship *Lyon*, mastered by Mr. William Pierce. The *Lyon* set sail for Bristol on December 1, 1630. On May 18th, following his arrival, he was admitted a Freeman at Salem, Massachusetts. (See Glossary: Freeman.) Disenchanted with the Puritans, Throckmorton followed Roger Williams, his fellow passenger in the *Lyon*, into Rhode Island in the summer of 1635 or 36. Williams purchased land from the Indians and deeded shares of "Providence Plantation" to John and eleven others. John and Rebecca Throckmorton were on the List of Original Members Received in 1638 into the Baptist Church (the first in America).

In 1643, Throckmorton made application to the Dutch to settle within their jurisdiction. This grant, subsequently called Throckmorton's Neck, or Throg's Neck, since John was also called "Throgmorton" by the Dutch, embraced the eastern part of the present-day New York City. The settlement had a short existence, as it was obliterated by the Indian uprising in the fall of 1643, when every vestige of it was destroyed. Eighteen persons were killed, and those who escaped death made their way to the fort at New Amsterdam and "some that escaped from the Indian attack went back to Rhode Island," says Winthrop. Among those who returned was John Throckmorton.

According to records, in 1647 John Throckmorton was living in Providence and granted the house of Edward Cope, provided he satisfied the deputies of Providence the amount of a lien against said property. In 1652, he was town moderator at Providence, Rhode Island.

In 1664, he became interested in the development of East Jersey, and shortly thereafter became one of the Monmouth patentees. From 1664 to 1675 (except for one year), he was a deputy in Rhode Island. On May 31, 1666, at Providence, he took the oath of allegiance to Charles II. In 1672, he conveyed to his son, John Throckmorton, land in Middleton, New Jersey, a settlement in which he owned shares.

In addition to participating in the settlement of Rhode Island, New York, and New Jersey, John Throckmorton was a merchant and owned sailing vessels that traveled between Rhode Island and Virginia. He died while visiting sons in Middleton, New Jersey. He was the first person buried in the oldest recorded family burying ground in Middletown, one of the oldest settlements in New Jersey.

John Jr. married Alice Stout, the daughter of Richard and Penelope Stout. Her father was one of the original Monmouth patentees. Her mother was the legendary woman who survived an Indian attack and then went on to bear ten children. John Jr. was elected deputy to the General Assembly and served from 1675-1688. For many years he was a judge in the county courts, and held the position when he died in 1690.

*The NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1687.

Submitted by Mrs. Claude Mastin McGowin Jr.

SOURCES:

Historical and Genealogical Miscellany, Early Settlers of New Jersey and Their Descendants, by John E. Stillwell, M.D., published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1970.

Rhode Island and Providence Plantation, Henry William Elson, published in New York by The MacMillan Company in 1904. Transcribed by Kathy Lee.

<http://www.usgennet/>.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Doy Leale McCall Jr. (Margaret Thorington Kohn); Montgomery
Mrs. Claude Mastin McGowin Jr. (Josephine Lehey Screws); Montgomery

RICHARD TILGHMAN II

1672-1738

The Honorable Richard Tilghman II was a burgess for Talbot County, Maryland, from 1698 to 1702. He was a member of the proprietary council from 1711 to 1738, and chancellor of the province of Maryland in 1725. He married Anna Maria, daughter of Philemon Lloyd and Henrietta Maria Neale—granddaughter of Edward Lloyd of *Wye*house. They had nine children.

Honorable Richard had an interesting history. His father, Dr. Richard Tilghman, was a colonist to America from London in 1660 and died at *The Hermitage* in Talbot County, Maryland. He was a surgeon in the British navy and one of the parliamentarians who signed the petition to have justice done to King Charles I. He first settled upon *Canterbury Manor*, a tract of a thousand acres granted him by Lord Baltimore in July 1659. He brought with him a record book begun in 1540 during the life of his great-great-grandfather, William Tilghman I. It gives an account of his voyages to Maryland on the *Elizabeth and Mary*. Each generation added its entries and it is one of the most complete family records in Maryland. Dr. Richard Tilghman received many patents of land and amassed 8,200 acres in Talbot County alone. He was high sheriff for Talbot County in 1670-71. Dr. Tilghman was married to Mary Foxley.

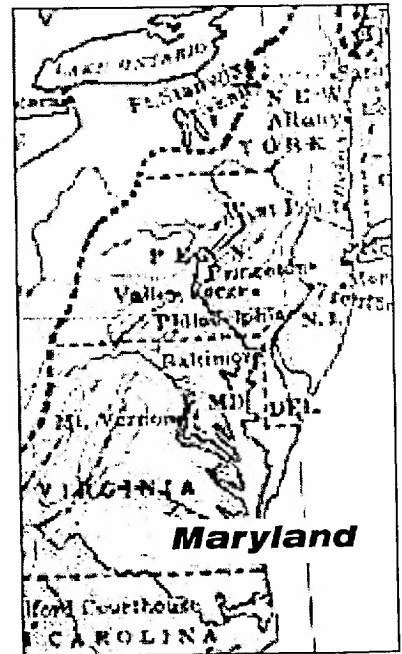
At Dr. Tilghman's death, Richard inherited three plantations, named *Tilghman's Choice*, *Tilghman's Farm*, and *Tilghman's Discovery*.

Honorable Richard had several important descendants. His son, Matthew Tilghman (1718-1790), was considered perhaps the most valuable man in Maryland for service in the Revolution. He was captain of a troop of horse to protect the settlements against the Indians on the Eastern Shore. He then became a justice of Talbot County, Maryland. In 1751, he was sent as a delegate to the General Assembly of Maryland. He was president of the Council for the Eastern Shore, and speaker for the Lower House of the Assemblies, 1773-75. He was also a delegate to the Continental Congress in 1774 in Philadelphia. He did not sign the Declaration of Independence because he was at that time president of the Continental Convention in Annapolis. He fathered Maryland's first Constitution and Bill of Rights. He married Ann Lloyd, daughter of James Lloyd and Ann Grundy. He was owner of Tilghman's Island.

Matthew's daughter, Margaret (b. 1742), married Charles Carroll, a distinguished barrister, who lived at *Mont Clare*, now the Museum Property of the National Society of the Colonial Dames of America in the State of Maryland.

A second son of Honorable Richard was James Tilghman (1716-1793), who married Ann Frances. James was a member of the Maryland Assembly in 1762-63 and a Loyalist; one of his sons, Philemon, was an officer in the British navy during the War. However, another son, Colonel Tench Tilghman, was an aide-de-camp to General George Washington, who spoke highly of him on many occasions.

A daughter of Honorable Richard, Henrietta Maria Tilghman, married first George Robbins of *Peach Blossom* and second William Goldsborough, a member of the proprietor's council and one of the judges of the provincial court of Maryland.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

Ancestral Records and Portraits, Volume II, by The National Society of The Colonial Dames of America, published originally in New York by Grafton Press in 1910; reissued in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1997.

Colonial Families of the United States of America (7 Volumes), by George Norbury Mackenzie, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company, in 1907-1920, reissued in 1995.

Historic Graves of Maryland, by Helen W. Ridgely, published in New York under the auspices of the Maryland Society of The National Society of the Colonial Dames of America by Grafton Press in 1908. Reprinted in 2000.

Maryland Historical Magazine, Volumes I and II.

Tilghman-Tillman Family 1225-1945, by Stephen Tillman, published by Edward Brothers, Inc. in 1946.

At *The Hermitage*, Queen Anne County, Maryland, lie the remains of many Tilghmans. The inscription on Richard Tilghman II's stone reads:

Here Lyes Interr'd the Honourable Richard Tilghman, Esqr., who departed this life the 23rd day of Janu, Anno Domini 1738, in the Sixty-Sixth Year of his Age. He Married Anna Maria, daughter of Coll. Philemon LLoyd, by whom he had nine Children, seven of them Living at the time of his Death.

The dates on the many Tilghman graves at *The Hermitage* span almost two hundred years.

Submitted by Mrs. Allen Jones Tutwiler

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Allen Jones Tutwiler (Lynn Lenore Otey); Birmingham

FRANCIS TOMES (TOMS)

1632/33*-1712

Francis Tomes was one of the earliest settlers in the Albemarle section of North Carolina, having moved there from Surrey County, Virginia around 1664. By the time of his death in 1712, he had become a substantial planter with 1,192 acres of land near and on the Perquimans River. He was a council member (Lord Proprietor Deputy) from 1683 to 1704, the deputy collector of customs in 1695, as well as assistant deputy governor, judge of general court, court of chancery, and palatine's court, the last two being divisions of power under John Locke's "Grand Model" (See Glossary), a means of establishing a hierarchy of nobility in America and a system by which to govern.

Tomes converted to Quakerism in 1672, when William Edmundson made his first journey to North Carolina. Meetings were often held at his home and in his will he left his wife "feather beds to be kept in ye porch chamber for Gods Messengers & Ministers to Lodge In."

Francis Tomes married three times. His first wife was Priscilla, whose last name, date of birth, and parentage are not known; she died sometime between 1669 and 1684. She and Francis had seven children: Penelope, born 1668 and died young; Mary, born 1670 and married Gabriel Newby; Francis, born 1672 and married first, Margaret (Bogue) Lawrence in 1696 and second, Rebecca Pierce in 1722; Priscilla, born 1674 and died young; Joseph, born 1677 and died young; and twins, Joshua and Caleb, born in 1679. Caleb died young, but Joshua married Sarah Gosby in 1701, Elizabeth Charles in 1724, and Rebecca (Jones) Sutton in 1726.

Francis Tomes's second wife was Abigail (Bailey Charles) Lacy, widow of William Charles, widow of John Lacy, and daughter of William Bailey. They had one child, Priscilla, born on December 10, 1684. She married John Nicholson in 1700, John Kinsey in 1711, and John Symons in 1721/2. Francis Tomes' third wife was Mary Nicholson, who survived him with no issue.

The spelling of Tomes changed to Toms within a few generations. Variants of the name include Tooms, Toomes, Tombs, and Thoms.

*NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists c.1645.

Submitted by Mrs. Thomas Skinner White III

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Thomas Skinner White III (Mary Wadsworth); Florence



SOURCES:

Abstracts of North Carolina Land Patents 1663-1729 and deeds of Chowan and Perquiman's County, NC (1663-1721)

"Anatomy of a Family History," by Raymond A. Winslow, published in Edenton, NC in *The North Carolina Historical and Genealogical Register*, Volume 3, n.d.

Encyclopedia of American Quaker Genealogy, Volume 1, by William Wade Hinshaw, 1936.

History of Perquimans County, published in Raleigh, NC, by Edwards and Broughton Press, 1931.

The North Carolina Genealogical Society Journal, Volume 25, No.3, by Ellen Goode Rawlings Winslow, August 1999.

North Carolina Higher Court Records 1670-1696, "Council minutes, 10 March 1698," edited by Mattie E. Parker, published in Raleigh, NC, by the State Department of Archives & History in 1968.

North Carolina Higher Court Records 1697-1701, edited by Mattie Erma Edwards Parker, published in Raleigh, NC, by the State Department of Archives & History in 1971.

Perquimans Co. N.C. Births, Marriages, and Flesh Marks 1659-1820, (called Berkeley Parish Register-though Berkeley Parish account was not established until 1701, co-extensive with Perquimans Co., NC.)

Secretary of State Records, Wills, 1712-1722 (Will Book 2), published in Raleigh, NC, by the State Department of Archives & History in 1971.

In Grateful Remembrance
JOHN ADAM TREUTLEN

1726*-1782

The Truetlens were known as Salzburgers in Berchtesgaden, Austria (now Germany), and were among the thirty thousand exiles from Austria/Germany in the 1730s who were banished from their homeland due to religious persecution. Archbishop Leopold issued a decree exiling all who would not accept the Catholic faith, and the staunchly Protestant Salzburgers left *en masse*. They followed their banner of the Cross, led by their pastors and singing hymns of praise.

Most settled in the Prussian states, but many traveled on to England and other Protestant countries. Some of those in England, including the Treutlen family, set sail for the American colony of Georgia, seeking freedom of worship and the hope of a new life, as they followed General Oglethorpe to the colony he was establishing. John Adam Treutlen's father, Frederick, died, either in England or on shipboard to America, leaving his widow, Maria Clara, and young sons to arrive alone in the Georgia colony. They were indentured to Michael Burckhalter of Vernonburg, a town in what is now Chatham County. Pastor John Martin Bolzius recognized the unusual talent of young John and secured enrollment for him in the school at Ebenezer and residence in the Ebenezer orphanage. John acquired a liberal education in a wide variety of subjects, including Latin, English, French, and German, and later became a teacher at the school.

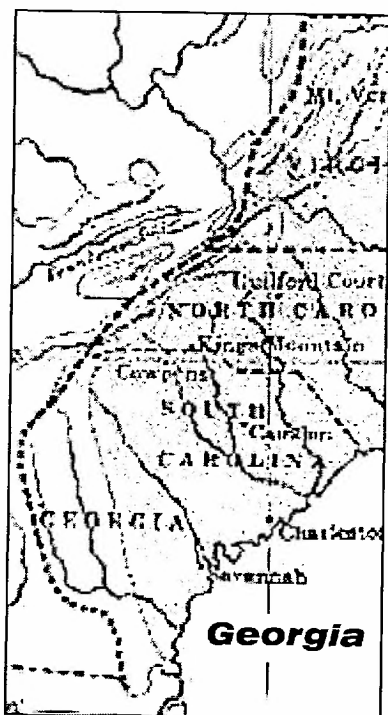
Ever strong in his faith, John Treutlen was confirmed in the "Jerusalem Church" at Ebenezer in 1747, was a devoted member, and served as senior deacon. Records also show that a young lady of Swiss/French descent, Anna Margareth De Puis, was confirmed in 1754. Their marriage is recorded in that same church in 1756. The couple had nine children, three of whom died in infancy, leaving John Jr., Christian, De Puis, Elizabeth, Mary, and Hannah.

John Treutlen was a born statesman and held the following offices: justice of the peace of St. Matthew's Parish; commissioner and surveyor of roads for the Provincetown of Ebenezer; member of the Georgia Assembly from St. Matthew's Parish from 1761-66. He was a member of the first Provincial Congress, which met in Savannah on July 4, 1775, and became the first elected governor of Georgia on May 8, 1777.

The following inscription on the John Adam Treutlen state historical marker placed on the grounds of his Georgia plantation describes well the patriotic spirit and service of this indentured servant turned wealthy landowner and governor of the state:

On these lands stood the home of John Adam Treutlen, the first Governor of Georgia after the state obtained independence, being elected in 1777 under the first Constitution of Georgia. A Salzburger, born about 1733, John Adam came to Georgia at an early age with his widowed mother and brother. He was placed under the care and tutelage of Pastor John Martin Bolzius and became a teacher at Ebenezer and a leading official in the Jerusalem Church.

Truetlen represented St. Matthews Parish in the Commons House of Assembly, was a Colonel in the Effingham Militia, and a Magistrate in that County. A member of the First Provincial Congress of Georgia,



Biographies of Our Ancestors

meeting in Savannah on July 4, 1775, he was appointed to the Council of Safety.

During his service as Governor, Treutlen mortgaged his personal property to help defray expenses of Government and of the Revolution. His plantation devastated and building burned by the Tories, he moved his family for their safety to Orangeburg District, South Carolina, where he established residence in 1779. There he was killed by Tories in 1782.

In 1769, John Treutlen had owned a plantation consisting of twelve thousand acres. The British destroyed his home and all of his property, as well as desecrating his beloved Jerusalem Church, which was used for a hospital, stable, and commissary for the army. The interior of the church was destroyed. John Treutlen was indeed a man who gave his all, even his own life, for the glorious cause of American Independence.

* NSCDA Register of Ancestors accepts 1726, although his birth is cited in various sources as 1732, 1733, and 1734.

Submitted by Mrs. Charles Clark Hubbard

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Tom Tarrt Brown (Virginia Reeves); Birmingham
Mrs. William Aubrey Dominick (Carolyn Treutlen Petry); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. William Howard Donovan III (Betty Bester Brown); Birmingham
Mrs. William Alexander Grant III (Jane Campbell Brown); Birmingham
Mrs. Frank Delmar Hill, Jr. (Carolyn Treutlen Thomas); Birmingham
Mrs. Charles Clark Hubbard (Henrietta Fontaine Hill); Montgomery
Mrs. Thomas Edward Montgomery II (Eleanor Hill Hubbard); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Buford Harrison Morris (Mary Foy Thomas); Montgomery

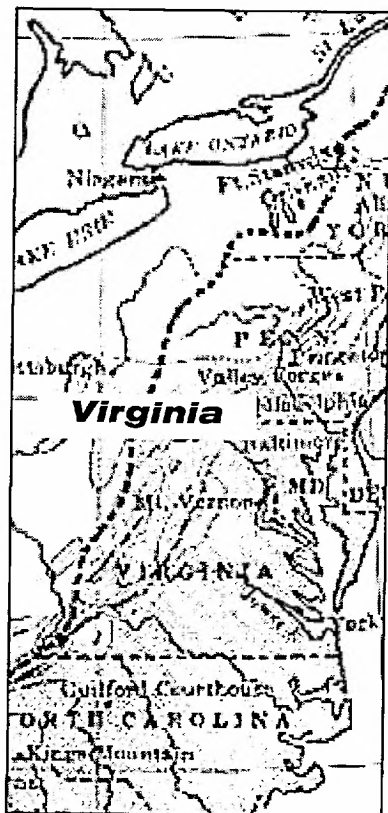
SOURCES:

The Family Skeleton, by Henrietta McComick Hill, published in Montgomery, AL by Paragon Press in 1958.

www.georgiaencyclopedia.com
Georgia State Historical Commission

In Grateful Remembrance **WILLIAM TUNSTALL**

c. 1736-1803



William Tunstall was born in King & Queen County, Virginia, around 1736. He spent much of his youth in Williamsburg, which he enjoyed to the fullest before he married. During his time there, the colonial governor of Virginia at Williamsburg, Sir William Gooch, reported the "The Gentlemen and Ladies here are perfectly well bred, not an ill Dancer in my Government." We may assume that William Tunstall was among this group of well-bred, accomplished dancers. He also owned a race horse, Koulikahn, who was imported from England in 1764, and is still known in the annals of horsedom.

The woman he would marry, Elizabeth (Betsy) Barker (c. 1740-1803), was the daughter of Thomas Barker, one of the most prominent and wealthy men of North Carolina with a lineage he traced to one of the original *Mayflower* colonists. Betsy's mother was Ferebee Savage Pugh, descended from Thomas Savage, one of the original settlers of Jamestown. She died when Betsy was a small child, so Betsy spent much of her time in the home of her kinsman Peyton Randolph. That was where she met both Thomas Jefferson and William Tunstall, each of whom sought her hand in marriage. She declined Jefferson and chose Tunstall. Together they had seven sons and three daughters.

Tunstall was the clerk of the court of Halifax County, Virginia, from 1767 to 1791; his son, William Tunstall Jr., succeeded him; then William Jr.'s son, William H., had the position: altogether, the three generations of Tunstalls held the job of clerk of the court for ninety-one years! William Tunstall Sr. served as a major in the Pittsylvania militia in 1773 and as a justice of the peace and sheriff of Henry County in 1778. A high-ranking civic and military county official during the War, William Tunstall also served his church, Camden Parish, in Pittsylvania County, as a vestryman and warden of Camden parish.

Submitted by Mrs. Joseph Hiram Calvin

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Joseph Hiram Calvin (Juliet Jolly Given); Birmingham

SOURCES:

The First Tunstalls of Virginia: and some of their descendants, by Whit Morris, published in San Antonio, TX by Press of the Clegg Company in 1950.
Virginia Magazine, Volume XXXV.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

CHARLES TYLER, III

c.1717-1768

Captain Charles Tyler III was the third Charles Tyler to live in the British colony of Virginia. He (born around 1717 in Westmoreland County, Virginia) was a captain (1748) in the Fairfax County militia of Lawrence Washington, the half-brother of George Washington. He was a justice (1762) and a sheriff (1765) in Loudoun County, Virginia. He married Anne Moore in September of 1746 in Fairfax County, and they had seven children. He died intestate in Cameron Parish, Loudoun County, on April 12, 1768. His wife, Anne, died in 1769 and left a fairly detailed will, listing her children: John, Susannah, Anne, Charles, Benjamin, William, and Spence, and how her estate should be disbursed. Except for John, all the children were minors, so the will instructed that John had already received his inheritance; William received one slave; Susannah received support through 1770; Spence was schooled through 1772; Ann received support through 1774; and the two youngest boys, Charles and Benjamin, schooling and support through 1776.

Charles Tyler I, the apparent founder of this family, which spread through Prince William, Fauquier, and Loudoun Counties, was an adult buying land in Westmoreland County in 1690. He died in 1723, at which time his wife, Jane, and son, Charles, supplied the court with a supplementary inventory of his estate. The prevailing tradition, although not backed up by evidence, is that this particular Tyler family lived in Northern Neck, Maryland, and came to Westmoreland County in Virginia with, and about the same time as, the Andrew Monroe family, because both sided with William Claiborne, a Protestant, against the Catholic commander, Lord Baltimore. The Tyler and Monroe families were closely interconnected.

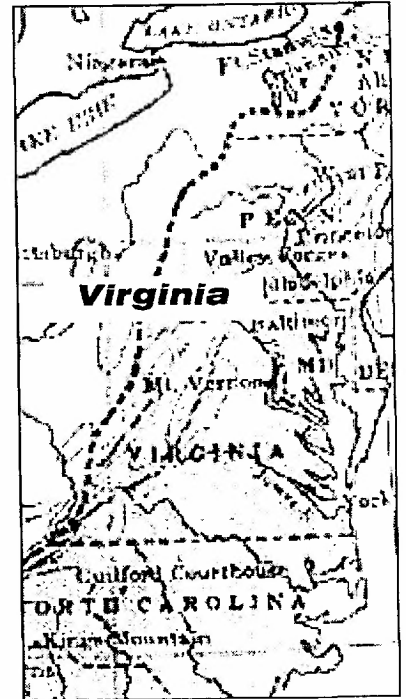
Charles John Tyler II (1690-1726) was called Captain, as his son would also be. He was the second husband of Susannah Monroe (1695-1752), with whom he had two sons, John and Charles III.

Susannah's grandfather, Andrew Monroe, emigrated from Scotland to America in 1650. He belonged to an ancient highland clan, and was a captain in the service of King Charles I of England. Monroe received his first grant of land on June 8, 1650, in Northumberland County, Virginia, and was later (in 1652) granted land in Westmoreland County. In the time of King Charles II of England, Monroe returned to Scotland and induced others of his family to emigrate, and the Crown made him another extensive grant of land. In 1659/60, he was a member of the Westmoreland Commission. In July 1661, he was elected to the vestry of Appomattox parish, Westmoreland County. He married Elizabeth Alexander, reputedly the daughter of Colonel John Alexander, and has six children, one of whom (Andrew), became the father of Susannah Monroe. He died in 1668. His great-great-grandson was James Monroe, the fifth President of the United States.

Submitted by Mrs. James Tompkins Cochrane

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Tompkins Cochrane (Susan Lee Given); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. William Morris Given Jr. (Helen Vivian Milam); Birmingham



SOURCES:

"Charles Tyler," *Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography*, Lyon Gardiner Tyler, editor, published by Lowe's Historical Publishing Company in 1915. Original from Harvard University, digitized by Google, September 12, 2006.

The Life of James Monroe, by George Morgan, published by Small, Maynard & Company in 1921. Original from Stanford University, digitized by Google June 29, 2004.

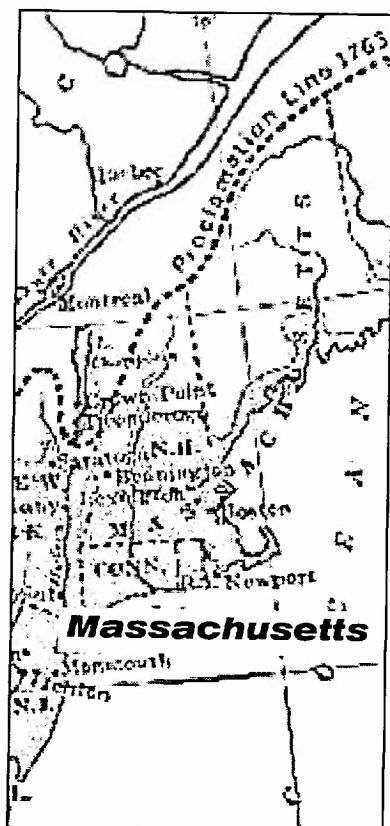
Loudoun County, Virginia, Order Book B Register of Virginia Justices and Co. Officers, Mis., Reel 458A

Tyler's Quarterly Historical and Genealogical Quarterly, by Lyon Gardiner Tyler, 1924. Original from University of Michigan, digitized by Google March 3, 2006.

Will of Anne Moore, Loudoun County, Virginia, Will Book A.

In Grateful Remembrance **JOHN UPHAM**

1597/1600*-1682



SOURCES:

The Descendants of John Upham of Massachusetts by F.K. Upham, published by J. Munsell's Sons, Albany, NY 1892.

Notices of the Life of John Upham by the Hon. Nathaniel Upham and Dr. Albert G. Upham printed in Concord, NH, by Asa McFarland in 1845.

With a desire to see the New World, the Reverend Joseph Hull, a native of Sommersetshire, England, gathered a party of twenty-one families and set sail for the Massachusetts Bay Colony. They left Weymouth, Old Dorset, on March 20, 1635. After a passage of only forty-five days, they reached the shores of the Massachusetts Bay Colony and settled at Wessaguscus. They changed the settlement's name to Weymouth, in pleasant memory of the port from which they had so recently departed.

The Massachusetts Colonial Records state that "there is a leave granted to twenty one families to sitt down at Wessaguscus." Governor John Winthrop also recorded in his journal the court action to establish the settlement, with the name being changed to Weymouth. Thus to this beautiful near-wilderness came the Hull Colony. Among their number was John Upham, the first of that name in America.

John Upham was born in England, probably in Sommersetshire, although little is known about his direct ancestry. The name Upham was often spelled Uphame in Elizabethan times and signified a home, dwelling or village. With his wife, Elizabeth, and three children, John, Nathaniel and Elizabeth, this first American Upham determined to establish a home in the New World. A fourth child, Phineas, may have been born during the voyage or shortly after arriving, as he is not listed on the ship's log, but is listed in the records of the settlement. The Biblical translation of Phineas is "the peace of God," and may have indicated the feeling of peace and thankfulness following the safe arrival in America.

Other genealogists indicate that John and Elizabeth Slade had only one son, Phineas, so there may have been a first wife, possibly Elizabeth, with a maiden name of Webb. The ship's log cites the family as John (age thirty-five), Elizabeth (age thirty-two), John Jr.(age seven), Nathaniel (age five) and Elizabeth (age three).

Weymouth records show that John Upham was awarded thirty acres of land upon his arrival. He was elected representative to the general court held in Boston from 1636-1638. In 1642, John Upham's name appears as one of a committee of six who negotiated with the Indians for the lands at Weymouth. The committee purchased a title for the land from native chiefs who signed themselves Wampetuc, Nateaunt and Nahawton. This title is recorded among the Suffolk deeds.

John Upham also held the position of selectman, in which capacity he was called upon to "end small causes at Weymouth." (See Glossary: Selectman.) He moved to the town of Malden in 1648 where he also served as selectman. He was active in the affairs of his community until his death in 1682, at the age of eighty-two or eighty-five. There is a discrepancy in his birth date, as he signed the ship's log in 1635 stating that he was thirty-five, and his tombstone states that he was born in 1597.

A tribute written in 1845 by a descendant, Dr. Albert G. Upham, attests to the character of John Upham. Dr. Upham describes the founder of the Upham family in America as a man with energy of character and vigorous intellectual power, serving his country in a time when "fearless piety, integrity and wisdom were regarded as essential to office." Dr. Upham further lauds him as a strong man and respected citizen and an efficient co-worker who in time of peril laid the foundations of a free State.

*NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists c.1598.

Submitted by Mrs. Albert Ferdinand Thomasson

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Albert Ferdinand Thomasson (Sandra Suzanne Jones); Birmingham

Biographies of Our Ancestors

ARMIGER WADE

c. 1615-1677

Armiger Wade was born in England about 1615; he is believed to be the son of Armingall Wade of Bellsizes, near Hampstead, England. His name is the same as the word "armiger," which meant "gentleman," and was a title that passed from father to son, carried rank with it, and indicated possession of a coat of arms. If on any tombstone, old deed or old English charts, the word "armiger" is attached to a name, it indicates with certainty that they bore arms as knights of the first rank. The same is true for the term "esquire," which originally meant the same thing as armiger. The use of "esquire" did not necessarily indicate any great wealth of the bearer, yet those who held it were considered to be more educated. Of course, both terms—armiger and esquire—are considered archaic today in both England and America.

In 1655, Armiger Wade immigrated to America and lived in New Poquoson, York County, Virginia. York County is one of the oldest counties in the United States. The earliest settlements, established around 1625 through 1632, were along the narrow peninsula and the high banks of the York and Poquoson Rivers. Most of the settlers were of English stock and maintained constant contact with new arrivals from England. They also were very connected with the colonial government at Williamsburg. These immigrants faced the usual colonial problems of Indian attacks, lack of supplies, and the ever-present mosquitoes in the marshy lowland area.

Armiger Wade married Elizabeth Moulson, daughter of Edward Moulson and heiress of Moulson of York. To this union was born Dorothy Wade, who married John Lilly; Mary Wade, who married Captain John Hay and has many descendants in the South; Armiger Wade Jr., who married Elizabeth Plover. Elizabeth Moulson Wade died May 15, 1667 in York County.

Wade served as a burgess and justice in York County in 1656. Records show him as witness to numerous deeds, and he is listed on the tax lists. His will was written January 15, 1676/77, and proved on April 24, 1677 in York County. It states the following:

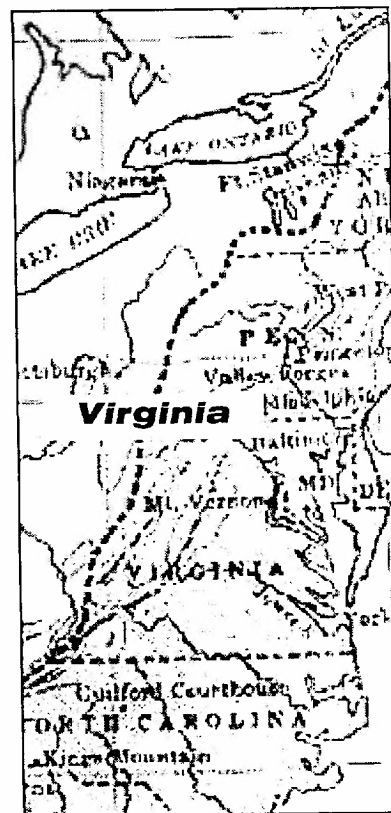
Armiger Wade in the New Poquoson in the County of York. To be buried as near as may be where my wife was laid.

My son Armiger Wade, sole ex'or. My s'd son all my lands situated in the New Poquoson and to his heirs forever, and in default of such issue to the children of my daughter Mary Hay, dec'd and in default of such issue, to the children of my daughter Dorothy Lilly....

Submitted by Mrs. Richard Moore Stimpson

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Marion Strickler Adams III (Laura Sims Yelverton); Mobile
Mrs. Thomas Forress Rayford, Sr. (Louise Haley Yelverton); Mobile
Mrs. Richard Moore Stimpson (Leah Maddox Yelverton); Mobile



SOURCES:

Colonial Cousins, being the history, genealogy, heraldry, homes and traditions of the family of Holloway and related families originating in the original shire of

Charles River, now York County, Virginia, by Garland Evans Hopkins, privately issued in 1940.

Virginia Settlers and English Adventurers, Volume I, by Noel Currier Briggs, published in Baltimore by the Genealogical Publishing Company in 1970.

In Grateful Remembrance **THOMAS WADE**

1720-1786

Thomas Wade of North Carolina was born in Virginia in 1720. Family history recounts that "The progenitor of the Wade family in North Carolina was one of the Lords Proprietor who received lands from the Crown." One grant, for 350 acres, in Surry County, Virginia, on the Nottoway River, was made to him on January 12, 1746, and is the earliest record of his being in America.

Wade is an Anglo-Saxon name, and Thomas Wade was a communicant of the established Church of England. About 1743, he married Jane Boggan, sister of his close friend, Patrick Boggan. They moved to North Carolina about 1747, the year their son George was born in Pitt County. Another son, Joseph, is remembered not only for being captured by the British at the Battle of Camden, but also because he amused them by playing "Yankee Doodle" on his chains.

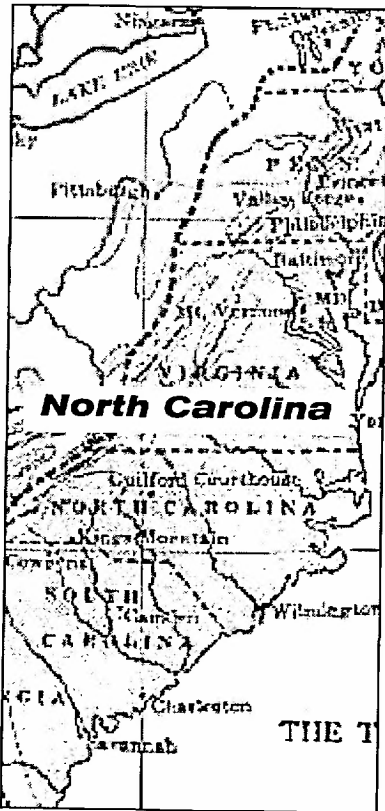
Before putting down permanent roots in North Carolina, Thomas Wade lived in South Carolina for several years. He owned land from 1761 to 1774 on Lynch's Creek, a tributary of the Pee Dee River in Saint David's parish, which bordered the North Carolina line. Early settlers sought prime waterfront sites, as waterways were a principal method of transportation in colonial times. The southern colonies were blessed with wonderful rivers that flowed in a southeasterly direction to the sea.

The first reference to Thomas Wade in Anson County, North Carolina, is in a deed dated August 13, 1765, "from Jerdone Gibson, conveying three hundred acres of land to Thomas Wade of South Carolina." Five years later, he is listed as "an Anson County citizen" in land he deeded to Francis Smith. He settled on the Pee Dee River in the scenic Mount Pleasant area on land adjacent to courthouse property.

Taxation without representation—probably the most famous slogan of the Revolution—never failed to stir men's souls. Feelings against the unjust taxes imposed on the citizens became more bitter and angry in Anson County in the 1760s. "On April 28, 1768, a large number of the Regulators of Anson County marched to the courthouse while the county court was in session, removed the king's magistrates from the bench, took possession of the courthouse, and discussed the injustice and the oppression of the British Crown in which they, and their fellow countrymen were the victims, and by which the county was then distracted." This would have been called a freedom march today. It seems to have been "the first open organized resistance to the oppression of the British Crown in The War of Regulation." This war preceded the Revolution. The petition the Regulators sent to Royal Governor Tyron demanded, for the first time in our country's history, that the people elect county officers. Their petition stated: "We conceive that no people have a right to be taxed, but by the consent of themselves or their delegates." Being fervently dedicated to the cause of liberty, characteristically Thomas Wade presented himself for service.

Thomas Wade became Anson County's outstanding military leader. He was chairman of the meeting of freeholders that convened on August 15, 1774. This body's first adopted resolution was:

Resolved, that it is the opinion of this meeting that the late arbitrary and cruel acts of the British Parliament, and other unconstitutional and oppressive measures of the British Ministry, against the Town and Port of Boston and province of Massachusetts Bay, are no other than the most alarming prelude to that yoke of slavery already manufactured by the said Ministry and by them intended to be laid on all the Inhabitants of British America, and their posterity forever.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

This resolution justified the meeting of freeholders, and delegates were then appointed to attend the convention which met in New Bern August 20-24, 1774. This was "the first representative assemblage that ever met in North Carolina, or America, save by royal authority." At this meeting Thomas Wade was named to the committee of correspondence for Anson County.

The zeal for liberty shown by the Committee of Patriots terrified Jacob Williams, an Anson County Tory planter. He fled and escaped by boarding the British ship *Cruizer* in the Cape Fear River. Later, he swore "to the rough treatment by the committee and that he saw Thomas Wade with a cockade in his hat, enlisting men as fast as he could."

Ever an activist, Thomas Wade was an Anson County delegate to the Provincial Congress of North Carolina, which met at Hillsborough on August 20, 1775. Still in session on September 9th, the congress honored him by making him colonel of the Minutemen of the Salisbury District, which included Anson County.

Only seventy-five days before the Declaration of Independence, the Provincial Congress appointed Thomas Wade and David Love "to receive, procure, and purchase firearms for the use of troops for Anson county." Another responsibility assigned to Colonel Wade by the congress was that of receiving salt for public use. Salt was the source of much trouble during the Revolution, because it was in extremely short supply and hard to obtain. Authorization for receiving it for civilians was made on December 23, 1776. Payment had to be made by April 2, 1777, and civilians receiving salt had to give bonds to pay for it.

To maintain civil government during the war, the North Carolina Congress appointed justices of the peace for the counties, who presided over "Inferior Courts of Pleas and Quarter Sessions." Administering civil government, these courts enforced laws concerning orphans, guardians, wills, deeds, and highways. Thomas Wade was a justice of the peace. Further indication of his popularity, dedication, and competence was his appointment as recruiting officer for Anson County on September 2, 1777, by the council of state.

Colonel Wade commanded about four hundred fifty men at two furious battles against the Tories at Raft Swamp. The first was fought on August 4, 1781, with a patriot victory. The second was fought a month later with a Tory victory.

There was a brutal massacre at Piney Bottom in the vicinity of Rockfish Creek. After Cornwallis had gone north and General Green had left for South Carolina, Colonel Wade and Captain Culp of South Carolina headed for home. En route they suffered devastation and sadness beyond description—a surprise assault at daybreak by two or three hundred Tories who stole their money, plundered their wagons, taking everything they could carry, and brutally murdered an orphan boy who pled for parole before a turncoat. A sword split the orphan's head open. The ambush was an inhumane, dastardly crime, since the Patriots were returning home peaceably, many of their guns having been found unloaded and minus flint.

Shortly after arriving home, Colonel Wade and Captain Culp proceeded with their revenge agenda. They rounded up about a hundred dragoons under Captain Patrick Boggan. They returned to the scene of the Tory massacre, vowing to avenge the death of

In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

Adventures, Cavaliers, Patriots: Ancestors Remembered; "Thomas Wade," by Mrs. Francis R. Donohue, published by The National Society of The Colonial Dames of America in the State of Maryland in 1994.

Colonel Thomas Wade, Distinguished Citizen, Patriot, and Soldier, by W.K. Boggan, published in Wadesboro, NC, c. 1930.

The Old North State in 1776: Revolutionary Incidents and Sketches of Character, by the Reverend Eli W. Carruthers, D.D., published originally in 1854 1856, reprinted in Greensboro, NC, no date. by GCGS Publications.

the murdered boy. They killed some of the Tory leaders and wrecked much of their property before going back home.

During the Revolution, many Tories and Patriots experienced loss of property. Colonel Wade was no exception. In a 1780 letter to Governor Nash, he mentioned losing fifty thousand pounds sterling, plus his crop, which he expected the enemy to destroy when they arrived at his plantation. Nevertheless, he assured Governor Nash that he could be depended upon to do anything to advance the interest of our country.

After the colonies won their independence, Colonel Wade went home to his Pee Dee plantation, but not to a quiet, reflective lifestyle. His knowledge of government policy and his untiring service to his country made him a strong candidate for public office. He won elections to the state senate for the 1782, 1783, 1784, and 1785 sessions.

Also elected for a fifth term, he died in 1786 before taking office. He was buried in the family cemetery. The last document he signed is a deed to his son George dated August 26, 1786. His will, dated July 2, 1786, begins: "First I commit my soul to God, hoping in His infinite mercies, through the merits of our Saviour, a happy resurrection in the life to come." He provided for his wife Jane and for his surviving children. They were Holden, Mary Vining, Thomas, Sarah, and George.

His real estate holdings totaled 8,778 acres in Anson and Richmond counties, North Carolina, and in South Carolina. Included in his real estate were 150 acres in New Town Lands deeded to him by his in-laws, Captain and Mrs. Patrick Boggan, but not recorded. This parcel comprises the present business section of Wadesboro. Shortly after his death on November 18, 1787, the General Assembly legally changed the name of Newton or New Town to Wadesborough, now known as Wadesboro, as a tribute to this distinguished patriot.

Thomas Wade was a tough, in-command, brave soldier, and a public-spirited man utterly dedicated to the cause of liberty.

Submitted by Mrs. Francis R. Donohue

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Rebecca James Baumhauer (Rebecca Capers James); Mobile
Mrs. Francis R. Donohue (Frances Moore James); Maryland Society, NSCDA

CHRISTOPHER WADSWORTH

b. before 1609-1678*

Christopher Wadsworth was born in England and came over in the ship *Lion* that landed in Boston on Sunday, September 16, 1632. The date of his birth is probably 1607, but certainly before 1609. The name of his father is not known for certain, but is thought to have been Thomas, as this name appears in a Bible owned by Christopher about the time he came to America. He was married to Grace Cole and had four children: Samuel, Joseph, Mary, and John.

Wadsworth settled, lived, and died in Duxbury, Massachusetts. His name first appears in records of the town in 1633, and he soon took a prominent position among his townsmen, although described as quite young when he arrived among veteran Pilgrims like Miles Standish, Elder Brewster, and John Alden. He was a deputy of the Plymouth Colony. His property was at Holly Swamp on Duxbury Bay at a place formerly known as Morton's Hole.

Christopher was elected constable of Duxbury, the highest office of the town, a sort of high sheriff position. He served as jailor, took care of prisoners, executed punishments and penalties, and gave notice of marriages approved by the civil authorities. He acted as sealer of weights and measures to insure accuracy in commercial transactions, and surveyor of land. In his oaths of office, he swore loyalty to the king and promised to promote the welfare of his people and see that the peace was not broken.

The will of Christopher Wadsworth was dated July 31, 1677, and was filed in September of the following year, indicating that he died within those fourteen months. He gave his home place to his son John, after making suitable provisions for his wife, Grace. He had held property in Bridgewater, which then included most of Abington and Hanson, since 1644, and his son Samuel had taken up residence there shortly after Wadsworth acquired it. Samuel owned much of the Bridgewater property at his father's death, and the remainder of it, plus some other lands went to Samuel's brother Joseph.

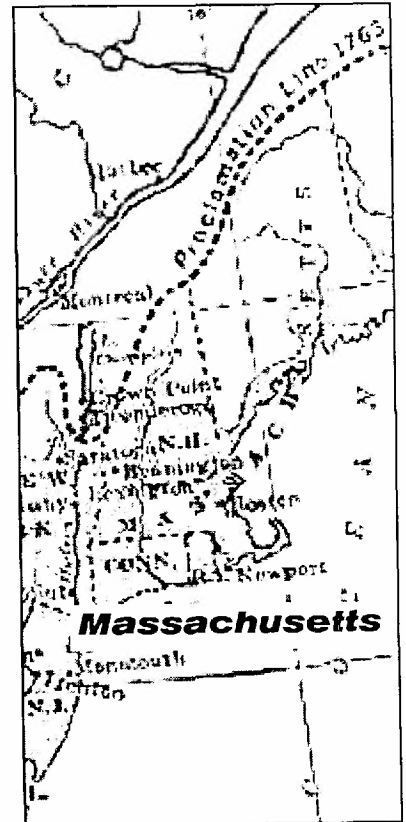
Samuel was killed fighting Indians in Sudbury, Massachusetts, and his son, the Reverend Benjamin Wadsworth, who became the president of Harvard College, erected a monument around 1730 to honor Samuel Wadsworth and others who had died with him. A later granite monument placed by the town of Sudbury now marks the sacred spot.

*The NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1677.

Submitted by Mrs. James Robert Hurt

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Robert Hurt (Jo Beth Smith); Florence
Mrs. Charles David Scott (Vera Ellen Wadsworth); Opelika



SOURCES:

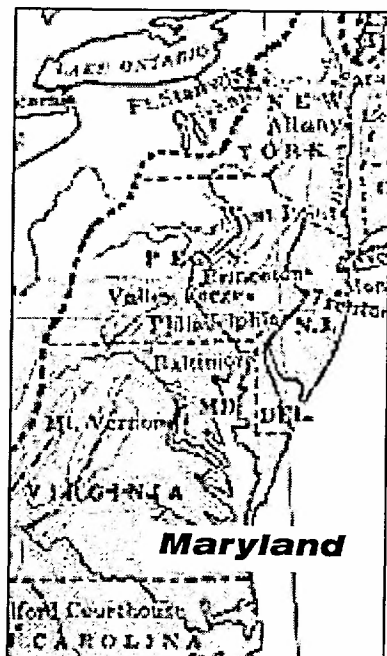
*Moses Wadsworth and Hannah Stevens,
Their Ancestral Lines and Their
Descendants*, by Mary Wadsworth
Jones, reprinted in Salem, MA, by
Higginson Book Company:
www.higginsonbooks.com

*Noted Men and Historical Narrations of
Ancient Milton*, by Albert Kendall
Teale, published in Boston by Press of
David Clapp & Son in 1900.

*Two Hundred and Fifty Years of the
Wadsworth Family in America*, by
Horace Andrew Wadsworth, published
in Lawrence, MA. at the Eagle Steam
Job Printing Room in 1883.

In Grateful Remembrance **NATHANIEL WALLER**

c.1715-1786



Nathaniel Waller was born c.1715 in Somerset County, Maryland, probably at *Parish Plantation*, to Thomas and Mary Waller. He served as captain of the colonial militia of the province of Maryland for the years 1748 and 1749 and possibly other years as well. He married Elizabeth Strawbridge (also spelled Strobridge in some sources) on September 21, 1741. He became the owner of the 211-acre *Swamp Ridge Plantation*, and was a prominent planter in Somerset County and Worcester County, Maryland.

The first of Captain Nathaniel Waller's ancestors to come to America was named John Waller (born in England about 1625), who arrived between 1650 and 1654. He settled in Accomack, Virginia, and married Alice Major in 1660. Several years later, they moved to Somerset County, Maryland. He built a large plantation known as *Waller's Adventure* on Little Monie Creek. This plantation was passed down in the Waller family to several generations of firstborn sons. Captain Nathaniel Waller's father, Thomas, was born at *Waller's Adventure* on February 20, 1696. Thomas's older brother inherited the plantation, and Thomas moved to land near Blackwater Branch, located about four miles west of Delmar. Thomas's land and *Waller's Adventure* both became part of Sussex County, Delaware in 1767 when the Mason-Dixon Line was drawn.

Captain Waller's son, John, served in the Second Maryland Regiment from Frederick County during the American Revolution. He married Elizabeth Rhodes in 1766, and, after spending most of his life in Maryland, moved to Hancock County, Georgia, where he purchased property on Island Creek in 1795. He died there on July 6, 1808.

John and Elizabeth's son, and Captain Nathaniel Waller's grandson, Nathaniel Greene Waller, was the first of the Waller family to migrate to south Montgomery County, Alabama. He was born in Somerset County, Maryland on December 10, 1787, and died in Montgomery County on September 9, 1834. After owning land in Jones County, Georgia, he purchased land in Montgomery County in 1818. He married Annis Gregory of February 13, 1821, and purchased about 483 acres of land southeast of Snowdon between 1829 and 1832. Waller Creek, named after him, still runs through the property. Family legend dubbed Nathaniel Green Waller an "old Indian fighter," possibly a reference to participation in struggles with the Creek Indians.

Captain Nathaniel Waller, as well as his ancestors and descendants, was a strong man who participated actively in the communities in which he lived. The Wallers fought in the Indian Wars and in the American Revolution. They had in common a love of the land, and many of them acquired large farms and were successful planters. They have been described as letting their strong religious beliefs guide their lives and of putting their faith in God.

Submitted by Mrs. Taliaferro Leslie Samuel III

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Albert Randolph Candler (Louise Blackburn); Montgomery
Mrs. Taliaferro Leslie Samuel III (Susan Blackburn Candler); Montgomery

SOURCES:

The Chesapeakers, by Charles S. Waller, Sr., published in La Grange, GA, in 1985.

Colonial Soldiers of the South, 1732-1774, by Murtie J. Clark, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1983.

Colonial Wars, Box 1, Folder 22, Hall of Records, Annapolis, MD.

Waller Family History, a paper compiled by Robert G. McClendon, Jr. in Gainesville, FL, in 1987.

Biographies of Our Ancestors
GEORGE WALTON

c.1690-1764

George Walton was born c.1690 and died after July 7, 1764 in Brunswick County, Virginia. He was married to Elizabeth Rowe, who died after February 12, 1771. Brunswick County's first courthouse was built around 1732 and George, in 1732, was one of the first magistrates of the county court. In 1750, it was "Ordered that George Walton and John Lightfoot be appointed by the Vestry of the said Parrish in the room of Sterling Clack, dec'd, and William Maclin who has been removed out of the said Parrish," according to St. Andrew's Parish Register of Brunswick County. George Walton was also a captain the Virginia militia in 1746 and 1748.

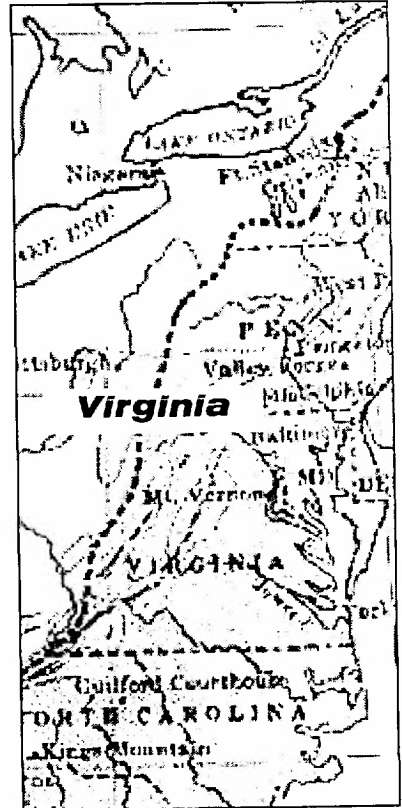
George and Elizabeth had five children: Catherine, who married Nathan Harris; Mary, who married Richard Ledbetter; Isaac Row, who married Elizabeth Ledbetter, sister of Richard; Elizabeth, who married Adam Sims; and John, who married Rebecca (surname unknown).

George had in his possession a Bible that contained a record of his English ancestors, the whereabouts of which is unknown today. His son, John Walton, in his will "lends to my son, George Walton, my great Bible for his lifetime, and after his death I give the same Bible to my grandson John Walton or his assigns."

Submitted by Mrs. James Wallace Tidmore, Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. James Wallace Tidmore, Jr. (Anne Branch Henry); Montgomery



SOURCES:

Adam Symes and His Descendants, by Jane Morris, published in Philadelphia by Dorrance and Company, Publishers, in 1938.

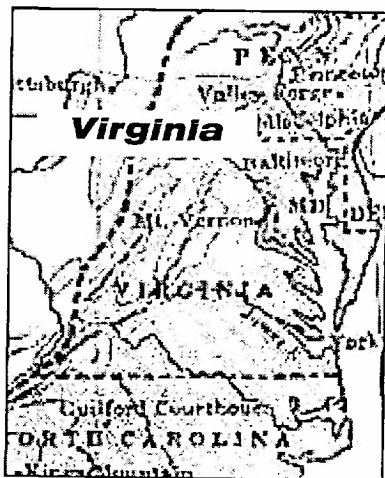
Deed Book 14 (1780-1790), Brunswick County, VA, by Carol A. Morrison, published in Fayetteville, NC.

Early Settlers of Alabama, by James Saunders, originally published in New Orleans, LA, by L. Graham & Son, Printers, in 1899, reprinted in Tuscaloosa, AL, by Willo Publishing Company in 1961.

William and Mary College Quarterly, Volume 15.

In Grateful Remembrance **HENRY WARE**

c.1719*-1801



SOURCES:

Colonial Caroline: A History of Caroline County, Virginia, by T. E. Campbell, published in Williamsburg, VA, by Omohundro Institute of Early American History and Culture in 1955.

Georgia Citizens and Soldiers of the American Revolution, by Robert Scott Davis, published by Southern Historical Press in 1999.

Georgia's Roster of Service of the Revolutionary War, by Lucien Lamar Knight, first printed in Atlanta in 1920, reprinted with new material in 1997 by Southern Historical Press.

A History of Caroline County, Virginia, by Marshall Wingfield, edited by T.E. Campbell, published in Baltimore, MD, by Regional Publishing Company in 1924, reprinted by Genealogical Publishing Company in 2005.

Revolutionary Families of Georgia, Volumes II and III, by Allen D. Candler, printed in Atlanta in 1908.

Wilder and Connecting (especially Ware) Families in the Southeastern United States, by William M. Wilder, originally printed in 1951, reprinted in 1969.

Will Book "B" (1746-1808), Lincoln County, Georgia

Records of Gloucester County, Virginia mention several different Wares as far back as the early 1600s. Henry Ware was born in Gloucester County, Virginia, around 1719 or thereabouts, probably the son of Nicholas Ware. In 1735, he married Martha Garrett, the daughter of John Garrett, who was his good friend. Henry Ware was an executor of John Garrett's will, and the two bought land in Edgefield, South Carolina, where they would later move.

From Gloucester County, Henry Ware moved to Caroline County, sometime before 1762, when he became a lieutenant in the colonial militia of Caroline. He was considered "minor gentry," as he was a small landowner and farmer. He bought and sold parcels of land containing several hundred acres or less. In 1771 he was promoted to captain in the militia.

Both Henry and his son, James, were Baptists that became part of the religious protestant movement of the 1730s and 1740s known as The Great Awakening. Although the movement was initiated by a Presbyterian minister, William Tennent, and his four minister sons (the five were the founders of Princeton University), one of the early leaders was a Congregationalist (Pilgrim) minister named Jonathan Edwards. He and other evangelical leaders preached extemporaneous sermons that were heartfelt and emotional and that urged their followers to trust their hearts, rather than their heads, to prize feeling more than thinking, and to rely on biblical revelation rather than human reasoning. James Ware was swept up into the movement and preached a public sermon at James Pittman's tavern in Caroline County. It was a brave and revolutionary act because, despite the Religious Toleration Act of 1772, Baptists were not allowed to assemble in anything resembling a church; they gathered in private homes. James Ware was arrested and jailed for sixteen days, during which time he refused to accept bail, preferring instead to make himself an example of British religious intolerance. Finally his influential friends persuaded the royal governor, Lord Dunmore, to pardon him on terms he could accept.

Sometime during 1773, the Henry Ware family of husband, wife, four sons, and three daughters, moved to Edgefield to the property he, with John Garrett, had purchased earlier. During the Revolutionary War, Henry raised a company of soldiers, known as the Sumter Brigade, which included his sons Robert, Nicholas, James, and Henry Jr. All the Wades fought courageously, with Henry as their captain, and all were rewarded with bounty land in that part of Wilkes County, Georgia, that later became Lincoln County. It was in Wilkes County in 1776 that Henry Ware registered his cattle brand.

**NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1730, although this would be incorrect if he married in 1735.*

Submitted by Mrs. Samuel Alexander Sommers

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Samuel Alexander Sommers, Jr. (Carol Louise Orr); Selma

Miss Margaret Elizabeth Tripp; Birmingham

Mrs. Robin Adair Wade, III (Jeanette Louise Sommers); Birmingham

Mrs. George Frederick Wheelock, III (Frances Caroline Sommers); Birmingham

AUGUSTINE WARNER II

1642–1681

Augustine Warner I, born in Norwich, England, in 1610, was one of the first Virginia immigrants to come to the New World. He departed England in 1628 aboard the ship *Hopewell*. Seven years later, in 1635, Augustine Warner I received the earliest known land grant in Gloucester County, Virginia, 250 acres in Charles River County (later York County), described as “one neck of ground called by the name of Pynie Neck... for the transporting at his own expense of five persons.” He continued to receive grants for the transport of persons, with his last recorded grant being for 10,100 acres across the Severn River in 1672. He married Mary Townley, who immigrated to Virginia in 1638. On July 3, 1642, Mary gave birth to their second child and only son, Augustine Warner II.

By the 1650s, Augustine Warner I had expanded his holdings to thousands of acres located on the north side of the Severn River. He named his impressive plantation house, built in the 1670s, *Warner Hall*. During these years, Augustine Warner I became increasingly active politically. He was named speaker of the Gloucester County House of Burgesses, and also became a captain in the Virginia militia. He was a member of the King’s Council of the Royal Governor of Virginia until his death in 1674.

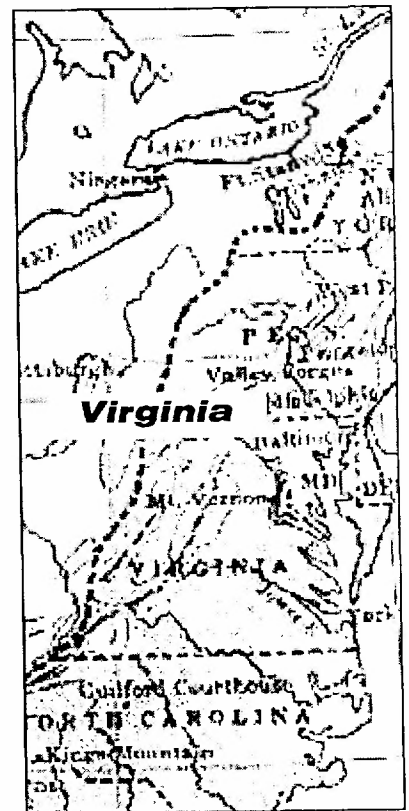
Upon his father’s death, Augustine Warner II inherited *Warner Hall*, which commanded extensive views of land and water and was one of the most famous plantation houses in Virginia. He married Mildred Reade, daughter of George Reade, founder of Yorktown. Like his father, Augustine II was speaker of the House of Burgesses; his term was in 1676. He was also a member of the King’s Council from 1677 to 1681 and a colonel in the militia in 1680.

When Augustine Warner II died in 1681, he left three daughters. Mary, the eldest, became the wife of John Smith of Purton, on the York. Mildred, the second daughter, married Lawrence Washington of Westmoreland. (Her three Washington children were John, Mildred, and Augustine. Augustine Washington married Mary Ball; their son was George Washington, the first president of the United States. He was named for his great-great-grandfather, George Reade.)

Elizabeth, the third daughter of Augustine Warner II and Mildred Reade Warner, became the wife of John Lewis, and it was she who inherited *Warner Hall*. For generations the Lewises lived there. Colonel Fielding Lewis, grandson of Elizabeth and John Lewis, was born there. He married Catherine Washington, and after her death, married Elizabeth Washington, sister of George Washington.

Much of the Warner family history is centered in the house built by Augustine Warner I in the 1670s. *Warner Hall* survived damage and destruction from several fires, and remained in the ownership of the Warner family until the twentieth century, when it was purchased and restored to reflect the original structure and design of the seventeenth century.

Warner Hall is historically significant as the home of George Washington’s great-great-grandfather, Augustine Warner I, as well as his grandfather, Augustine Warner II, both of whom are buried in the family cemetery there. Queen Elizabeth II is a direct descendant of Augustine Warner I through the Bowes-Lyon family and the Earl of Strothmore. *Warner Hall* is referred to as the home of the Queen’s American ancestors. Queen Elizabeth II has visited Gloucester, where she placed a wreath on her ancestor’s grave.



In Grateful Remembrance

SOURCES:

The primary sources were the websites
[http://www.bigballoonmusic.com/
goddardreagan/WarnerHall.html](http://www.bigballoonmusic.com/goddardreagan/WarnerHall.html)
and [http://home1.gte.net/mimieric/
Augustine.html](http://home1.gte.net/mimieric/Augustine.html)

These two websites drew on
the following:

Landmarks Gloucester County, Virginia
@

[http://www.dhr.virginia.gov/register/
register.htm](http://www.dhr.virginia.gov/register/register.htm)

Kenmore and the Lewises, by Jane
Taylor Duke, published in Garden
City, NY, by Doubleday & Company in
1949.

*Lewis of Warner Hall: The History of a
Family*, by Merrow Egerton Sorley,
originally published in 1935, reprint-
ed in Baltimore, MD, by Genealogical
Publishing Company in 1979, 1991,
2000.

Lewises, Meriwethers, and Their Kin, by
Sarah Travers Lewis (Scott)
Anderson, originally published in
1938, reprinted in Baltimore by
Genealogical Publishing Company in
2008.

*Old Virginia Houses, The Mobjack Bay
Company*, by Emmie Ferguson Farrar,
published in New York by Bonanza
Books in 1955.

*Virginia Magazine of History and
Biography, Volumes 77 and 81*, pub-
lished in Richmond, VA, by the
Virginia Historical Society in 1969
and 1973.

Visit to Warner Hall and Its Graveyard,
by Eric Erland of the National Park
Service, made in August 2000.

*Warner Hall Plantation and Its
Graveyard*, by Leighton Hurley, a visit
made in 1993.

In the year 2000, *Warner Hall* was converted to an elegant inn. The Inn at Warner Hall is as close as the internet (www.warnerhall.com) and is within a thirty-minute drive from Colonial Williamsburg, Yorkstown, and Jamestown. The Warner family footprint is still in Virginia.

Submitted by Mrs. James Gorman Houston Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. James Gorman Houston Jr. (Martha Martin); Montgomery

Mrs. William Anderson Legg, Jr. (Sally Drane Smith); Birmingham

Mrs. Maury Drane Smith (Lucile West Martin); Montgomery

Biographies of Our Ancestors

THOMAS WARREN

c.1621-1670

Thomas Warren was born around 1621 in Ripple Parrish, County Kent, England, and apparently migrated to Virginia with his cousin, Daniel Gookin, Jr., on the latter's return voyage to America. He was in Surry County, Virginia before February 3, 1640, where he settled at Smith's Fort Plantation, and he became a planter. He served in the House of Burgesses beginning on October 1, 1644 at the early age of twenty-two.

Thomas Warren was married three times. The first wife's name is unknown, but they married before September 1644. He had a son, William, and a daughter, Alyce or Alice, by her. His second wife was Elizabeth Spencer Sheppard, a widow, whom he married on September 23, 1645, by which he was "to have and enjoy all the estate of Major Robert Sheppard, deceased, now in the possession of his relict, with certain exceptions." The contract, recorded November 9, 1654 after the marriage, further provided that on September 26, 1656, Mr. Warren should give to Anne, John, Robert, and Will Sheppard certain horses and cows and to Priscilla and Susanna Sheppard their full share of their father's estate. Elizabeth Warren died between 1655 and 1658. Thomas married a third time to Jane, widow of John King. Thomas died before April 21, 1670 in Surry County, Virginia. He left a will, now lost, dated sometime between March 16, 1669/70 and April 21, 1670. Thomas had a son, Thomas Jr., born of his third wife January 9, 1659/60.

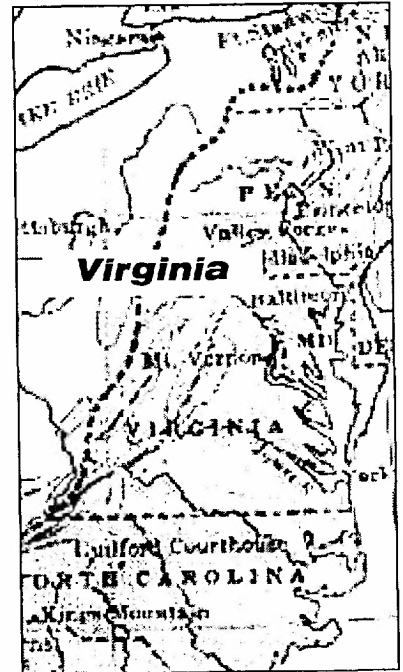
He built his house about 1651-1652 at Smith's Fort Plantation on land purchased from Thomas Rolfe, son of John Rolfe and his wife, Princess Pocahontas. *Warren House* now belongs to the Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities, a gift from John D. Rockefeller Jr., who restored the house. *Warren House* is thought to be the oldest house in Virginia to which a definite date can be assigned. The present *Warren House*, which is not the original, is thought to have been constructed on the foundation of the one built by Thomas Warren. This house is still standing.

Thomas Warren, born about 1621, was probably one of the Poynton Warrens, as many of that family were Royalists, and suffered severely at the hands of Cromwell.

Submitted by Mrs. Edward Lamar Williamson and Mrs. John Matthews Ennis

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. John Matthews Ennis (Lorraine Gaston); Huntsville
Mrs. William Michael Murphy (Mary Lamar Riley); Rochester, New York
Mrs. James William Riley II (Mary Mattheson Williamson); Greenville
Mrs. William Turner Goodloe Rutland (Clara Ann Martin); Birmingham
Mrs. Douglas S. Sutherland (Lucy Matthews Ennis); Huntsville
Mrs. Edward Lamar Williamson (Ethel Jackson); Greenville



SOURCES:

A History and Genealogy of the Gookin Family of England, Ireland and America, compiled by Richard N. Gookin, published by R.N. Gookin in Salem, OR, in 1983 and reissued in 1987.

History of the Warren Family, A.D. 912-1902, by Rev. Thomas Warren, published in Henley-on-Thames, Oxfordshire, England, by Gresham Press in 1902, republished in 1982.

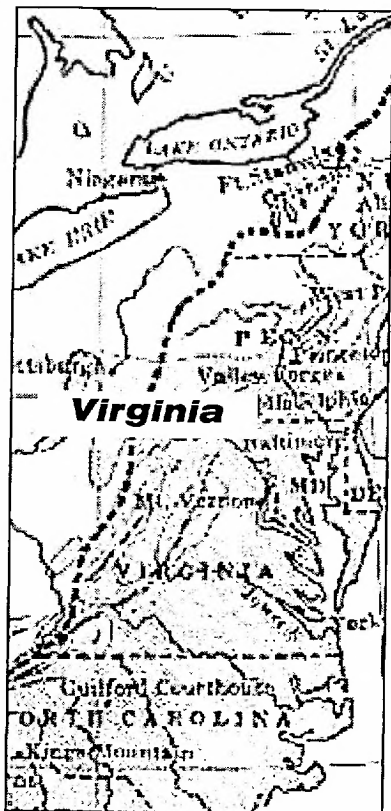
Historical Southern Families, Volume XVII, by John Bennett Boddie and Mrs. John Bennett Boddie, originally published in Baltimore, MD, by Clearfield Company in 1973, reissued in 1994.

Journals of the House of Burgesses of Virginia 1619-1658/9, edited by H.R. McIlwaine, published in Richmond, VA, in 1915.

Journal of the Grand Assembly, 23rd day of October, 1666, "Of History Biography xvii."

In Grateful Remembrance **LAWRENCE WASHINGTON**

1659-1697



Lawrence Washington's story goes back to 16th century England where his ancestor, another Lawrence Washington, settled in Northamptonshire and built Sulgrave Manor in 1539. His descendants lived at the manor for the next 120 years. Lawrence's great-great-grandson, Colonel John Washington, immigrated to the colonies in 1656. This American line of the family produced George Washington, the first president of the United States of America.

Sulgrave Manor, located about thirty miles from both Stratford-upon-Avon and Oxford, is today, as the ancestral home of George Washington, a Museum Property of the National Society of The Colonial Dames of America, and serves as a venue for concerts, historical and educational presentations, theatrical productions, living history days and food festivals. The Manor is jointly owned, as it was presented by a group of British subscribers to the Peoples of Great Britain and the United States in 1914 to celebrate one hundred years of peace between the two nations. The NSCDA Sulgrave Board works with the board of Sulgrave Manor in England to raise funds for property upkeep and interpretative programs for visitors. A major attraction for the British as well as for the Americans, Sulgrave Manor is annually visited by more than thirty thousand people, including over eleven thousand school children.

The emigrant John Washington's first wife died shortly after their marriage, and he married again, this time to Anne, daughter of Lieutenant Colonel Nathaniel Pope of The Cliffs, an early settlement on the northern neck of Virginia near the Potomac. The wedding present from his father-in-law was a seven-hundred-acre estate at Mattox Creek, where their eldest son Lawrence was born in 1659.

Lawrence, who was to become the grandfather of George Washington, married Mildred Warner, daughter of fellow colonist Augustine Warner. Lawrence Washington's colonial service includes the offices of court justice and sheriff, as well as Burgess for Westmoreland County (1684-1686, 1691 and 1692) and membership in the General Assembly of Virginia. He also achieved the rank of major in the militia.

Lawrence Washington died in 1697, leaving his wife and three children: John, who was nearly seven; Augustine, aged three; and Mildred, who was a baby. The widow Mildred then married George Gayle, who moved the family back to England. When Mildred died in 1701, Lawrence's cousin, John Washington, successfully petitioned the courts for guardianship of the young Washingtons and returned them to Virginia in 1704.

Lawrence's son, Augustine, came of age in 1715 with an estate of seventeen hundred acres and married Jane Butler, who died after they had produced four children. After Jane's death in 1729, Augustine married Mary Ball of Epping Forest, Lancaster County, Virginia. They had six children: George (1732-1799), Betty (1733-1797), Samuel (1734-1781), John Augustine (1736-1787), Charles (1738-1799), and Mildred (1739-1740). Their oldest son, George, would become the first president of the new United States of America.

Submitted by Mrs. Robert Houston Young Jr.

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Edgar Poe Russell, Jr. (Dora Wilkinson); Selma

SOURCES:

Kenmore and the Lewises, by John Taylor Duke, published in Garden City, NY, by Doubleday & Company in 1949.

The Pedigree and History of the Washington Family, by Albert Welles, published in New York in 1879.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JOHN WEBSTER

1590-1661

John Webster, the child of Matthew and Elizabeth Ashton Webster, was born in 1590 in Crossington, Leicestershire, England. In 1609, he married Agnes Smith; they had five children before they immigrated to New England and had two more after they arrived and settled in Watertown, Massachusetts in the early 1630s.

The Webster family moved to Hartford, Connecticut in 1636 and was one of the original landholders of Hartford, which is evidenced by the fact that John owned a lot on the east side of the thoroughfare now known as Government Street. He was a member of the committee that sat with the court of magistrates of the colony of Connecticut in 1637 and 1638, and became an assistant to the general court of the colony of Connecticut in 1639. As an assistant, he was one of a small group of men who were second in power only to the governor, the deputy governor, and the general chief of magistrates. He traveled to towns in Connecticut as a judge, helped create criminal laws for the colony, settled land and boundary disputes, helped the New England Congress supply Connecticut towns with soldiers and ammunition for an expedition against the Indians, and surveyed the highway from Hartford to Windsor. Webster became a commissioner to the United Colonies of New England in 1654.

The colony of Connecticut elected him deputy governor in 1655 and governor in 1656. Elections were held annually, and it was believed that no man should serve a term of more than one year, but John Webster was elected to a third year in public office; he became chief magistrate in 1657.

John Webster was one of the leading members of the First Congregational Church of Hartford. When the dynamic minister, the Reverend Thomas Hooker, died in 1647, a controversy arose in the church as to who should be his successor. The Reverend Samuel Stone, Hooker's assistant, was supported by the majority of the parishioners, but he wanted to make significant liberal changes in church procedures, and a dispute ensued. He was elected, and the congregation split. As there was no separation of church and state, the issue became political.

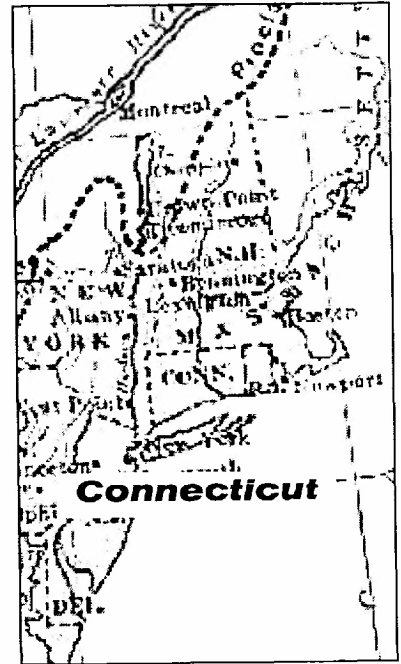
In 1659, the former Governor Webster left Hartford for Massachusetts with a group of dissenters known as the Hadley Company. Webster was a leader and was given the responsibility for laying out the roads for the company. He and his family went first to Northampton, Massachusetts, and later to Hadley, where he was made a magistrate in 1660. Webster died there of a fever less than a year later and is buried in Hadley.

The historian C. Warren Hollister speaks of Webster as an "honored name," and as one "whose virtues are still perpetuated in those who inherit his blood." The most famous of Governor Webster's many descendants was Noah Webster (1758-1843), great American lexicographer and patriot and author of *The American Dictionary of the English Language*.

Submitted by Mrs. Will Hill Tankersley

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. William Russell Buster (Betty June Burke); Selma
Mrs. John Randolph Matthews Jr. (Caroline Davidson Ball); Montgomery
Miss Theda Ball Tankersley; Montgomery
Mrs. Will Hill Tankersley (Theda Clark Ball); Montgomery

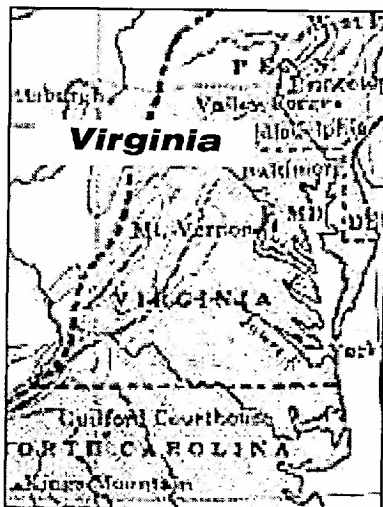


SOURCES:

Connecticut state library at:
www.cslib.org/gov/websterj.htm
The West Transformed: A History of Western Civilization, Volume B, 1300-1815 (West Transformed), by Warren Hollister, Sears McGee, and Gale Stokes, published in New York by Harcourt College Publishing in 1999.

In Grateful Remembrance **GOVERNOR JOHN WEST**

1590-1659



SOURCES:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-1624/5), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.

"Cockacoeske, Queen of Pamunkey: Diplomat and Suzerain," by Martha W. McCartney, in *Powhatan's Mantle: Indians in the Colonial Southeast*, by Gregory Waselkov, Peter H. Wood, and Thomas N. Hatley, editors, published in Lincoln, NE, by the University of Nebraska Press in 2007.

The Noble Lineage of the Delaware-West Family of Virginia, by Ann Woodward Fox, published in Memphis, TN, by an unknown publisher in 1958.

The Powhatan Indians of Virginia: Their Traditional Culture, by Helen C. Rountree, published in Norman, OK, by the University of Oklahoma Press in 1989.

Virginia Immigrants and Adventurers 1607-1635, by Martha W. McCartney, published in Baltimore by Genealogical Publishing Company in 2007.

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_West_\(Governor\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_West_(Governor))

Born in Hampshire, England, John West, governor of Virginia, 1635-1637, was the twelfth child and fifth son of Sir Thomas West, Second Baron De La Warr (Lord Baltimore), and Lady Anne Knollys. His godfathers were Sir John Norreys and Mr. John Foskin; his godmothers, a Mrs. Scudamore and a Mrs. Ratcliff.

At Magdalen College, Oxford, on December 1, 1613, he received the degree of Bachelor of Arts; that same year he married Lady Anne Percy, daughter of Sir George Percy and Anne Floyd. Five years later, as an investor in the Virginia Company, he and Anne, along with his brother, Thomas (the third Baron De La Warr), set sail for Virginia on the *Bonny Bess* and settled at West Point, undoubtedly named for his family. Among the first to patent lands for settlement on the York River, by 1632 John West was established in his plantation known first as *E.D. Plantation*, and later as *Bellefield*. His son, John was born in 1632, the first child of European descent born on the York River.

John West was elected a burgess from the "Plantations over the Water" in 1628 and from the "Other Side of the Water" in 1629-1630. He was a member of the colonial council from 1630-1659, and served as a justice for York County in 1634.

In 1650, John West sold *Bellefield* to Edward Digges and began building a house on his plantation of about three thousand acres, located at the confluence of the Mattaponi and Pamunkey Rivers where they flow into and form the York River, on the site of the present town of West Point, Virginia. In 1655, he settled into the new house, *Port Richmond West*. Over the next several years, he bought and sold several tracts of land in Prince William and Gloucester Counties. Most of his land was granted to him for bringing new settlers into Virginia on his ships at fifty acres per family.

John West was appointed crown governor of Virginia on May 17, 1635, upon the expulsion of Sir John Harvey. (A crown governor administered the interests of the English monarch; they came after the proprietary governors, whose concern had been for the interest of the Virginia Company, a joint stock corporation charged with the settlement of Virginia.) Two of John's brothers had preceded him in the office: Thomas West had served as proprietary governor in 1610-1611, and Francis West had been a crown governor in 1627-1629.

When his term as governor was over in 1637, King Charles II commissioned John West muster-master-general of the colony, which was a salaried position that had to do with maintaining readiness in the military.

It was at *Port Richmond West* that John West died in 1659. In March of 1660, the House of Burgesses passed a resolution of good will, which reads:

In recognition of the many important favors and services rendered to the country of Virginia by the noble family of West, predecessors of Mr. John West [the son], their now only survivor...it is ordered that the levies of the said Master West and his family be remitted, and that he be exempt from payment thereof during life.

Submitted by Mrs. Howard Crumpton Oliver

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Mary Anna Ezell (Mary Anna Walthall); Tuscaloosa
Mrs. Howard Crumpton Oliver (Ann Gray Coleman); Minter

Biographies of Our Ancestors

HENRY WHITING

c.1650-1728

Early records for Gloucester County, Virginia no longer exist, having been destroyed by fire during Bacon's Rebellion of 1676 (See Glossary: Bacon's Rebellion), so Henry Whiting's exact birth and death dates are not known. He was definitely the son of James and Ann Whiting, and was probably born around 1650. He married twice; the first time was to Apphia Bushrod, with whom he had one son, Henry. The second marriage was to Elizabeth Beverley, with whom he had four children—Frances, Thomas, Elizabeth, and Catherine. They owned *Elmington* on the North River, and one of their daughters was married there to John Clayton, the famous botanist.

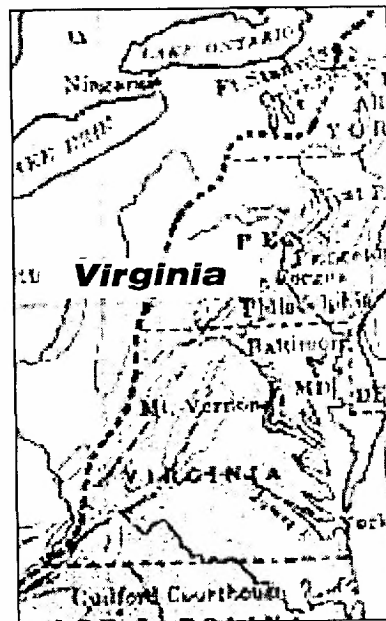
The fact that Henry was actually "Doctor" Whiting is gleaned from the fact that, in records that escaped burning, he is referred to by that title. He "obtained a judgment in the amount of forty pounds sterling on September 22, 1671, against the estate of Thomas Perry, for having cured 'said Perry's wife of a distemper.'"

Other extant records reveal that he was vestryman and church warden of Ware Parish, Gloucester County, in 1674; justice of the peace and major of horse (in the militia) in 1680; burgess from Gloucester in 1680-1682 and 1684; member of the King's Council, 1691-1693, serving as treasurer of that body from July 5, 1692 to November 18, 1693. He was very active in the House of Burgesses, consulting with the governor in much the same way as modern speechwriters would, helping to plan his addresses to the King and the King's Council.

Submitted by Mrs. William Ernest Drew Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. William Ernest Drew Jr. (Perrin Bestor Bacon); Mobile
Mrs. Henry Crawford Slaton Jr. (Mary Hunter Turner); Mobile



SOURCES:

Adventurers of Purse and Person: Virginia (1607-1624/5), edited by John Frederick Dorman, published in Richmond, VA, by The Order of the First Families of Virginia, Deitz Press, in 2007.

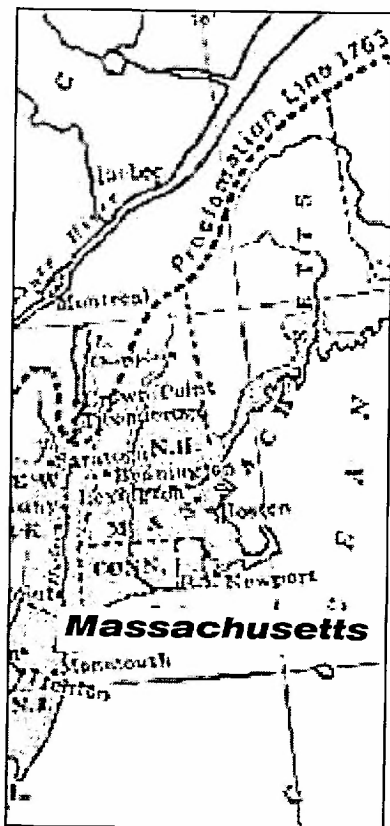
The Colonial Virginia Register: A list of Governors, Councillors, and Other Higher Officials, and also of Members of the House of Burgesses, and the Revolutionary Conventions of the Colony of Virginia, compiled by William Glover and Mary Newton Standard, published in Albany, NY, by Joel Munsell's Sons, Publishers, in 1902.

Journal of House of Burgesses, Volume II, 1659-1693, edited by Henry R. McIlwaine, published in Wilmington, DE, by Scholarly Resources in 1985.

With Reverence for the Past: Gloucester, by Martha McCartney, published in Richmond, VA, by the Gloucester 350th Celebration Corporation in 2001.

In Grateful Remembrance **SIMON WILLARD**

1605-1676



Simon Willard was born in the parish of Horsmonden, Kent County, England in 1605. His baptism is duly recorded in the parish register for that year: "*The vijth day of Aprill Simon Willarde sonne of Richard Willarde was christened, Edward Alchine, Rector.*"

His first marriage was to Mary Sharpe, also of Horsmonden, and they sailed to Cambridge, Massachusetts in 1634. Simon and Mary Sharpe had nine children, six of whom lived to adulthood. After Mary's death in 1643, Simon married Elizabeth Dunster, daughter of the Reverend Henry Dunster, president of Harvard College. She died about six months after their marriage, and Simon married her cousin, Mary Dunster, within a year. Simon and Mary Dunster produced eight children. This colonist certainly did his part in populating the New World, to quote from *Sketch of the Life of Major Simon Willard*, published in 1879: "Of the Major's large family, all the sons, nine in number, and five of his eight daughters arrived at mature age, were married, and had issue. The number of his descendants in the eighth generation has been carefully calculated at 239,057." The current number is only to be imagined.

Over the forty-two years he lived in Massachusetts, Simon Willard was influential and active in the life of the colony through civil, military and ecclesiastical involvement. For thirty-seven years he was a member of the general court, clerk of the writs for nineteen, surveyor of arms, deputy, or representative for fifteen years and commissioner in numerous special cases. He served as superintendent of the fur trade with the Indians and worked to convert the Indians to Christianity. In 1653 he was elected sergeant-major of the county of Middlesex, making him second in command of all military forces of the colony.

Historian John Fiske gives an account of "the gallant" Major Simon Willard, who, in August of 1775, led a force of forty-seven men in battle to rescue the town of Brookfield from three hundred Indians led by King Philip himself (See Glossary: King Philip's War). Major Willard's forces drove the Indians into a swamp ten miles away and saved the town. Willard was, at this time, in the seventieth year of his life.

Colonial history and his own correspondence bear witness that Simon Willard was a deeply religious man possessing a humble and earnest spirit, a man of conviction and courage, vigorous in all that he undertook. When he died in 1676 at age seventy-one, he had been looking forward to civic life as a judge and continued military involvement fighting the enemies of the colony.

SOURCES:

Fifty Puritan Ancestors, by Elizabeth Todd Nash, published in New Haven, CT, by Tuttle, Moorehouse, and Taylor Company in 1902.

Sketch of the Life of Major Simon Willard, by D.H. Willard, published in Cincinnati, OH, by Press of Robert Clark & Co., in 1879.

Submitted by: Mrs. John Morgan Kettig

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. John Morgan Kettig (Katherine Barrow Hiden); Birmingham
Mrs. Barrow Gore Ryding (Katherine Barrow Gore); Birmingham

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JOHN WILLIAMS

1736-1795

Joseph John Williams, the son of Captain Nicholas Williams, was born in Isle of Wight (later named Southampton) County, Virginia, about 1736. In May, 1767, he married Mrs. Frances (Franky) Bustin Slatter, a widow with three children. She was the daughter of William Bustin Jr. of Norfolk County, Virginia, and widow of Joel Slatter. She and John Williams had one son, Nicholas, and seven daughters, known as the "Famous Seven Williams Sisters": Mary Ann (Polley); Elizabeth Ellen (Ellin); Sallie (Salley); Frances (Fanny); Martha; Lucy, and Rebecca. Franky Williams died sometime before September 1794, one year before her husband, who died in 1795.

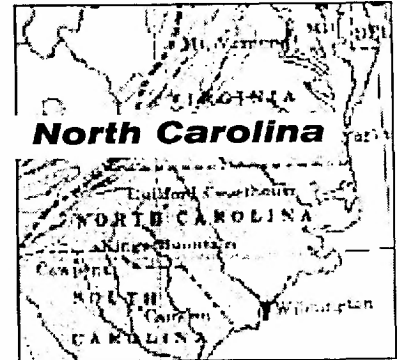
Before John and Franky Williams married in 1767, he had moved to Halifax County, North Carolina, where he accumulated 1,790 acres by 1797, with additional holdings of 2,632 acres in adjoining Nash County.

Joseph John Williams was a lieutenant in the second regiment of the North Carolina militia from the Hillsboro District. He obtained the rank of major with its concurrent duties with the regimental commissary during the Revolutionary War. At the Halifax Provincial Congress in April 1776, he was one of twelve members of the council of safety. He was a member of the Assembly in 1776 and a major in the Continental Army.

Submitted by Mrs. Lucinda Samford Cannon

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Lucinda Samford Cannon (Lucinda Moore Samford); Opelika
Mrs. Aileen Samford Walpole (Aileen Maxwell Samford); John's Island, South Carolina



SOURCES:

Alabama: A Social and Economic History of a State, by Marie Bankhead Owen, published in Montgomery, AL, by Dixie Book Company, Inc., in 1938.

Drake-Arrington, White-Turner, Linn-Brown and Two Dozen Related Lines, by Jo White Linn, privately published in Salisbury, NC, 1984.

Halifax County, North Carolina Deed Book
Halifax County, North Carolina Will Book

Historical Sketches of North Carolina, by John Hill Wheeler (originally published in 1851 and reprinted in Baltimore, MD, by Regional Publishing Company in 1964.

Historical Southern Families, Volumes I and VI, by John Bennett Boddie and Mrs. John Bennett Boddie, originally published in Baltimore, MD, by Clearfield Company in 1973, reissued in 1994.

Marriage and Death Notices in Raleigh Register and North Carolina State Gazette, 1826-1845, by Carrie L. Broughton, originally published by the North Carolina State Library in 1942-1947, reprinted in Baltimore, MD, by Genealogical Publishing Company in 2005.

Nash County, North Carolina Deed Book
Southampton County, Virginia, Will Book

Original tax lists in the Search Room,
North Carolina Department of
Cultural Resources

In Grateful Remembrance **ROGER WILLIAMS**

c.1603*-1683

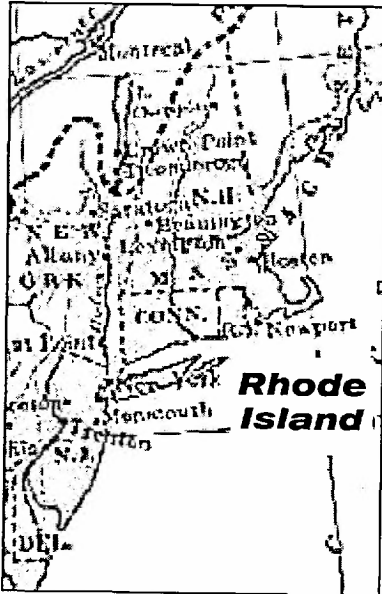
Roger Williams, founder of Providence, Rhode Island, was born in London, England, around 1603. He was one of the four children of James Williams, merchant tailor, and his wife, Alice. Little is known of Roger Williams's early history except that he attracted the attention of Sir Edward Coke, chief justice of the King's Bench, with his skill in taking down sermons and long speeches in shorthand. He was sent by the great lawyer to Sutton Hospital in 1621, now known as the Charterhouse School. According to the school's custom with capable students, he received a modest allowance that enabled him to further his education at Pembroke Hall in Cambridge University, where he received the degree of A.B. in 1627. He had a talent for languages, mastering Latin, Greek, Hebrew, French, and Dutch.

He took orders in the Church of England, and in 1629 accepted the post of chaplain to Sir William Masham at his manor house at Otes in Essex. There he met Mary Barnard, a member of Lady Masham's household and thought to be the daughter of the Reverend Richard Barnard of Nottinghamshire. Roger Williams and Mary Barnard were married at High Laver Church in Essex on December 15, 1629. However, sometime within the following year, he found that he could not agree with the current archbishop's rigorous (and high church) administration, leading Williams to eventually become a Separatist (a radical Puritan).

On December 1, 1630, he and his wife boarded the ship *Lyon*, sailing for New England and freedom of religious expression. After fifty-seven days of a storm-wracked voyage, they anchored off Nantasket on February 3, 1631, and arrived in Boston on the 5th. His arrival was noted in the carefully-kept diary of Governor John Winthrop. Although offered a position with a congregation in Boston, he declined, saying that he would not serve a church that recognized the Church of England; the Bostonians were appalled, and he removed himself and family to Plymouth, where he was welcomed by the Pilgrims there, and became a member of the church.

During his two years in Plymouth, Williams made it his business to get to know the Native Americans. His interest in and respect for them resulting in lasting friendships. However, he found himself in trouble when he began protesting that the King of England had no right to give away Indian land, nor could the Massachusetts Bay authorities force religious uniformity upon its colonists. He was banished in 1635 from Massachusetts and threatened with deportation if he did not stop speaking out. He not only continued airing his views, but his following among the colonists grew rapidly. He was forced to go into hiding with his Indian friends, temporarily abandoning his wife and baby daughters, when the authorities sent a party to capture and deport him.

The Indians provided him with property on the Moshassuck River, where he established the settlement that would become Providence, Rhode Island, so named for "the many Providences of the Most Holy and Only Wise." The colony he founded, Rhode Island, was in the form of a pure democracy, where the will of the majority governed the state. No one was refused admittance because of his religious convictions or practice. It became a haven for Quakers, Jews, and others fleeing persecution. In 1639, Roger Williams joined the Baptist faith and founded the first Baptist church in America. However, within a few months, he withdrew from that group, famously remarking that "God is too large to be housed under one roof."



Biographies of Our Ancestors

Because of his knowledge of and acceptance by the Indians, Roger Williams was frequently called upon to mediate between the colonist governments and the native American governments. On a voyage to England in 1643, he wrote his *Key to the Indian Languages*.

The purpose of the 1643 trip to England was to obtain a charter that united Providence with the settlements of Warwick, Newport, and Portsmouth, all of which were of interest to surrounding colonies. He was successful in gaining the charter, which stayed in effect for the next twenty years, but necessitated a second trip to England in 1651 to have it re-confirmed. Roger Williams had established a trading post near Wickford, which he operated very successfully, living there for long periods, while still maintaining his homestead in Providence. He had to sell the trading post to finance his second trip back to England. He was there for three years, staying with his friends, Lord and Lady Henry Vane, at *Belleau* in Lincolnshire. He published his *Experiments of Spiritual Life and Health and their Preservation* during this time, dedicating it to Lady Vane, and noting that he wrote it "in the thickest of the naked Indians of America, in their very wild houses, and by their barbarous fires."

Upon his return to America in 1654, Roger Williams became president of the colony of Rhode Island and governed for four years. He was made a Freeman in 1655; (See Glossary: Freeman) served as a commissioner in 1658, 1659, and 1661; he was a deputy in 1670, 1678, 1679, and 1680; he was on the town council of Providence 1675-1676.

Despite all his efforts to avert it, war with the Indians broke out in 1676; although Providence had been spared the arrow and the firebrand because of his presence there, the city was finally threatened with destruction. Bravely, Roger Williams went out, alone and unarmed, to meet the invaders, but for once his arguments failed. He was told that because he was an honest man, not a hair of his head would be harmed, but the city would be burned, and it was, on March 26, 1676.

In his later years, Roger Williams tried to find men to replace him in his dealings with the Indians, and wrote to Governor Bradstreet with a list of twenty names he would recommend as emissaries to the Narragansetts and others, of whom he said, "there is no controversy in them, only an endeavor of a particular match of each poor soul to his maker."

The precise date of his death is unknown, but it occurred sometime between January 16 and March 16, 1683. He was originally buried in the orchard in the rear of his homestead lot. Many years later, his remains were disinterred and placed in the tomb of a descendant in the North Burial Ground in Providence. In 1936, they were sealed within a bronze container and set into the base of the monument erected to his memory on Prospect Terrace, also in Providence.

*NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1599.

Submitted by Mrs. Albert Edwards Wynne III

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. William Earnest Delong (Evelyne Knight Wynne); Flint, Texas
Mrs. Peter Burnham Kirkland (Katie Lane Wynne); Birmingham
Mrs. Albert Edwards Wynne III (Katie Lane Sherling); Birmingham

SOURCES:

The bulk of the above essay was taken from a paper, *Roger Williams*, written by Sam Behling in 1997.

The Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island, by John Osborne Austin, published originally in 1887, reprinted in Baltimore, MD, by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1969.

The Great Migration Begins, Immigrants to New England, 1620-1633, Volumes I-III, by Robert Charles Anderson, published in Boston, MA, by New England Historic Genealogical Society in 1995.

In Grateful Remembrance **JOHN WOODRUFF**

1637-1691

The Immigrant Ancestor of the New Jersey Woodruffs was the elder John Woodruff (1604-1670), who was born in Fordwich, Kent. He married Ann Gosmer, also of Fordwich, whose family emigrated with John and Ann to America in 1638/39. The Woodruffs settled first in Lynn, Massachusetts, then moved to Southampton, New York, two years later, perhaps upon the death of his stepfather, from whom John Woodruff inherited a whaling squadron, house, and lands, as well as chattel and other goods.

John Woodruff, the son of John and Ann Woodruff, was born in England and baptized in 1637 in the parish of Sturry, Kent. He was between one and two years of age when he emigrated to America with his parents and the Gosmer household. He grew to manhood in Southampton. At twenty-two, having become an adult with the right to bear arms, and a landowner, he married Mary Ogden, the daughter of John Ogden, one of the leading men in the eastern half of Long Island. In 1664, John Ogden gave his son-in-law a house and homestead lot and additional land.

When King Charles gave Long Island to his brother James, Duke of York and Albany, in 1664/5, many settlers decided to quit the territory and emigrate to New Jersey. John and Mary Woodruff, along with her father, John Ogden, moved to Elizabethtown with "three able servants, two men and a maid." John's original house lot contained one-and-one-half acres, and he also owned an additional 292 acres in a tract that is still known as "Woodruff's Farms." Within ten years, John Woodruff had established himself as one of the well-to-do yeomen of the settlement, with extensive holdings in land and property. Next to Governor Carteret, he was the largest landowner in the township.

John Woodruff became a prominent face in the government of Elizabethtown, New Jersey, and the surrounding district. He was commissioned an ensign of the Elizabethtown militia in 1668, which gave him the legal right to execute warrants on water as well as land. (The title of "Ensign" also styled him a "Gentleman." [See Glossary.]) He swore an oath of allegiance to the Dutch in 1673/4, and was re-commissioned by the Council of War of New Netherlands during the Dutch occupation of 1683, one of only three so appointed. He was a lord magistrate, and became one of the most prominent opponents of the arbitrary ways of lord proprietors. (See Glossary: Proprietor.) In the meantime, he was constable for Elizabethtown in 1674 and high sheriff of Essex County in 1684.

John and Mary Ogden Woodruff had eight children that lived: John, David, Benjamin, Joseph, Daniel, Elizabeth, Sarah, and Hannah. When John died in 1691, all the landed estates, according to the old English law, went to his eldest son, also named John. Son John gave a quitclaim deed to all the Woodruff farms to his brothers, because he knew that was what his honored father would have wished.

Old records indicate the members of the Woodruff family were immediate volunteers for military service in the American Revolution and served in the second regiment of Heard's Brigade in the battles of Elizabethtown, Long Island, and Morristown.



Biographies of Our Ancestors

The Woodruff House, located at what is now 111 Conant Street in Hillside, New Jersey, has a unique background. It is on two lots that were originally included in the Elizabethtown land grants of 1664. It is the last parcel of property awarded to John Woodruff Sr. and remained in the Woodruff family continuously until the Hillside Historical Society took title with a ten-year mortgage in 1978.

Submitted by Mrs. Lucian Newman Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

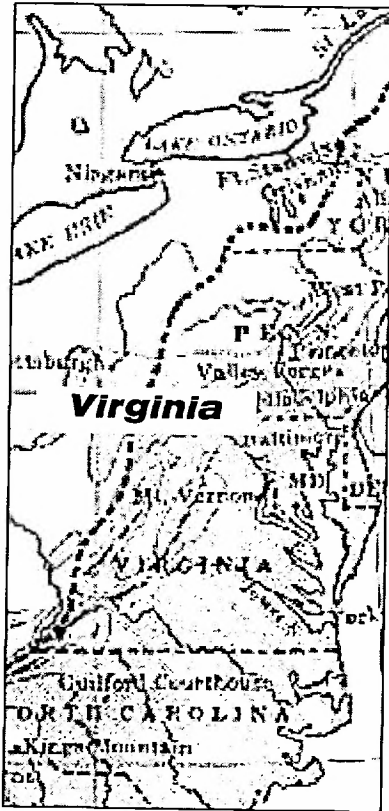
Mrs. Richard Goodman Alexander (Sadie Stone Leatherbury); Mobile
Mrs. Joseph Michael Allen Jr. (Ann Marie Leatherbury); Mobile
Mrs. Thomas Jean Calzia (Caroline Elizabeth Grant); London, England
Mrs. Arthur Joe Grant Jr. (Lucille Daughrill Leatherbury); Montgomery
Mrs. Clifton Clarke Inge (Eugenia Greer Radclift); Point Clear
Mrs. William Joseph McAleer Jr. (Mildred Dickson Williams); Mobile
Mrs. Charles Stephen McKay (Perri Eyre White-Spunner); Mobile
Mrs. Hobart Amory McWhorter (Ellen Radford Leatherbury); Birmingham
Mrs. James Powell Meador (Carolyn Leatherbury McPhillips); Point Clear
Mrs. Harris Vaughan Morrisette (Frances Leatherbury Williams); Mobile
Mrs. Lucian Newman Jr. (Jane Elizabeth Leatherbury); Gadsden
Mrs. John Wayne Riggins Sr. (Laura Turner Leatherbury) Greensboro, North Carolina
Mrs. William Burwell Sellers (Lucille Lee Grant); Montgomery
Mrs. Kenneth Paul White-Spunner (Jane Brinson); Fairhope
Mrs. Edward Dickson Williams (Frances Carolyn Leatherbury); Mobile
Mrs. John Miles Williams (Jane Leatherbury Newman); Birmingham

SOURCES:

Ancestral Revolutionary History of the Smith, Partridge, Treat, Woodruff, and Lowery Families, by Henry Whittemore, published in New York by Heroes of the American Revolution Publishing Company.
Genealogical and Memorial History of the State of New Jersey, by Francis Bazely Lee, published in New York by Lewis Historical Publishing Company, Inc., in 1910.
History of Union County, New Jersey, 1664-1923, by A. Van Doren Honeyman, published in New York by Lewis Historical Publishing Company, Inc., in 1923.
NJDARM Archives Publications: Historical Overview, by New Jersey State Archives Publications.
The Ogden Family in America, Elizabethtown Branch, and Their English Ancestry, John Ogden, the Pilgrim, and his Descendants, by William Ogden Wheeler, published in Philadelphia, PA, by J.B. Lippincott Company in 1907.
The Woodruffs of New Jersey, by Francis E. Woodruff, B.A., published in New York by The Grafton Press in 1864.
<http://www.Woodruffhouse.org>

In Grateful Remembrance
DR. JOHN WOODSON

1586-1644



Dr. John Woodson was among the first early settlers of Jamestown, and is known as one of the "Historic Founders" of Virginia, as he was in the colony prior to 1620. He was born in Dorsetshire, England in 1586, and matriculated at St. John's College in 1604. He was married in Devonshire, England to Sarah Winston, born in 1590.

In 1619, John Woodson was commissioned as surgeon to a company of soldiers aboard the *George*, an English ship en route to the colonies. In addition to Dr. and Mrs. Woodson, the *George* carried Sir George Yeardley, the new governor of the Virginia Colony, as well as approximately one hundred young women who "possessed no wealth but were of irreproachable character." These women were among the first single women to be allowed in the colonies and were sent by the London Company to assist in the colonization of America by becoming wives. The women were eagerly sought out by the young men of the colony who were required to pay the cost of the lady's voyage—150 pounds of tobacco—to marry one of the women. This ship also brought the first slaves to America, two of whom were owned by Dr. Woodson.

Once in the Colony, Sarah and John Woodson were granted two hundred acres thirty miles north of Jamestown as part of the land grant passed by the House of Burgesses in same year as their arrival. The Woodsons settled on what is now known as *Flowerdew Hundred*, Virginia, owned and named after Governor Yeardley's wife, Temperance Flowerdew. *Curles Plantation* on the north side of the James River near *Flowerdew Hundred* was a Woodson property, but it is not known when or if Dr. and Mrs. Woodson actually lived there; their sons, John (born 1632) and Robert (born 1634) were listed as tithables there in 1679. (See Glossary: Tithables.)

During this early time in the colonies, the Indians were a constant threat to the settlers. Indeed, protection from the Indians was the primary purpose of the soldiers Dr. Woodson accompanied on the *George*. In April of 1644, the Indians made a surprise attack upon the settlements, killing approximately three hundred. It was during this massacre that nine Indians descended upon the Woodson home. Dr. Woodson was out making house calls, and Sarah and the two boys, then ages ten and twelve, were in the cabin with shoemaker Robert Ligon. In the midst of the attack, Dr. Woodson returned home and was caught in the open, where he was murdered in clear sight of his wife by a carefully aimed arrow. Sarah quickly hid John and Robert under a washtub and in a potato hole. Ligon and Sarah were able to successfully resist the attack on the home, and killed all nine Indians. (Ligon shot seven of them with the eight-foot-long muzzle-loading rifle that is today a prized possession of the Virginia Historical Society. Sarah killed two Indians as they came down the chimney, smoking them out with a bed thrown on the fire, then finishing them off with a combination of boiling water and a roasting spit.)

John and Robert were both unharmed and earned the nicknames of "Wash Tub" and "Potato Hole" from their respective hiding places.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

Upon the death of her husband, Sarah remarried, first a Dunwell, then a Johnson. Both sons married and the Woodson family name carried on through generations. Among the Woodson descendants are Dolley Todd Madison, wife of President James Madison and the famous outlaw, Jesse Woodson James.

Submitted by Mrs. Harry Hardy Downing and Mrs. Thomas McLemore Rogers Jr.

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. Harry Hardy Downing (Elizabeth Wills Ward); Theodore
Mrs. Clark H. Lamb (Miller Bradley Finch); Birmingham
Mrs. Thomas McLemore Rogers Jr. (Jean Shirley Paxton); Florence
Mrs. Thomas Troy Zieman Jr. (Linyer Bedsole Ward); Mobile

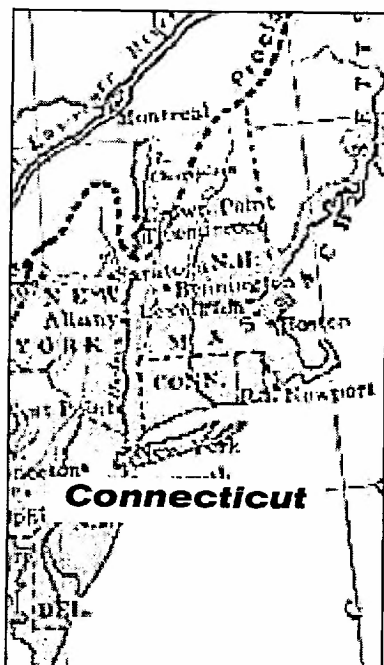
SOURCES:

*Adventurers of Purse and Person:
Virginia (1607-1624/5)*, edited by
John Frederick Dorman, published in
Richmond, VA, by The Order of the
First Families of Virginia, Deitz
Press, in 2007.

*Virginia Immigrants and Adventurers,
1607-1635*, by Martha W. McCartney,
published in Baltimore by
Genealogical Publishing Company in
2007.

In Grateful Remembrance
JOSEPH WOODWARD JR.

1726*-1814



In 1710, Joseph Woodward Sr. purchased land in Canterbury, Connecticut, according to a deed recorded on July 10 of that year. It is believed that he migrated there from Newton, Connecticut, with his brothers, John and Richard. He married Elizabeth Silsby on July 24, 1714.

There remains some confusion as to the exact location of his house. Believed to be on or near the boundary line between Canterbury and Windham, his will states "of Windham." In his inventory, he is said to be "of Canterbury." Therefore, both towns claimed him as an inhabitant, and family records are found in each town. His marriage, his death, and the birth of his youngest child, Joseph, are recorded in Canterbury. The births of his four older children were recorded in Windham.

Joseph's sister, Bethia, and her husband, Henry, migrated to New Hampshire. Soon after they moved there, Henry wrote home, using birch bark as a substitute for paper, and closed his epistle thusly: "When paper fails, the trees provide/That writing be not laid aside."

Joseph Woodward Jr. was born on January 21 (or February 2), 1726. He married Elizabeth Perkins (born May 19, 1733) on May 19, 1748, in Norwich, Connecticut. The couple had eleven children, nine born in Windham and the last two in Ashford.

Records show that Joseph Woodward Jr. was enrolled as an ensign in Ninth Company, Second Connecticut Regiment in May 1766. In May 1771, his rank had risen to lieutenant, and by May 1774, he had become a captain.

In 1767, Captain Joseph Woodward moved from Windham to Ashford, Connecticut, where he held many civic offices and "the most important offices in the gift of his townsmen during twenty-six years."

Captain Joseph Woodward died on July 8, 1814, at the age of eighty-eight years and six months. Elizabeth Woodward died at the age of ninety-one on September 28, 1823.

Joseph and Elizabeth's fifth child, Martha, married Amos Bugbee, also of Ashford. They had a son, Francis (or Frank), who studied law at Yale University. He later settled in Alabama and became a federal judge in Montgomery before the Civil War. When the family migrated from Connecticut to Alabama, a beautiful mahogany sideboard made the trip in the oxcart with them; that sideboard now resides in the dining room of a member of the current generation.

**NSCDA Register of Ancestors lists 1725/6.*

Submitted by Mrs. Larkin Young Powell

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Larkin Young Powell (Elizabeth Ann Brasfield); Cropwell

SOURCES:

Connecticut Colonial Records, 1636-1776: Volumes XII, XIII, XIV, a digital collection, by staff at the University of Connecticut Libraries, published in Storrs, CT, by the University of Connecticut in 2000-2001

Genealogies and History of Watertown, Massachusetts, by Henry Bond, published in Rockland, ME, by Picton Press originally in 1978, reprinted in 2004.

Biographies of Our Ancestors

JOHN WYATT

1685-1768

Born in 1685 in Gloucester County, Virginia, John Wyatt served the colonial cause as a captain of the militia in 1725 and was a prominent vestryman of Petsworth Parish. His wife was Elizabeth Buckner, and they resided at the family home, *Boxley*, in Gloucester County. They had three sons and a daughter.

John Wyatt was one of five sons of Conquest Wyatt and his wife, Sally Pate. Conquest was the son of Edward (born in 1619 in Kent County, England, died in Gloucester County, Virginia in 1690) and Jane Conquest Wyatt. In 1663, Edward patented *Middle Plantation*, the present site of William and Mary College. Edward Wyatt was the son of the Reverend Haute Wyatt and Barbara Mitford.

Haute Wyatt was born at Allington Castle in Kent in 1594 and died July 31, 1636, at Boxley Parish, Kent. A monument inscription in Boxley Church says "Reverend Haute Wyatt died Vicar of Boxley Parish and had issue living in Virginia." Haute Wyatt came to the Virginia colony with his brother, Sir Francis Wyatt, on the *George*, which arrived on November 18, 1621. Haute Wyatt kept the Wyatt spelling rather than the alternative, Wiatt.

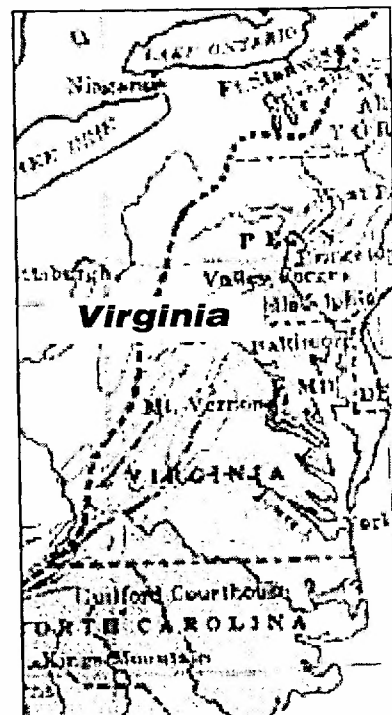
He was the great-grandson of Sir Thomas Wyatt (1503-1542) of Allington Castle, who served as minister to Spain. He was executed April 11, 1554 in the Tower of London. As an ardent Protestant, he helped carry out an unsuccessful rebellion against Queen Mary Tudor (Bloody Mary). Thomas Wyatt's estates and titles were confiscated after his death. They were partly restored to his wife, Lady Jane Finch Wyatt. By an act of parliament under Queen Elizabeth I, full rights were restored to their son, Sir George Wyatt, who was the great-grandfather of John Wyatt.

John and Elizabeth Buckner Wyatt's daughter, Elizabeth, married Cornelius Collier of Gutenberg County, Virginia, in 1753. Their daughter, Nancy Ann Wyatt Collier, married Joshua Hill (1763-1855). Their son, Joshua Hill Jr. of Madison, Georgia, served in the United States Congress before and after the Civil War. As an opponent of secession, he was burned in effigy by disapproving townspeople, but is credited for saving Madison, located approximately one hundred miles east of Atlanta, from destruction as General Sherman was marching through Georgia. Having served in the Congress with Sherman's brother, he requested a meeting, as the Union Army approached, to ask Sherman that the town be spared. Sherman granted his request, giving Madison the distinction of having more preserved antebellum homes than any city of its size in the South. Joshua Hill Jr.'s young son, having enlisted in the Confederate Army as the War was ending, was killed. The story is told that his new uniform made him an obvious target. Some time after the War, Joshua Hill Jr. was elected to the United States Senate.

Submitted by Mrs. Hugh Mallory Reeves

DESCENDANT:

Mrs. Hugh Mallory Reeves (Martha Wilkinson); Selma



SOURCES:

Americans of Royal Descent, Seventh Edition, by Charles H. Browning, published in Baltimore, by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1969.

Colonial Families of the Southern States of America, by Stella Prickett Hardy, published in Baltimore, by Southern Book Company in 1958.

Old Free State, A Contribution to the History of Lunenburg County and Southside Virginia, Volume 2, by Landon Bell, published in Baltimore by Clearfield Company in June 1974.

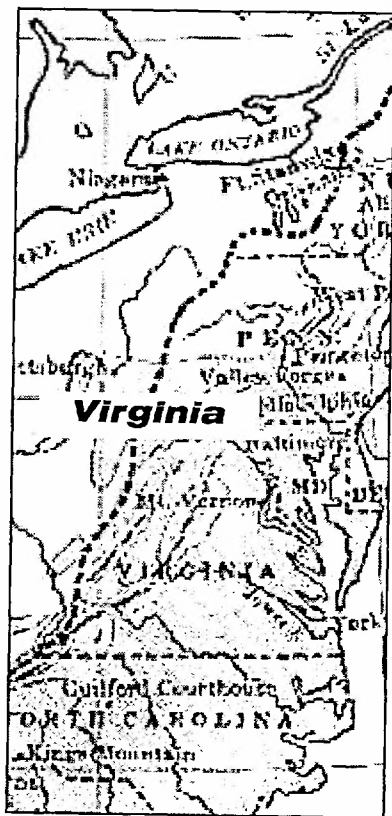
Virginia History Magazine, July 1923.

Virginia's Mother Church and the Political Conditions under Which It Grew, by George MacLaren Brydon, published in Richmond, VA, by the Virginia Historical Society in 1947.

In Grateful Remembrance

THE REVEREND WILLIAM YATES

1720-1764



The Reverend William Yates came from a distinguished family of clerics; there were three in his father's generation and three in his.

His father, Bartholomew Yates, was born in 1677 to William and Katherine Yates of Shropshire, England. He entered Brasenose College, Oxford, on March 10, 1694, received the A.B. degree in 1698, and was ordained an Anglican priest on September 10, 1700. He received his King's Bounty on September 18, 1700. (Since there was no "coin of the realm" in the British colonies, those representing the crown were paid in tobacco, cotton, or other material of the area.) Bartholomew Yates came to Virginia in February 1700 and settled in 1702 in Sittenburne (or Stirlingbourne) Parish, in King George County, Virginia. Within the same year, he went to Northside of St. Mary's Parish in Richmond, then to Kingston Parish in Gloucester, Virginia, where he was rector of Christ Church Middlesex from 1702 to 1734. It was here that he married Sarah Mickleburrough on September 14, 1704. He was a professor of divinity and bursar (treasurer) at William and Mary College. Bartholomew Yates died at Christ Church Parish, Virginia, according to his tombstone there, on July 26, 1739, at the age of fifty-seven. His King's Bounty was either sixteen or twenty thousand pounds of tobacco a year.

Bartholomew and Sarah Yates had six children, three sons and three daughters: Catherine, Sarah, Bartholomew Jr., Robert, Frances, and William. William was born on December 10, 1720, and was baptized four days later at Christ Church, Virginia. He attended William and Mary College and became licensed to preach in Virginia on April 1, 1745, and received his King's Bounty (amount unknown) twenty-two days later. Records show that a marriage license was issued on March 17, 1745 by the Bishop of London to Reverend William Yates, bachelor 24, and Elizabeth Randolph, spinster 21, daughter of Edward Randolph of Bremono, to be married at St. Martin in the Fields, London. (This would have made sense, since he would have had to go to England to be ordained by the Bishop.) They returned and settled first in Abingdon Parish in Gloucester County, Virginia from 1750-1759, then in Bruton Parish in James City from 1759 to 1764. He was president of William and Mary College from 1759 to 1764. He died in Williamsburg in 1764. Elizabeth is said to have survived her husband, married Theodorick Bland, and moved with her Yates children to South Side, Virginia.

There were three Yates children: Edward Randolph, Sarah, and William. William became a colonel in the Virginia militia during the Revolution and distinguished himself on George Washington's staff. He first married Anne Isham Poythress on June 22, 1777, who died on June 24, 1784 at twenty-four years of age, and secondly, Elizabeth Booth.

Submitted by Mrs. John Hawkins Napier III and Mrs. William Harold Albritton III

DESCENDANTS:

Mrs. William Harold Albritton III (Jane Rollins Howard); Montgomery

Mrs. John Hawkins Napier III (Cameron Mayson Freeman); Ramer

Biographies of Our Ancestors

SOURCES:

The Colonial Clergy of Virginia, North Carolina, and South Carolina, by The Reverend Frederick Lewis Weis, Th.D., published in Lancaster, MA, by the Society of the Descendants of the Colonial Clergy, in 1936.

Early Settlers of Alabama, with notes and genealogies, by Colonel James Edward Saunders, published in Baltimore, MD, by Genealogical Publishing Company in 1969.

"Lyon G. Tyler, M.A., L.L.D., President of William and Mary College, Williamsburg, Virginia," *William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine*, published in Richmond, VA, in 1895.

The National Cyclopaedia of American Biography: Being the History of the United States, as illustrated in the lives of the founders, builders and defenders of the republic, and of the men and women who are doing the work and molding the thought of the present time, edited by distinguished biographers selected from each state, revised and approved by the most eminent historians, scholars and statesmen of the day, published in New York by James T. White and Company on October 11, 1897.

Notes of the Genealogy of the Gholson Family, by Edwin Gholson, published in Cincinnati by the Cincinnati Law Library Association.

Old Churches, Ministers, and Families of Virginia, by Bishop William Meade, originally published in Philadelphia in 1857, re-issued on compact disc in Columbia, MD, by Archive CD Books USA in 2006.

The Randolphs of Virginia, by Jonathan Worth Daniels, published in Garden City, NY, by Doubleday in 1972.

The Randolphs of Virginia, a compilation of the descendants of William Randolph of Turkey Island and his wife Mary Isham of Bermuda Hundred, by Robert Isham Randolph, published in Chicago in 1937.

The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Volume VII, published in Richmond, VA, by the Virginia Historical Society in 1900.

In Grateful Remembrance

GLOSSARY

Adventurer: A stockholder in the Virginia Company of London.

Ancient officer: One of the original stockholders of the Virginia Company.

Anne Hutchinson: Known as the first feminist in America, Anne Hutchinson (1591-1643) was a talented and eloquent woman of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. She resented the exclusion of women from town meetings that discussed religious and political issues; she therefore held her own public meetings in her home. These meetings were open to all, with the central theme of discussion being "justification by faith" as superior to "justification by works" as espoused by the ministers and Governor John Winthrop. The colony became agitated by her open opposition, and she was tried for heresy. She was found guilty, which resulted in her excommunication and banishment. Leaving the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1637, Anne Hutchinson relocated to Rhode Island and was later killed by Indians.

Bacon's Rebellion: A rebellion against the British crown that arose more than 100 years before the Revolutionary War, primarily because of the unjust taxation of many of the common farmers of the counties around the James River. It was named after its eventual leader, Nathaniel Bacon. Sir William Berkeley, the British governor, had refused to allow the colonists to elect any new assemblymen since 1662. He had simply dismissed the General Assembly before new elections could be authorized each year, ensuring that it continued to contain a majority of royalists. Governor Berkeley appointed the sheriff and the justices of the counties, and vestrymen of the Church of England were virtually self-perpetuating. These two bodies assessed taxes. When the Assembly of 1670 instituted property ownership qualifications for voters, it made it possible for tax assessors and sheriffs to demand excessive taxes and fees, with little recourse by the common people.

Additionally, in 1651 and 1660, the English Navigation Act had restricted colonial shipping to English vessels, resulting in reduced prices for tobacco and other goods, with increased shipping fees. That, along with the increased taxes, reduced profits to a point that farmers became tempted to quit entirely.

The first echo of trouble was when charges were brought against fourteen men for meeting secretly at the Parish Church at Lawnes Creek to discuss ways to lower their taxes. (At that time, it was unlawful for people to meet without notifying the authorities.) A second secret meeting was held in "Old Devil's Field," and when the two meetings were reported, arrests were made of all those involved with fines being levied. A man named Matthew Swan was apparently the ringleader, and his sentence was far heavier than those of the others.

These arrests may have broken the back of the resistance in Lawnes Creek Parish, because when the rebellion really broke out two years later, most of the participants were from Southwark Parish of Surry County. With the passage of time, more Indian raids on the settlers in Henrico, Charles City, and Stafford Counties brought increasing demands for the governor to give protection. But Governor Berkeley had established a profitable fur trade with the Indians, and he did little to satisfy the settlers.

By March of 1675, approximately three hundred settlers had been killed in Indian raids. When the Assembly met that month, they voted to call five hundred men for military service and build nine forts. However, most of these forts seem to have been located in areas where there was little danger from Indians, and a two million pound sterling tobacco tax was levied on the settlers for their building. It was apparent that contractors were Berkeley's friends because most of the forts were never started, or at the most, finished. The fort for Surry County was in Southwark Parish, where the Indians had never made trouble for the settlers.

Three hundred men gathered in Charles City County, representing those areas that were having the most trouble with raids, and resolved to go after the Indians without Berkeley's consent. Nathaniel Bacon, a young squire of Henrico County, had been educated in England, but he was in sympathy with the movement. He and others from Henrico County rowed across the river the night of the meeting, and after a vote, Bacon was elected leader. Late in April 1675, he and the band went after the Indians and Berkeley, having gotten word of the uprising, began organizing a group to stop the young rebels. He was too late and on May 10, he declared Bacon a rebel and a traitor.

By that time, there were signs of rebellion throughout the region, and Berkeley reluctantly ordered elections for a new

Biographies of Our Ancestors

House of Burgesses, the first in fourteen years. Later in the month, Bacon and his group returned with word of victory over the Indians. Bacon was elected to the new Assembly, and Berkeley had to call a truce in arresting Bacon. The Assembly of June and July enacted many new laws, such as raising an army from each county and allowing the men to elect their own officers. There was to be no trade with the Indians, all freemen were to be voters, legal fees were set, no sheriff could hold office more than one year in succession, no one could hold two county offices at once, and officials were taxed at the same rate as others.

Just at the end of the Assembly, word was received that a massacre by the Indians had occurred forty miles away, and Bacon and his men left almost immediately, apparently with the blessings of Berkeley. Berkeley shortly thereafter issued an order for Bacon's arrest, thereby rescinding the truce. But the second successful venture against raiding Indians brought Bacon home a hero.

During this second encounter against the Indians, Captain Thomas Pitman, a former leader in the Virginia militia, and others from Surry County joined Bacon. When Bacon's group returned, Berkeley and other leaders fled Jamestown. Bacon and his men realized the importance of Jamestown, crossed the James River and took the unprotected royal capitol. Bacon decided to burn the town in order to prevent Berkeley from using it as headquarters in the future. Therefore, Jamestown, with most of the records dating before 1676, was destroyed by fire on September 19, 1676. It was rumored that many of the records were hidden before the burning, but they have never been recovered. Bacon and his men set up headquarters across the river near Surry in the brick home and estate of Arthur Allen, who had fled with the governor. The house still stands and is known as "Bacon's Castle."

With the return of Bacon, and the absence of Berkeley and other local leaders, Bacon and the remaining leaders began reforms during September and early October in 1676. But the reforms were short-lived, for Bacon took sick with diarrhea ("swamp fever") and died October 26, 1676. There were no other serious leaders to step into his shoes, and the rebellion ended.

Governor Berkeley had the new assembly meet February 20, 1677, and all of the previous reforms were rescinded, but some relief was given the settlers. The representatives of the

King had brought orders that people of the various counties were to have the right to freely express their grievances and make formal petitions to the Assembly. Thus ended the rebellion of 1676 against unjust taxes without representation in the government. Little did the settlers know that one hundred years in the future, the Revolutionary War would be fought over the same problems. (All information is taken from Surry County Records, Virginia, 1651 to 1684 by Eliza Timberlake Davis and published in 1980, as reported by Gene Pitman, Waco, Texas, on the website ancestor.com.)

Barbados/United Kingdom/United States connection:

The connection between Barbados and the United Kingdom is more well-known than of the link between Barbados and America. This tiny island, one hundred sixty-six square miles, the farthest east into the Atlantic of all the West Indies, is cooled by powerful winds swirling across the Atlantic from Africa. It was the important first port of call for ships sailing from England to North America. Barbados served at times as the center for administration of all British West Indies colonies, and supplied England with fine cotton, tobacco, and sugar (or "white gold," as it was called). In the mid-seventeenth century, two hundred gentlemen of Barbados organized The Society of Barbados Adventurers to explore and settle colonies in North America, mostly in Carolina. Members of the Adventurers were given land in proportion to their investment in the corporation.

Bermuda Hundred: The first incorporated town in the English colony of Virginia. It was founded by Sir Thomas Dale in 1613, six years after Jamestown. At the southwestern edge of the confluence of the Appomattox and James Rivers opposite City Point, Bermuda Hundred was a port town for many years. The terminology "Bermuda Hundred" also included a large area adjacent to the town itself. In the colonial era, "hundreds" were large developments of many acres, arising from the English term to define an area that would support one hundred heads of household. The port at the town of Bermuda Hundred was intended to serve other "hundreds" in addition to Bermuda Hundred. In modern times, it is no longer a shipping port, but remains as a small community in the southeastern portion of Chesterfield County, Virginia.

In Grateful Remembrance

Burgesses, House of: Introduced by Governor George Yeardley, the Virginia House of Burgesses was the first elected legislative assembly in the New World, established in the Colony of Virginia in 1619. This was the first "government by the people" and attracted new settlers. Over time, the name came to represent the entire official legislative body of the colony of Virginia, and later, after the American Revolution, the General Assembly of the Commonwealth of Virginia.

c., ca.: abbreviation for circa, used before a date to indicate that it is approximate or estimated

Calvert Hundred: see Bermuda Hundred for definition of "Hundred."

Mount Calvert Hundred was in Prince George's County, Maryland.

Cavalier supporter (of King Charles I): During the English Civil War of the seventeenth century, supporters of the monarchy were called Cavaliers, and the supporters of Parliament were called Roundheads. The lines of division were roughly as follows: Cavalier backing came from peasants and nobility of Episcopalian roots while Roundhead backing came from the emerging middle class and tradesmen of the Puritanical movement. Geographically, the northern and western provinces (of England) aided the Cavaliers, with the more financially prosperous and populous southern and eastern counties lending aid to the Roundheads. The bottom line is that the Roundheads, with deeper pockets and more population from which to draw, were destined to win the battle. True to their background, the cavaliers who came to America were staunch royalists, well-educated and proud. They were usually the younger sons, seeking to make their fortune.

Charles Towne: The city we know today as Charleston, South Carolina.

Charlestown: The oldest neighborhood in Boston, it was originally a separate town and was the first capital of the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

Colonel Commandant: A military title used in the armed forces. The title, not a substantive rank, could denote a senior colonel with authority over fellow colonels.

Edict of Nantes/Edict of Nance: The first, long-lasting decree of religious toleration in modern Europe. It granted unheard of religious rights, in Catholic Europe, to French Protestants [Huguenots]. The Edict of Nantes marked the end of France's Wars of Religion [1562-1598]. Over the course of these wars a series of treaties had been negotiated that provided certain privileges to the Huguenots. However, all had been broken. The Edict of Nantes integrated the various religious provisions of this series of broken treaties and provided a number of additional ones. Generally, under its provisions, it gave Protestants the right to hold public worship in many parts of France, with the exception of Paris. The Huguenots were granted full civil rights and a special court was established, within the various parliaments, called the *Chambre de l'Édict*, to arbitrate disputes arising from the edict.

Escheator: A person appointed to resolve estates of those who died intestate.

Freeman: One accepted by a colony who was proven to be free of all debt and, vowing not to overthrow the government, was given the right to vote. This concept applied to Puritan times in New England.

First supply: The group of settlers who arrived in a colony with the first supply ship.

Gentleman: In English history a man who was not strictly of noble birth but was entitled to a coat of arms.

Gentleman justices: Officials who presided over the legal and administrative affairs of the county for the two, three, or four days that county court was in session. Jurisdiction included taxation and tithables for civil and church levies. Justices supervised roads and appointed surveyors, regulated tobacco exchange, and cooperated with the vestry of the parish in deciding moral issues.

Grand Model/Fundamental Constitution:

Drawn up for Charles II by John Locke in England in 1669, the Grand Model was a plan for the colonies, specifically the Carolinas, that transplanted aristocratic rule in its extreme; it was a re-creation of the old feudal system. It divided land into counties with designations of the Lord Proprietor's domain and the newly created nobility's domain. The three titles authorized for this nobility were: Landgrave, with 48,000 acres; Cassique, with 24,000 acres; and Baron, with 12,000 acres. Land was rented to tenants under the control of their lord, much like serfs. This plan failed, due to the absence of the Lord Proprietor, who resided in England, and the independent colonial spirit of the new world.

Head right: A grant of land for each white settler that a sponsor brought to the colonies.

Huguenot: The Huguenots were French Protestants who were members of the Reformed Church, which was established in 1550 by John Calvin. The origin of the name Huguenot is uncertain, but dates from approximately 1550 when it was used in court cases against "heretics" (dissenters from the Roman Catholic Church). There is a theory that it is derived from the personal name of Besançon Hugues, the leader of the "Confederate Party" in Geneva, in combination with a Frankish corruption of the German word for conspirator or confederate: eidgenosse. Thus, Hugues plus eidgenot becomes Huguenot, with the intention of associating the Protestant cause with some very unpopular politics.

Indian massacre of 1622: Also known as the Jamestown Massacre, it occurred in the Virginia Colony on Good Friday, March 22, 1622. About 347 people, or almost one-third of the English population of Jamestown, were killed by a coordinated series of surprise attacks of the Powhatan Confederacy under Chief Opechancanough. Jamestown was the site of the first successful English settlement in North America in 1607, and was the capital of the Colony of Virginia. Although Jamestown itself was spared due to a timely last-minute warning, many smaller settlements had been established along the James River both upstream and downstream from it

and on both sides. The attackers killed men, women, and children, and burned homes and crops.

Inner Temple: The Honorable Society of the Inner Temple is one of the four Inns of Court (professional associations) around the Royal Courts of Justice (courts of law) in London that may call members to the Bar and so entitle them to practice as lawyers.

James Towne: First permanent English settlement in the New World; later known as Jamestown.

Justice of the peace: In 1195, Richard I ("the Lionheart") of England commissioned certain knights to preserve the peace in unruly areas. They were responsible to the king for ensuring that the law was upheld, and preserved the "King's Peace," and were known as Keepers of the Peace. An act of 1327 referred to "good and lawful men" to be appointed in every county in the land to "guard the peace;" such individuals were first referred to as Conservators of the Peace, or Wardens of the Peace. The title "justices of the peace" derives from 1361, in the reign of King Edward III. The "peace" to be guarded is the "King's peace" or (currently) Queen's peace, the maintenance of which is the duty of the Crown under the royal prerogative. Justices of the peace still use the power conferred or re-conferred on them in 1361 to bind over unruly persons "to be of good behavior." The bind-over is not a punishment, but a preventive measure, intended to ensure that people thought likely to offend will not do so. The justices' alternative title of "magistrate" dates from the sixteenth century, although the word had been in use two hundred years earlier to describe some legal officials of Roman times. In colonial America, a justice of the peace was usually appointed by the governor and tried petty civil cases.

Justice of the Quorum: A quorum was the legislative body of the government, and the members were called justices. There were usually an odd number, rather than an even number, in the quorum to prevent stalemates.

King Philip's War: Philip (Metacom) was the son of Massacoit, chief of the Wampanoag Indians, who had made a

In Grateful Remembrance

treaty of peace with the Pilgrims shortly after their landing at Plymouth in 1620. Although there were increasing tensions as the arrival of more and more colonists infringed on Indian land, the treaty lasted for fifty years. At Massacoit's death, Philip became chief and led his and other tribes in a full scale rebellion against the colonists. Although King Philip's War lasted little more than a year, it spread throughout New England and became one of the bloodiest times in American history. It is estimated that one third of America's white population lost their lives, while towns were burned and many farms laid waste. The war also cost thousands of Indian lives and resulted in their absolute defeat. The end came quickly in 1676 when Philip was shot by an Indian scout working for the colonial army.

Landgrave: In Germany, from the 13th century to 1806, a count who had jurisdiction over a region. In colonial America, a landgrave held forty-eight thousand acres and functioned in much the same manner as the lord of the manor in the old European feudal system.

Middle Temple: The Honorable Society of the Middle Temple is one of the four Inns of Court exclusively entitled to call their members to the English Bar as barristers; the others being the Inner Temple, Gray's Inn and Lincoln's Inn. It is near the Royal Courts of Justice, within the City of London. In the thirteenth century, the Inns of Court originated as hostels and schools for student lawyers. The Middle Temple is the western part of "The Temple," the headquarters of the Knights Templar until they were dissolved in 1312; the awe-inspiring Temple Church still stands as a "peculiar" (extra-diocesan) church of the Inner and Middle Temples. There has never been an "Outer Temple," apart from a modern office block of that name. An order of 1337 refers to repairing the lane "through the middle of the Court of the Temple," which became known as Middle Temple Lane and probably gave its name to the Inn.

Middle Temple Hall is at the heart of the Inn, and the Inn's student barristers are required to dine there for a minimum number of nights for several terms. The dinners are sometimes followed by lectures or debates.

Osnaburg: Coarse linen or stout cotton used for

durable work clothes

Palatine: An official or feudal lord who had sovereign power over a territory.

Palatine's court: The Palatine's Court consists of the Palatine (lord) and seven proprietors, wherein nothing shall be acted without the presence and consent of the Palatine or his deputy and three other of the proprietors or their deputies. This court shall have power to call parliaments to pardon all offences, to make elections of all officers in the proprietors dispose, and to nominate and appoint port townes; and also shall have power by their order to the treasurer to dispose of all public treasure, excepting money granted by the parliament, and by them directed to some particular public use; and shall also have a negative upon all acts, orders, votes, and judgments of the grand council and the parliament...and shall have all the powers granted to the Lords Proprietors, by their patent from our sovereign lord the King, except in such things as are limited by these fundamental constitutions.

The Palatine himself, when he in person shall be either in the army or any of the Proprietor's courts shall then have the power of general or of that proprietor in whose court he is then present, and the Proprietor in whose court the Palatine then presides, during his presence there, be but as one of the council. (From "The Laws of North Carolina—1669," published in The State Records of North Carolina.)

Patent of land: A grant from the English government that gave an individual title to public lands. The acreage was often determined by the number of people the grantee had brought into the colonies from England.

A little history of the nature of these land grants or patents is in order for an understanding of the reasons for granting them. To secure one of such size in 1730 meant first that the recipient was evidently one already established and whose capacity to pay the "rents" was unquestioned. From an early time in Virginia there had been two ways in which these grants were secured: One-by bringing to the Colony a number of new immigrants, and assuring the Governor's Council of the ability to care for these arrivals for a period of at least seven years. These immigrants were known as "Indentured" persons. They

Biographies of Our Ancestors

could only come to the Colony if they were provided for, both for the present and for the seven years following. The planter bringing them was then awarded so many acres of land for each such person. The planter could then expect labor and service from these Indentures for a stated period without payment of wages, other than to provide for their "cloathing and keepe."

It was expected of these indentured servants that at the termination of their service they would make their way in the colony, and become either artisans or small landowners.

The other method to obtain patents of grants—which had long been established by the Crown—was to establish Quit Rent Rolls, whereby the grantee was to pay certain sums, depending on the acreage, for a number of years to the Crown as "rent." The records of these grants, detailing acreage, payment of rent, constitute the Quit Rent Rolls, and are among the most numerous of all official records available to modern day readers, and to all genealogists, as showing indubitably the first evidence of the foundation of a family progenitor in early Virginia.

Penn's Province: Better known as the colony of Pennsylvania, consisting of one million, two hundred thousand acres granted to William Penn in settlement of a debt owed to him by King Charles II of England. Founded in 1681, Pennsylvania was a proprietary colony.

Planter, Plantation: Landowning settler, the land owned by same.

Proprietor: A person who owned and controlled an amount of property, with the power to decide how to disperse the land, how it should be governed, what public institutions were to be built. A proprietary colony is a colony in which one or more private land owners retain rights that are normally the privilege of the state, and in all cases eventually became so. A Lord Proprietor held his power over a colony by virtue of a charter. The colony of Maryland was the first proprietary government in America.

Quorum: The term comes from English law and originally referred to justices schooled in law; it eventually came to include all justices. See also "Justice of the Quorum."

Remonstrance: The Five Articles of Remonstrance refers to the document drawn up in 1610 by the followers of Jacobus Arminius (1560-1609). A "remonstrance" is literally "an expression of opposition or protest," which in this case was a protest against the Calvinist doctrine of predestination.

Second supply: In Jamestown, the third group of settlers to arrive; they came in fall of 1608. The first group of settlers were the "original" settlers; the second group, who arrived with the first supply ship, were "first supply;" the third group, who came with the second supply ship were "second supply." The terms were used for all the early colonies; supply groups consisted of "Gentlemen," "Carpenters," "Tradesmen," "Laborers," among others, led by pre-appointed captains.

Selectman: A civil magistrate, somewhat like a member of today's city council.

Society of Smith's (or Smythe's) Hundred: In 1617 the Virginia Company, hoping to expand population and agricultural production in the colony, encouraged private or voluntary associations organized on a joint stock basis to establish settlements in the area of the Company's patent. The Society of Smith's (or Smythe's) Hundred (later called Southampton Hundred) was organized in 1617.

"Starving Time": The period between the first arrival of settlers to James Towne and the second arrival of ships carrying supplies. During this time, the population that originally numbered about five hundred was reduced to no more than sixty men, women, and children.

Test Act: A law passed by the Pennsylvania Assembly on June 13, 1777 that all men swear allegiance to the state or lose their rights as citizens. It was aimed primarily at Moravians and Mennonites who refused to bear arms or swear allegiance because of their religious beliefs.

Tithable: A colonial poll tax (or capitation tax) on members of the labor force, including free white males,

In Grateful Remembrance

African American slaves, and Native American slaves, all age sixteen or older. Owners and masters paid the taxes for their slaves and servants. Tithables did not enumerate individuals under the age of sixteen, and listed women only if they were heads of household. The tithable tax was sometimes paid in actual labor.

Tory: A resident of the American colonies who supported Britain during the American Revolution. (Also called a Royalist.)

Transylvania Company: Literally translated, the word "transylvania" means "land on the other side of the forest barrier." The Transylvania Company, created by Richard Henderson and composed of private investors from North Carolina, set about to purchase vast tracts of land west of the Alleghany Mountains from the Cherokee Indians. After years of negotiating, the treaty of Watauga was signed at Sycamore Shoals in 1775. In return for twenty million acres of hunting ground, the Indians received an estimate of ten thousand pounds sterling in money and goods. This land purchase, dubbed "the greatest real estate deal in history by private investors", encompassed almost all of present day Kentucky and large tracts in Tennessee. Sales to colonists and settlement of Boonesborough began westward movement. Fort Transylvania was constructed, and Richard Henderson dreamed of a state of Transylvania, a fourteenth colony, free of British control, with himself as its head. Unfortunately for Henderson and the other investors, both the colonies of North Carolina and Virginia, as well as the Crown, had previous claims on the property. The statutes of both North Carolina and Virginia forbade "unau-

thorized dealings with the Indians," and by act of the North Carolina Assembly in 1776, the state of Transylvania was dissolved. Boonesborough and Fort Transylvania remained occupied; and as the Revolution ensued, played a role in defending the western boundaries of North Carolina and Virginia from British assault. Henderson and his investors received, as compensation, land grants totaling four hundred thousand acres in North Carolina and Virginia. Daniel Boone served as scout for the Transylvania Company and was among the first settlers.

Vestry, vestryman: The office of vestryman required six oaths and subscriptions: the oaths were taken before one of His Majesty's justices and became a record of the church where the vestryman served. There were three political oaths, the third quite long, and were required of all civil and military officers by the laws of New England and the Provinces.

Virginia Company: The Virginia Company was formed with a charter from King James I in 1606. The Company was a joint stock corporation charged with the settlement of Virginia. It had the power to appoint the council of Virginia, the governor and other officials, and the responsibility to provide settlers, supplies and ships for the venture. The initial reaction to the Company was favorable, but as the mortality rate rose and the prospect for profit grew dim, the support for it waned. The leadership resorted to lotteries, searching for gold, and silkworm production to increase profits. The charter was finally revoked in 1624 and Virginia became a Crown colony, largely as a result of the Indian Massacre of 1622.